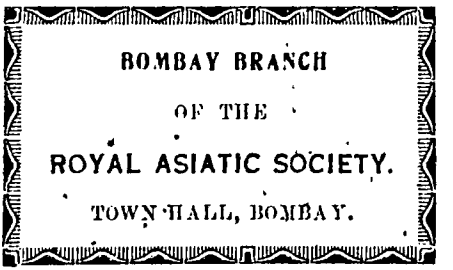
00042502



Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 05 October, 2018

SELECTD ESSAYS

ON

LANGUAGE, MYTHOLOGY, AND RELIGION

VOL. II.

42502

00042502

SELECTED ESSAYS

ON

LANGUAGE, MYTHOLOGY AND RELIGION.

XI.

OPENING ADDRESS

Delivered by the President of the Aryan Section at the International Congress of Orientalists, held in London, September 14–21, 1874.

No one likes to be asked what business he has to exist, and yet, whatever we do, whether singly or in concert with others, the first question which the world never fails to address to us is *Dic cur hic?* Why are you here? or to put it into French, What is your *raison d'être*? . We have had to submit to this examination even before we existed, and many a time have I been asked the question, both by friend and foe, What is the good of an International Congress of Orientalists?

I shall endeavour, as shortly as possible, to answer that question, and show that our Congress is not a mere fortuitous congeries of barren atoms or molecules, but that we are at least Leibnizian monads, each with his own self, and force, and will, and each determined, within the limits of some pre-established harmony, to help in working out some common purpose, and to achieve some real and lasting good.

It is generally thought that the chief object of a scientific Congress is social, and I am not one of those who are incapable of appreciating the delights and benefits of social intercourse with hard-working and honest-thinking men. Much as I detest what is commonly called society, I willingly give up glaciers and waterfalls, cathedrals and picture-galleries, for one half hour of real society, of free, frank, fresh, and friendly intercourse, face to face, and mind to mind, with a great, and noble, and loving soul, such as was Bunsen; with a man intrepid in his thoughts, his words, and his deeds, such as was John Stuart Mill; or with a scholar who, whether he had been quarrying heavy blocks, or chiselling the most brittle filigree work, poured out all his treasures before you with the pride and pleasure of a child, such as was Eugène Burnouf. A Congress, therefore, and particularly an International Congress, would certainly seem to answer some worthy purpose, were it only by bringing together fellow-workers of all countries and ages, by changing what were to us merely great names into pleasant companions, and by satisfying that very right and rational curiosity which we all feel, after having read a really good book, of seeing what the man looks like who could achieve such triumphs.

All this is perfectly true; yet, however pleasant to ourselves this social intercourse may appear, in the eyes of the world at large it will hardly be considered a sufficient excuse for our existence. In order, therefore, to satisfy that outer world that we are really doing something, we point of course to the papers which are read at our public meetings,

and to the discussions which they elicit. Much as I value that feature also in a scientific congress, I confess I doubt, and I know that many share that doubt, whether the same result might not be obtained with much less trouble. A paper that contains something really new and valuable, the result, it may be, of years of toil and thought, requires to be read with care in a quiet corner of our own study, before the expression of our assent or dissent can be of any weight or value. There is too much hollow praise, and occasionally too much wrangling and ill-natured abuse at our scientific tournaments, and the world at large, which is never without a tinge of malice and a vein of quiet humour, has frequently expressed its concern at the waste of 'oil and vinegar' which is occasioned by the frequent meetings of our British and Foreign Associations.

What then is the real use of a Congress, such as that which has brought us together this week from all parts of the world? What is the real excuse for our existence? Why are we here, and not in our workshops?

It seems to me that the real and permanent use of these scientific gatherings is twofold:—

(1) They enable us to take stock, to compare notes, to see where we are, and to find out where we ought to be going.

(2) They give us an opportunity, from time to time, to tell the world where we are, what we have been doing for the world, and what, in return, we expect the world to do for us.

The danger of all scientific work at present, not only among Oriental scholars, but, as far as I can see,

everywhere, is the tendency to extreme specialisation. Our age shows in that respect a decided reaction against the spirit of a former age, which those with grey heads among us can still remember—an age represented in Germany by such names as Humboldt, Ritter, Böckh, Johannes Müller, Bopp, Bunsen, and others; men who look to us like giants, carrying a weight of knowledge far too heavy for the shoulders of such mortals as now be; ay, men who *were* giants, but whose chief strength consisted in this, that they were never entirely absorbed or bewildered by special researches, but kept their eye steadily on the highest objects of all human knowledge; who could trace the vast outlines of the kosmos of nature or the kosmos of the mind with an unwavering hand, and to whose maps and guide books we must still turn whenever we are in danger of losing our way in the mazes of minute research. At the present moment such works as Humboldt's 'Kosmos,' or Bopp's 'Comparative Grammar,' or Bunsen's 'Christianity and Mankind,' would be impossible. No one would dare to write them, for fear of not knowing the exact depth at which the *Protogenes Haeckelii* has lately been discovered or the lengthening of a vowel in the Sa*m*hitapâ*th*a of the Rig-Veda. It is quite right that this should be so, at least, for a time; but all rivers, all brooks, all rills, are meant to flow into the ocean, and all special knowledge, to keep it from stagnation, must have an outlet into the general knowledge of the world. Knowledge for its own sake, as it is sometimes called, is the most dangerous idol that a student can worship. We despise the miser who amasses money for the sake

of money, but still more contemptible is the intellectual miser who hoards up knowledge instead of spending it, though, with regard to most of our knowledge, we may be well assured and satisfied that, as we brought nothing into the world, so we may carry nothing out.

Against this danger of mistaking the means for the end, of making bricks without making mortar, of working for ourselves instead of working for others, meetings such as our own, bringing together so large a number of the first Oriental scholars of Europe, seem to me a most excellent safeguard. They draw us out of our shell, away from our common routine, away from that small orbit of thought in which each of us moves day after day, and make us realise more fully that there are other stars moving all around us in our little universe, that we all belong to one celestial system, or to one terrestrial commonwealth, and that, if we want to see real progress in that work with which we are more especially entrusted, the re-conquest of the Eastern world, we must work with one another, for one another, like members of one body, like soldiers of one army, guided by common principles, striving after common purposes, and sustained by common sympathies. Oriental literature is of such enormous dimensions that our small army of scholars can occupy certain prominent positions only; but those points, like the stations of a trigonometrical survey, ought to be carefully chosen, so that we should be able to work in harmony together. I hope that in that respect our Congress may prove of special benefit. We shall hear, each of us, from others, what they wish us to do. 'Why don't you

finish this?' 'Why don't you publish that?' are questions which we have already heard asked by many of our friends. We shall be able to avoid what happens so often, that two men collect materials for exactly the same work, and we may possibly hear of some combined effort to carry out great works, which can only be carried out *viribus unitis*, and of which I may at least mention one, a translation of the 'Sacred Books of Mankind.' Important progress has already been made for setting on foot this great undertaking, an undertaking which I think the world has a right to demand from Oriental scholars, but which can only be carried out by joint action. This Congress has helped us to lay the foundation-stone, and I trust that at our next Congress we shall be able to produce some tangible results.

I now come to the second point. A Congress enables us to tell the world what we have been doing. This, it seems to me, is particularly needful with regard to Oriental studies which, with the exception of Hebrew, still stand outside the pale of our schools and universities, and are cultivated by the very smallest number of students. And yet I make bold to say that during the last hundred, and still more during the last fifty years, Oriental studies have contributed more than any other branch of scientific research to change, to purify, to clear, and intensify the intellectual atmosphere of Europe, and to widen our horizon in all that pertains to the Science of Man, in history, philology, theology, and philosophy. We have not only conquered and annexed new worlds to the ancient empire of learning, but we have leavened the old world with ideas that

are already fermenting even in the daily bread of our schools and universities. Most of those here present know that I am not exaggerating; but as the world is sceptical while listening to orations *pro domo*, I shall attempt to make good my assertions.

At first, the study of Oriental literature was a matter of curiosity only, and it is so still to a great extent, particularly in England. Sir William Jones, whose name is the only one among Oriental scholars that has ever obtained a real popularity in England, represents most worthily that phase of Oriental studies. Read only the two volumes of his Life, and they will certainly leave on your mind the distinct impression that Sir William Jones was not only a man of extensive learning and refined taste, but undoubtedly a very great man—one in a million. He was a good classical scholar of the old school, a well-read historian, a thoughtful lawyer, a clear-headed politician, and a true gentleman, in the old sense of the word. He moved in the best—I mean the most cultivated—society, the great writers and thinkers of the day listened to him with respect, and, say what you like, we still live by his grace, we still draw on that stock of general interest which he excited in the English mind for Eastern subjects.

Yet the interest which Sir William Jones took in Oriental literature was purely æsthetic. He chose what was beautiful in Persian and translated it, as he would translate an ode of Horace. He was charmed with Kâlidâsa's play of 'Sakuntala'—and who is not? and he left us his classical reproduction of one of the finest of Eastern gems. Being a judge in India, he thought it his duty to acquaint himself

with the native law-books in their original language, and he gave us his masterly translation of the 'Laws of Manu.' Sir William Jones was fully aware of the startling similarity between Sanskrit, Latin, and Greek. More than a hundred years ago, in a letter written to Prince Adam Czartoryski, in the year 1770, he says: 'Many learned investigators of antiquity are fully persuaded that a very old and almost primeval language was in use among the northern nations, from which not only the Celtic dialect, but even Greek and Latin are derived; in fact, we find *πατήρ* and *μήτηρ* in Persian, nor is *θυγάτηρ* so far removed from *dockter*, or even *ὄνομα* and *nomen* from Persian nâm, as to make it ridiculous to suppose that they sprang from the same root. We must confess,' he adds, 'that these researches are very obscure and uncertain, and, you will allow, not so agreeable as an ode of Hafez, or an elegy of Amr'alkeis.' In a letter, dated 1787, he says: 'You will be surprised at the resemblance between Sanskrit and both Greek and Latin.'

Colebrooke also, the great successor of Sir William Jones, was fully aware of the relationship between Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, German, and even Slavonic. I possess some curious MS. notes of his, of the year 1801 or 1802, containing long lists of words, expressive of the most essential ideas of primitive life, and which he proved to be identical in Sanskrit, Greek, Latin, German, and Slavonic.[1]

[1] These lists of common Aryan words were published in the *Academy*, October 10, 1874, and are reprinted at the end of an article 'On the Life of Colebrooke' (*Chips from a German Workshop*, vol. iv. p. 418).

Yet neither Colebrooke nor Sir William Jones perceived the full import of these facts. Sir William Jones died young; Colebrooke's energies, marvellous as they were, were partly absorbed by official work, so that it was left to German and French scholars to bring to light the full wealth of the mine which those great English scholars had been the first to open. We know now that in language, and in all that is implied by language, India and Europe are one, but to prove this, against the incredulity of all the greatest scholars of the day, was no easy matter. It could be done effectually in one way only, viz. by giving to Oriental studies a strictly scientific character, by requiring from Oriental students not only the devotion of an *amateur*, but the same thoroughness, minuteness, and critical accuracy which were long considered the exclusive property of Greek and Latin scholars. I could not think of giving here a history of the work done during the last fifty years. It has been admirably described in Benfey's 'History of the Science of Language.'[1] Even if I attempted to give merely the names of those who have been most distinguished by really original discoveries—the names of Bopp, Pott, Grimm, Burnouf, Rawlinson, Miklosich, Benfey, Kuhn, Zeuss, Whitley Stokes—I am afraid my list would be considered very incomplete.

But let us look at what has been achieved by these men, and many others who followed their banners! The East, formerly a land of dreams, of fables, and fairies, has become to us a land of unmis-

[1] *Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft und Orientalischen Philologie in Deutschland*, von Theodor Benfey. München, 1869.

takeable reality; the curtain between the West and the East has been lifted, and our old forgotten home stands before us again in bright colours and definite outlines. Two worlds, separated for thousands of years, have been reunited as by a magic spell, and we feel rich in a past that may well be the pride of our noble Aryan family. We say no longer vaguely and poetically *Ex Oriente Lux*, but we know that all the most vital elements of our knowledge and civilisation — our languages, our alphabets, our figures, our weights and measures, our art, our religion, our traditions, our very nursery stories, come to us from the East; and we must confess that but for the rays of Eastern light, whether Aryan or Semitic or Hamitic, that called forth the hidden germs of the dark and dreary West, Europe, now the very light of the world, might have remained forever a barren and forgotten promontory of the primeval Asiatic continent. We live, indeed, in a new world; the barrier between the West and the East, that seemed insurmountable, has vanished. The East is ours, we are its heirs, and claim by right our share in its inheritance.

We know what it was for the Northern nations, the old barbarians of Europe, to be brought into spiritual contact with Rome and Greece, and to learn that beyond the small, poor world in which they had moved, there was an older, richer, brighter world, the ancient world of Rome and Athens, with its arts and laws, its poetry and philosophy, all of which they might call their own and make their own by claiming the heritage of the past. We know how, from that time, the Classical and Teutonic spirits

mingled together and formed that stream of modern thought on whose shores we ourselves live and move. A new stream is now being brought into the same bed, the stream of Oriental thought, and already the colours of the old stream show very clearly the influence of that new tributary. Look at any of the important works published during the last twenty years, not only on language, but on literature, mythology, law, religion, and philosophy, and you will see on every page the working of a new spirit. I do not say that the East can ever teach us new things, but it can place before us old things, and leave us to draw from them lessons more strange and startling than anything dreamt of in our philosophy.

Before all, a study of the East has taught us the same lesson which the Northern nations once learnt in Rome and Athens, that there are other worlds beside our own, that there are other religions, other mythologies, other laws, and that the history of philosophy from Thales to Hegel is not the whole history of human thought. In all these subjects the East has supplied us with parallels, and with all that is implied in parallels, viz. the possibility of comparing, measuring, and understanding. The *comparative spirit* is the truly scientific spirit of our age, nay of all ages. An empirical acquaintance with single facts does not constitute knowledge in the true sense of the word. All human knowledge begins with the Two or the Dyad, the comprehension of two single things as one. If in these days we may still quote Aristotle, we may boldly say that 'there is no science of that which is unique.' A single event may be purely accidental, it comes and goes, it is in-

explicable, it does not call for an explanation. But as soon as the same fact is repeated, the work of comparison begins, and the first step is made in that wonderful process which we call generalisation, and which is at the root of all intellectual knowledge and of all intellectual language. This primitive process of comparison is repeated again and again, and when we now give the title of *Comparative* to the highest kind of knowledge in every branch of science, we have only replaced the old word *intelligent* (*i.e.* interligent) or inter-twining, by a new and more expressive term, *comparative*. I shall say nothing about the complete revolution of the study of languages by means of the comparative method, for here I can appeal to such names as Mommsen and Curtius, to show that the best among classical scholars are themselves the most ready to acknowledge the importance of the results obtained by the intertwining of Eastern and Western philology.

But take mythology. As long as we had only the mythology of the classical nations to deal with, we looked upon it simply as strange, anomalous, and irrational. When, however, the same strange stories, the same hallucinations, turned up in the most ancient mythology of India, when not only the character and achievements, but the very names of some of the gods and heroes were found to be the same, then every thoughtful observer saw that there must be a system in that ancient madness, that there must be some order in that strange mob of gods and heroes, and that it must be the task of comparative mythology to find out what reason there is in all that mass of unreason.

The same comparative method has been applied to the study of religion also. All religions are Oriental, and, with the exception of the Christian, their sacred books are all written in Oriental languages. The materials, therefore, for a comparative study of the religious systems of the world had all to be supplied by Oriental scholars. But far more important than those materials is the spirit in which they have been treated. The sacred books of the principal religions of mankind had to be placed side by side with perfect impartiality, in order to discern the points which they share in common as well as those that are peculiar to each. The results already obtained by this simple juxtaposition are full of important lessons, and the fact that the truths on which all religions agree far exceed those on which they differ, has hardly, as yet, been sufficiently appreciated. I feel convinced, however, that the time will come when those who at present profess to be most disquieted by our studies will be the most grateful for our support—for having shown by evidence which cannot be controverted, that all religions spring from the same sacred soil, the human heart; that all are quickened by the same divine spirit, the still small voice; and that, though the outward forms of religion may change, may wither and decay, yet, as long as man is what he is and what he has been, he will postulate again and again the Infinite as the very condition of the Finite, he will yearn for something which the world cannot give, he will feel his weakness and dependence, and in that weakness and dependence discover the deepest sources of his hope, and trust, and strength.

A patient study of the sacred scriptures of the world is what is wanted at present more than anything else in order to clear our own ideas of the origin, the nature, the purposes of religion. There can be no science of one religion, but there can be a science of many. We have learnt already one lesson, that behind the helpless expressions which language has devised, whether in the East or in the West, for uttering the unutterable, be it Dyaushpitâ or Ahuramazda, be it Jehovah or Allah, be it the All or the Nothing, be it the First Cause or Our Father in heaven, there is the same intention, the same striving, the same stammering, the same faith. Other lessons will follow, till in the end we shall be able to restore that ancient bond which unites, not only the East with the West, but all the members of the human family, and may learn to understand what a Persian poet meant when he wrote many centuries ago (I quote from Mr. Conway's Sacred Anthology), 'Diversity of worship has divided the human race into seventy-two nations. From among all their dogmas I have selected one—the Love of God.'

Nor is this comparative spirit restricted to the treatment of language, mythology, and religion. While hitherto we knew the origin and spreading of most of the ancient arts and sciences in one channel only, and had to be satisfied with tracing their sources to Greece and Rome, and thence down the main stream of European civilisation, we have now for many of them one or two parallel histories in India and in China. The history of geometry, for instance—the first formation of geometrical conceptions or technical terms—was hitherto known to us from Greece

only: now we can compare the gradual elaboration of geometrical principles both in Greece and India, and thus arrive at some idea of what is natural or inevitable, and what is accidental or purely personal in each. It was known, for instance, that in Greece the calculation of solid figures began with the building of altars, and you will hear to-day from Dr. Thibaut, that in India also the first impulse to geometric science was given, not by the measuring of fields, as the name implies, but by the minute observances in building altars.

Similar coincidences and divergences have been brought to light by a comparative study of the history of astronomy, of music, of grammar, but, most of all, by a comparative study of philosophic thought. There are, indeed, few problems in philosophy which have not occupied the Indian mind, and nothing can exceed the interest of watching the Hindu and the Greek, working on the same problems, each in his own way, yet both in the end arriving at much the same results. Such are the coincidences between the two that but lately an eminent German professor[1] published a treatise to show that the Greeks had borrowed their philosophy from India, while others lean to the opinion that in philosophy the Hindus are the pupils of the Greeks. This is the same feeling which impelled Dugald Stewart, when he saw the striking similarity between Greek and Sanskrit, to maintain that Sanskrit must have been put together after the model of Greek and Latin by those arch-forgers and liars, the Brahmans, and that the whole

[1] *Aristoteles' Metaphysik, eine Tochter der Sânkhya-Lehre des Kapila*, von Dr. C. B. Schlüter. 1874.

of Sanskrit literature was an imposition. The comparative method has put an end to such violent theories. It teaches us that what is possible in one country is possible also in another; it shows us that, as there are antecedents for Plato and Aristotle in Greece, there are antecedents for the Vedânta and Sânkhya philosophies in India, and that each had its own independent growth. It is true, that when we first meet in Indian philosophy with our old friends, the four or five elements, the atoms, our metaphysics, our logic, our syllogism, we are startled; but we soon discover that, given the human mind and human language, and the world by which we are surrounded, the different systems of philosophy of Thales and Hegel, of Vyâsa and Kapila, are inevitable solutions. They all come and go, they are maintained and refuted, till at last all philosophy ends where it ought to begin, with an inquiry into the necessary conditions and the inevitable forms of knowledge, represented by a criticism of Pure Reason, and, what is more important still, by a criticism of Language.

Much has been done of late for Indian philosophy, particularly by Ballantyne and Hall, by Cowell and Gough, by the editors of the 'Bibliotheca Indica,' and the 'Pandit.' Yet it is much to be desired that some young scholars, well versed in the history of European philosophy, should devote themselves more ardently to this promising branch of Indian literature. No doubt, they would find it a great help if they were able to spend some years in India, in order to learn from the last and fast-disappearing representatives of some of the old schools of Indian philosophy what they alone can teach. What can be

done by such a combination of Eastern and Western knowledge has lately been shown by the excellent work done by Dr. Kielhorn, the Professor of Sanskrit at the Deccan College in Punah. But there is now so much of published materials, and Sanskrit MSS. also are so easily obtained from India, that much might be done in England, or in France, or in Germany —much that would be of interest not only to Oriental scholars, but to all philosophers whose powers of independent appreciation are not entirely blunted by their study of Plato and Aristotle, of Berkeley, Hume, and Kant.

I have so far dwelt chiefly on the powerful influence which the East, and more particularly India, has exercised on the intellectual life and work of the West. But the progress of Oriental scholarship in Europe, and the discovery of that spiritual relationship which binds India and England together, have likewise produced practical effects of the greatest moment in the East. The Hindus in their first intercourse with English scholars, placed before them the treasures of their native literature with all the natural pride of a nation that considered itself the oldest, the wisest, the most enlightened nation in the world. For a time, but for a short time only, the claims of their literature to a fabulous antiquity were admitted, and, dazzled by the unexpected discovery of a new classical literature, people raved about the beauty of Sanskrit poetry in truly Oriental strains. Then followed a sudden reaction, and the natives themselves, on becoming more and more acquainted with European history and literature, began to feel the childishness of their claims, and to be almost

ashamed of their own classics. This was a national misfortune. A people that can feel no pride in the past, in its history and literature, loses the mainstay of its national character. When Germany was in the very depth of its political degradation, it turned to its ancient literature, and drew hope for the future from the study of the past. Something of the same kind is now passing in India. A new taste, not without some political ingredients, has sprung up for the ancient literature of the country; a more intelligent appreciation of their real merits has taken the place of the extravagant admiration for the masterworks of their old poets; there is a revival in the study of Sanskrit, a surprising activity in the republication of Sanskrit texts, and there are traces among the Hindus of a growing feeling, not very different from that which Tacitus described when he said of the Germans: 'Who would go to Germany, a country without natural beauty, with a wretched climate, miserable to cultivate or to look at—*unless it be his fatherland?*'

Even the discovery that Sanskrit, English, Greek, and Latin are cognate languages has not been without its influence on the scholars and thinkers, on the leaders of public opinion, in India. They more than others had felt for a time most keenly the intellectual superiority of the West, and they rose again in their own estimation by learning that, physically or, what is better still, intellectually, they had been and might be again the peers of Greeks and Romans and Saxons. These silent influences often escape the eye of the politician and the historian,

but at critical moments they decide the fate of whole nations and empires.[1]

The intellectual life of India at the present moment is full of interesting problems. It is too much the fashion to look only at its darker sides, and to forget that such intellectual regenerations as we are witnessing in India, are impossible without convulsions and failures. A new race of men is growing up in India, who have stepped, as it were, over a thousand years, and have entered at once on the intellectual inheritance of Europe. They carry off prizes at English schools, take their degrees in English Universities, and are in every respect our equals. They have temptations which we have not, and now and then they succumb: but we too have temptations of our own, and we do not always resist them. One can hardly trust one's eyes in reading their writings, whether in English or Bengali, many of which would reflect credit on our own Quarterlies. With regard to what is of the greatest interest to us, their scholarship, it is true that the old school of Sanskrit scholars is dying out, and much will die with it which we shall never recover; but a new and most promising school of Sanskrit students, educated by European professors, is springing up, and they will, nay, to judge from recent controversies, they have already become most formidable rivals to our own scholars. The essays of Dr. Bhao Daji, whom, I regret to say, we have lately lost by death, on disputed points in Indian archæology and literature, are most valuable. The indefatigable Rajendralal Mitra is rendering

[1] See Note A, p. 41.

most excellent service in the publications of the Asiatic Society at Calcutta, and he discusses the theories of European Orientalists with all the ease and grace of an English reviewer. The Râjah of Besmah, Giriprasâda-sinha, has just finished his magnificent edition of the 'White Yajur-veda.' The Sanskrit books published at Calcutta by Târânâtha and others form a complete library, and Târânâtha's new 'Dictionary of the Sanskrit Language' will prove most useful and valuable. The editions of Sanskrit texts published at Bombay by Professor Bhândârkar, by Shankar Pandurang Pandit, and others, need not fear comparison with the best work of European scholars. There is a school of native students at Benares whose publications, under the auspices of Mr. Griffith, have made their journal, the 'Pandit,' indispensable to every Sanskrit scholar. Râjârâmaśâstrî's and Bâlasâstrî's edition of the 'Mahâbhâshya' has received the highest praise from European students. In the 'Antiquary,' a paper very ably conducted by Mr. Burgess, we meet with contributions from several learned natives, among them from his Highness the Prince of Travancore, from Ram Dass Sen, the Zemindar of Berhampore, from Kâshinâth Trimbak Telang, from Sashagirisâstrî, and others, which are read with the greatest interest and advantage by European scholars. The collected essays of Ram Dass Sen well deserve a translation into English, and Rajanîkânta's 'Life of the poet Jajadeva,' just published, bears witness to the same revival of literary tastes and patriotic feelings.

Besides this purely literary movement, there is a religious movement going on in India, the Brahmo-

samâj, which, both in its origin and its later development, is mainly the result of European influences. It began with an attempt to bring the modern corrupt forms of worship back to the purity and simplicity of the Vedas; and by ascribing to the Veda the authority of a Divine Revelation, it was hoped to secure that infallible authority without which no religion was supposed to be possible. How was that movement stopped, and turned into a new channel? Simply by the publication of the Veda, and by the works of European scholars, such as Stevenson, Mill, Rosen, Wilson, and others, who showed to the natives what the Veda really was, and made them see the folly of their way.[1] Thus the religion, the literature, the whole character of the people of India are becoming more and more Indo-European. They work for us, as we work for them. Many a letter have I received from native scholars in which they express their admiration for the wonderful achievements of European ingenuity, for railways, and telegraphs, and all the rest: and yet what, according to their own confession, has startled them and delighted them most, is the interest we have taken in their literature, and the new life which we have imparted to their ancient history. I know these matters seem small, when we are near to them, when we are in the very midst of them. Like the tangled threads hanging on a loom, they look worthless, purposeless. But history weaves her woof out of all of them, and after a time, when we see the full and finished design, we perceive that no colour, however quiet, could have been dropped, no shade,

[1] See note B, p. 42.

however slight, could have been missed, without spoiling the whole.

And now, after having given this account of our stewardship, let me say in conclusion a few words on the claims which Oriental studies have on public sympathy and support.

Let me begin with the Universities—I mean of course the English Universities—and more particularly that University which has been to me for many years an *Alma Mater*, Oxford. While we have there, or are founding there, professorships for every branch of Theology, Jurisprudence, and Physical Science, we have hardly any provision for the study of Oriental languages. We have a Chair of Hebrew, rendered illustrious by the greatest living theologian of England, and we have a Chair of Sanskrit, which has left its mark in the history of Sanskrit literature; but for the modern languages of India, whether Aryan or Dravidian, for the language and literature of Persia, both ancient and modern, for the language and antiquities of Egypt and Babylon, for Chinese,[1] for Turkish, nay even for Arabic, there is nothing deserving the name of a Chair. When, in a Report on University Reform, I ventured to point out these gaps, and to remark that in the smallest of German Universities most of these subjects were represented by professors, I was asked whether I was in earnest in maintaining that Oxford, the first University in what has rightly been called the greatest Oriental Empire, ought really to support the study of Oriental languages.

[1] A Chair of Chinese has since been founded, and is now worthily occupied by Professor Legge.

The second claim we prefer is on the Missionary Societies. I have lately incurred very severe obloquy for my supposed hostility to missionary enterprise. All I can say is, I wish that there were ten missionaries for every one we have now. I have always counted missionaries among my best friends; I have again and again acknowledged how much Oriental studies and linguistic studies in general owe to them, and I am proud to say that, even now, while missionaries at home have abused me in unmeasured terms, missionaries abroad—devoted, hard-working missionaries—have thanked me for what I said of them and their work in my lay-sermon in Westminster Abbey last December.

Now, it seems to me that, first of all, our Universities, and I think again chiefly of Oxford, might do much more for missions than they do at present. If we had a sufficient staff of professors for Eastern languages, we could prepare young missionaries for their work, and should be able to send out from time to time such men as Patteson, the Bishop of Melanesia, who was every inch an Oxford man. And in these missionaries we might have, not only apostles of religion and civilisation, but at the same time the most [illegible]uable pioneers of scientific research. I know ther[illegible]e some authorities at home who declare that such [illegible]ombination is impossible, or at least undesirabl[illegible]hat a man cannot serve two masters, and that a [illegible]ssionary must do his own work and nothing else[illegible]. Nothing, I believe, can be more mistaken. Fir[illegible] all, some of our most efficient missionaries hav[illegible]een those who have done also the most excellent w[illegible]rk as scholars, and whenever I have

conversed on this subject with missionaries who have seen active service, they all agree that they cannot be converting all day long, and that nothing is more refreshing and invigorating to them than some literary or scientific work. Now, what I should like to see is this: I should like to see ten or twenty of our non-resident fellowships, which at present are doing more harm than good, assigned to missionary work, to be given to young men who have taken their degree, and who, whether laymen or clergymen, are willing to work as assistant missionaries on distant stations, with the distinct understanding that they should devote some of their time to scientific work, whether the study of languages, or flowers, or stars, and that they should send home every year some account of their labours. These men would be like scientific consuls, to whom students at home might apply for information and help. They would have opportunities of distinguishing themselves by really useful work, far more than in London, and after ten years they might either return to Europe with a well-established reputation, or if they find that they have a real call for missionary work, devote all their life to it. Though to my own mind there is no nobler work than that done by missionaries, yet I believe that some such connection with the Universities and men of science would raise their position, would call out more general interest, and secure to the missionary cause the good-will of those whose words are apt to become law.

Thirdly, I think that Oriental studies have a claim on the colonies and the colonial Governments. The English colonies are scattered all over the globe, and

many of them in localities where an immense deal of useful scientific work might be done, and would be done with the slightest encouragement from the local authorities, and something like a systematic supervision on the part of the Colonial Office at home. Some years ago I ventured to address the Colonial Secretary of State on this subject, and a letter was sent out in consequence to all the English colonies, inviting information on the languages, monuments, customs and traditions of the native races. Some most valuable reports have been sent home during the last five or six years, but when it was suggested that these reports should be published in a permanent form, the expense that would have been required for printing every year a volume of Colonial Reports, and which would not have amounted to more than a few hundred pounds for all the colonies of the British Empire, part of it to be recovered by the sale of the book, was considered too large.

Now, we should bear in mind that at the present moment some of the tribes living in or near the English colonies in Australia, Polynesia, Africa, and America are actually dying out, their languages are disappearing, their customs, traditions, and religions, will soon be completely swept away. To the student of language the dialect of a savage tribe is as valuable as Sanskrit or Hebrew, nay, for the solution of certain problems, more so; every one of these languages is the growth of thousands and thousands of years, the workmanship of millions and millions of human beings. If they were now preserved, they might hereafter fill the most critical gaps in the history of the human race. At Rome at the time of the Scipios,

hundreds of people might have written down a grammar and dictionary of the Etruscan language, of Oscan, or Umbrian; but there were men then, as there are now, who shrugged their shoulders and said, What can be the use of preserving these barbarous, uncouth idioms?—What would we not give now for some such records?

And this is not all. The study of savage tribes has assumed a new interest of late, when the question of the exact relation of man to the rest of the animal kingdom has again roused the passions not only of scientific inquirers, but also of the public at large. Now, what is wanted for the solution of this question are more facts and fewer theories, and these facts can only be gained by a patient study of the lowest races of mankind. When religion was held to be the specific character of man, it was asserted by many travellers that they had seen races without any religious ideas; when language was seen to be the real frontier line between man and beast, it was maintained that there were human beings without language. Now, all we want to know are facts, let the conclusions be whatever they may. It is by no means easy to decide whether savage tribes have a religion or not; at all events it requires the same discernment, and the same honesty of purpose as to find out whether men of the highest intellect among us have a religion or not. I call the Introduction to Spencer's First Principles deeply religious, but I can well understand that a missionary reporting on a tribe of Spencerian savages might declare that they had no idea whatsoever of religion. Looking at a report sent home lately by the indefatigable Governor

of New South Wales, Sir Hercules Robinson, I find the following description of the religious ideas of the Kamilarois, one of the most degraded tribes in the North-western district of the colony:—

'Bhaiami is regarded by them as the maker of all things. The name signifies "maker," or "cutter-out," from the verb bhai, baialli, baia. He is regarded as the rewarder and punisher of men according to their conduct. He sees all, and knows all, if not directly, through the subordinate deity Turramûlan, who presides at the Bora. Bhaiami is said to have been once on the earth. Turramûlan is mediator in all operations of Bhaiami upon man, and in all man's transactions with Bhaiami. Turramûlan means "leg on one side only," "one-legged."'

This description is given by the Rev. C. Greenway, and if there is any theological bias in it, let us make allowance for it. But there remains the fact that Bhaiami, their name for deity, comes from a root bhai, to 'make,' to 'cut out,' and if we remember that hardly any of the names for deity, either among the Aryan or Semitic nations, comes from a root with so abstract a meaning, we shall admit, I think, that such reports as these should not be allowed to lie forgotten in the pigeon-holes of the Colonial Office, or in the pages of a monthly journal.

What applies to religion applies to language. We have been told again and again that the Veddahs in Ceylon have no language. Sir Emerson Tennent wrote 'that they mutually make themselves understood by signs, grimaces, and guttural sounds, which have little resemblance to definite words or language in general.' When these statements were repeated,

I tried to induce the Government of Ceylon to send a competent man to settle the question. I did not receive all I wanted, and therefore postponed the publication of what was sent me. But I may say so much, that more than half of the words used by the Veddahs are, like Singhalese itself, mere corruptions of Sanskrit; their very name is the Sanskrit word for hunter, veddhâ, or as Mr. Childers supposes, vyâdha. There is a remnant of words in their language of which I can make nothing as yet. But so much is certain: either the Veddahs started with the common inheritance of Aryan words and ideas; or, at all events, they lived for a long time in contact with Aryan people, and adopted from them such words as were wanting in their language. If they now stand low in the scale of humanity, they once stood higher, nay they may possibly prove, in language, if not in blood, the distant cousins of Plato, and Newton, and Goethe.

It is most essential to keep *la carrière ouverte* for facts, even more than for theories, and for the supply of such facts the Colonial Government might render most useful service.

It is but right to state that whenever I have applied to the Governors of any of the Colonies I have invariably met with the greatest kindness and readiness to help. Some of them take the warmest interest in these researches. Sir George Grey's services to the science of language have hardly been sufficiently appreciated as yet, and the Linguistic Library which he founded at the Cape, places him of right by the side of Sir Thomas Bodley. Sir Hercules Robinson, Mr. Musgrave in South Australia, Sir Henry Barkley at the Cape, and several

others, are quite aware of the importance of linguistic and ethnological researches. What is wanted is encouragement from home, and some systematic guidance. Dr. Bleek, the excellent librarian of Sir George Grey's Library at the Cape, who has devoted the whole of his life to the study of savage dialects and whose Comparative Grammar of the South African languages will hold its place by the side of Bopp's, Diez's, and Caldwell's Comparative Grammars, is most anxious that there should be a permanent linguistic and ethnological station established at the Cape; in fact, that there should be a linguist attached to every zoological station. At the Cape there are not only the Zulu dialects to be studied, but two most important languages, that of the Hottentots and that of the Bushmen. Dr. Bleek has lately been enabled to write down several volumes of traditional literature from the mouths of some Bushman prisoners, but he says, 'my powers and my life are drawing to an end, and unless I have some young men to assist me, and carry on my work, much of what I have done will be lost.' There is no time to be lost, and I trust, therefore, that my appeal will not be considered importunate by the present Colonial Minister.[1]

Last of all, we turn to India, the very cradle of Oriental scholarship, and here, instead of being importunate and urging new claims for assistance, I think I am expressing the feelings of all Oriental scholars in publicly acknowledging the readiness with which the Indian Government, whether at home or in India, whether during the days of the old East

[1] Dr. Bleek has since died (1875), and though there has been much delay, there is reason to hope that a competent successor will soon be appointed.

India Company, or now under the auspices of the Secretary of State, has always assisted every enterprise tending to throw light on the literature, the religion, the laws and customs, the arts and manufactures of that ancient Oriental Empire.

Only last night I received the first volume of a work which will mark a new era in the history of Oriental typography. Three valuable MSS. of the Mahâbhâshya have been photolithographed at the expense of the Indian Government, and under the supervision of one whom many of us will miss here to-day, the late Professor Goldstücker. It is a magnificent publication, and as there are only fifty copies printed, it will soon become more valuable than a real MS.

There are two surveys carried on at the present moment in India, a literary, and an archæological survey. Many years ago, when Lord Elgin went to India as Governor-General, I suggested to him the necessity of taking measures in order to rescue from destruction whatever could still be rescued of the ancient literature of the country. Lord Elgin died before any active measures could be taken, but the plan found a more powerful advocate in Mr. Whitley Stokes, who urged the Government to appoint some Sanskrit scholars to visit all places containing collections of Sanskrit MSS., and to publish lists of their titles, so that we might know, at all events, how much of a literature that had been preserved for thousands of years was still in existence at the present moment. This work was confided to Dr. Bühler, Dr. Kielhorn, Mr. Burnell, Rajendralal Mitra, and others. Several of their catalogues have been

published, and there is but one feeling among all Sanskrit scholars as to the value of their work. But they also feel that the time has come for doing more. The mere titles of the MSS. whet our appetite, but do not satisfy it. There are, of course, hundreds of books where the title, the name of the author, the *locus et annus* are all we care to know. But of books which are scarce, and hitherto not known out of India, we want to know more. We want some information of the subject and its treatment, and, if possible, of the date of the author, and of the writers quoted by him. We want extracts, intelligently chosen: in fact, we want something like the excellent catalogue which Dr. Aufrecht has made for the Bodleian Library. In Mr. Burnell, Dr. Bühler, Dr. Kielhorn, the Government possesses scholars who could do that work admirably; what they want is more leisure, more funds, more assistance.

Contemporaneously with the Literary Survey, there is the Archæological Survey, carried on by that gallant and indefatigable scholar, General Cunningham. His published reports show the systematic progress of his work, and his occasional communications in the Journal of the Asiatic Society of Bengal tell us of his newest discoveries. The very last number of that journal brought us the news of the discovery of the wonderful ruins of the Buddhist temple of Bharahut,[1] which, with their representations of scenes from the early Buddhist literature, with their inscriptions and architectural style, may enable us to find a *terminus a quo* for the literary and religious history of India. Nor should we forget the

[1] *Academy*, August 1, 1874.

services which Mr. Fergusson has rendered to the history of Indian architecture, both by awakening an interest in the subject, and by the magnificent publication of the drawings of the sculptures of Sanchi and Amravati, carried on under the authority of the Secretary of State for India. Let us hope that these new discoveries may supply him with materials for another volume, worthy of its companion.

It was supposed for a time that there was a third survey carried on in India, ethnological and linguistic, and the volume published by Colonel Dalton, 'Descriptive Ethnology of Bengal,' with portraits from photographs, was a most excellent beginning. But the other Indian Governments have not hitherto followed the example of the Bengal Government, and nothing has of late come to my knowledge in this important line of research. Would not Dr. Hunter, who has done so much for a scientific study of the non-Aryan languages and races of India, take up this important branch of research, and give us, not only photographs and graphic description, but also, what is most wanted, scholarlike grammars of the principal races of India? Lists of words, if carefully chosen, like those in Colonel Dalton's work and in Sir George Campbell's 'Specimens,' are, no doubt, most valuable for preliminary researches, but without grammars none of the great questions which are still pending in Indian Ethnology will ever be satisfactorily and definitely settled. No real advance has been made in the classification of Indian dialects since the time when I endeavoured, some twenty years ago, to sum up what was then known on that subject, in my letter to Bunsen 'On the Turanian Languages.' What

I then for the first time ventured to maintain against the highest authorities in Indian linguistic ethnology, viz. that the dialects of the Mundas or the Koles constituted a third and totally independent class of languages in India, related neither to the Aryan nor to the Dravidian families, has since been fully confirmed by later researches, and is now, I believe, generally accepted. The fact, also, on which I then strongly insisted, that the Uraon Koles, and Rajmahal Koles, might be Koles in blood, but certainly not in language—their language being, like that of the Gonds, Dravidian—is now no longer disputed. But beyond this, all is still as hypothetical as it was twenty years ago, simply because we can get no grammars of the Munda dialects. Why do not the German missionaries at Ranchi, who have done such excellent work among the Koles, publish a grammatical analysis of that interesting cluster of dialects? Only a week ago, one of them, Mr. Jellinghaus, gave me a grammatical sketch of the Mundári language, and even this, short as it is, was quite sufficient to show that the supposed relationship between the Munda dialects and the Khasia language, of which we have a grammar, is untenable. The similarities pointed out by Mason between the Munda dialects and the Talaing of Pegu are certainly startling, but equally startling are the divergences; and here again no real result will be obtained without a comparison of the grammatical structure of the two languages. The other classes of Indian languages, the Taic, the Gangetic, subdivided into Trans-Himalayan and Sub-Himalayan, the Lohitic, and Tamulic, are still retained, though some of their names have been

changed. Without wishing to defend the names which I had chosen for these classes, I must say that I look upon the constant introduction of new technical terms as an unmixed evil. Every classificatory term is imperfect. Aryan, Semitic, Hamitic, Turanian, all are imperfect, but, if they are but rightly defined, they can do no harm, whereas a new term, however superior at first sight, always makes confusion worse confounded. The chemists do not hesitate to call sugar an acid rather than part with an old-established term; why should not we in the science of language follow their good example?

Dr. Leitner's labours in Dardistan should here be mentioned. They date from the year 1866. Considering the shortness of the time allotted to him for exploring that country, he has been most successful in collecting his linguistic materials. We owe him a vocabulary of two Shinâ dialects (the Ghilghiti and Astori), and of the Arnyia, the Khayuna, and the Kalâsha-Mânder. These vocabularies are so arranged as to give us a fair idea of the systems of conjugation and declension. Other vocabularies, arranged according to subjects, allow us an insight into the intellectual life of the Shinas, and we also receive most interesting information on the customs, legends, superstitions, and religion of the Dardus. Some of the important results obtained by the same enterprising scholar in his excavations on the Takht-i-bahai hills will be laid before the Archæological Section of this Congress. It is impossible to look at the Buddhist sculptures which he has brought home without perceiving that there is in them a foreign element. They are Buddhist sculptures, but they differ both in treatment and expression from what

was hitherto known of Buddhist art in various parts of the world. Dr. Leitner thinks that the foreign element came from Greece, from Greek or Macedonian workmen, the descendants of Alexander's companions; others think that local and individual influences are sufficient to account for apparent deviations from the common Buddhist type. On this point I feel totally incompetent to express an opinion, but whatever the judgment of our archæological colleagues may be, neither they nor we ourselves can have any doubt that Dr. Leitner deserves our sincere gratitude as an indefatigable explorer and successful discoverer.

Many of the most valuable treasures of every kind and sort, collected during these official surveys, and by private enterprise, are now deposited in the Indian Museum in London, a real mine of literary and archæological wealth, opened with the greatest liberality to all who are willing to work in it.

It is unfortunate, no doubt, that this meeting of Oriental scholars should have taken place at a time when the treasures of the Indian Museum are still in their temporary exile; yet, if they share in the regret, felt by every friend of India, at the delay in the building of a new museum worthy both of England and of India, they will also carry away the conviction that such delay is simply due to a desire to do the best that can be done in order to carry out in the end something little short of that magnificent scheme of an Indian Institute drawn by the experienced hand of Mr. Forbes Watson.

And now, in conclusion, I have to express my own gratitude for the liberality both of the Directors of

the old East India Company and of the present Secretary of State for India in Council, for having enabled me to publish that work the last sheet of which I am able to present to this Meeting to-day, the 'Rig-Veda, with the Commentary of Sâyaṇâkârya.' It is the oldest book of the Aryan world, but it is also one of the largest, and its publication would have been simply impossible without the enlightened liberality of the Indian Government. For twenty-five years I find that, taking the large and small editions of the Rig-Veda together, I have printed every year what would make a volume of about six hundred pages octavo. Such a publication would have ruined any bookseller, for it must be confessed that there is little that is attractive in the Veda, nothing that could excite general interest. From an æsthetic point of view, no one would care for the hymns of the Rig-Veda, and I can well understand how, in the beginning of our century, even so discriminating a scholar as Colebrooke could express his opinion that, 'The Vedas are too voluminous for a complete translation, and what they contain would hardly reward the labour of the reader, much less that of the translator. The ancient dialect in which they are composed, and specially that of the three first Vedas, is extremely difficult and obscure; and though curious, as the parent of a more polished and refined language, its difficulties must long continue to prevent such an examination of the whole Vedas as would be requisite for extracting all that is remarkable and important in those voluminous works. But they well deserve to be occasionally consulted by the Oriental scholar.' Nothing shows the change

from the purely æsthetic to the purely scientific interest in the language and literature of India more clearly than the fact that for the last twenty-five years the work of nearly all Sanskrit scholars has been concentrated on the Veda. When some thirty years ago I received my first lessons in Sanskrit from Professor Brockhaus, whom I am happy and proud to see to-day among us, there were but few students who ventured to dive into the depths of Vedic literature. To-day among the Sanskrit scholars whom Germany has sent to us—Professors Stenzler, Spiegel, Weber, Haug, Pertsch, Windisch—there is not one who has not won his laurels on the field of Vedic scholarship. In France also a new school of Sanskrit students has sprung up who have done most excellent work for the interpretation of the Veda, and who bid fair to rival the glorious school of French Orientalists at the beginning of this century, both by their persevering industry and by that 'sweetness and light' which seems to be the birthright of their nation. But, I say again, there is little that is beautiful, in our sense of the word, to be found in the hymns of the Rig-Veda, and what little there is has been so often dwelt on that quite an erroneous impression as to the real nature of Vedic poetry has been produced in the mind of the public. My old friend, the Dean of St. Paul's, for instance, in some thoughtful lectures which he delivered this year on the 'Sacred Poetry of Early Religions,' has instituted a comparison between the Psalms and the hymns of the Veda, and he arrives at the conclusion that the Psalms are superior to the Vedic hymns. No doubt they are, from the point of view which he has chosen,

but the chief value of these hymns lies in the fact that they are so different from the Psalms, or, if you like, that they are so inferior to the Psalms. They are Aryan, the Psalms, Semitic; they belong to a primitive and rude state of society, the Psalms, at least most of them, are contemporaneous with or even later than the heydays of the Jewish monarchy. This strange misconception of the true character of the Vedic hymns seemed to me to become so general that when some years ago I had to publish the first volume of my translation, I intentionally selected a class of hymns which should in no way encourage such erroneous opinions. It was interesting to watch the disappointment. What! it was said, are these strange, savage, grotesque invocations of the Storm-gods, the inspired strains of the ancient sages of India? Is this the wisdom of the East? Is this the primeval revelation? Even scholars of high reputation joined in the outcry, and my friends hinted to me that they would not have wasted their life on such a book.

Now, suppose a geologist had brought to light the bones of a fossil animal, dating from a period anterior to any in which traces of animal life had been discovered before, would any young lady venture to say by way of criticism, 'Yes, these bones are very curious, but they are not pretty'? Or suppose a new Egyptian statue had been discovered, belonging to a dynasty hitherto unrepresented by any statues, would even a schoolboy dare to say, 'Yes, it is very nice, but the Venus of Milo is nicer'? Or suppose an old MS. is brought to Europe, do we find fault with it because it is not neatly printed? If a chemist dis-

covers a new element, is he pitied because it is not gold? If a botanist writes on germs, has he to defend himself because he does not write on flowers? Why, it is simply because the Veda is so different from what it was expected to be, because it is not like the Psalms, not like Pindar, not like the Bhagavadgîtâ; it is because it stands alone by itself, and reveals to us the earliest germs of religious thought, such as they really were; it is because it places before us a language more primitive than any we knew before; it is because its poetry is what you may call savage, uncouth, rude, horrible—it is for that very reason that it was worth while to dig and dig till the old buried city was recovered, showing us what man was, what we were, before we had reached the level of David, the level of Homer, the level of Zoroaster, showing us the very cradle of our thoughts, our words, and our deeds. *I* am not disappointed with the Veda, and I shall conclude my address with the last verses of the last hymn, which you have now in your hands—verses which thousands of years ago may have been addressed to a similar meeting of Aryan fellow-men, and which are not inappropriate to our own :—

Sám ga*kkh*adhvam sám vadadhvam sám va*h* mánâ*m*si *g*ânatâm,
Devâ*h* bhâgám yáthâ pûrve[1] sa*mg*ânânâ*h* upâsate.
Samânâ*h* mántra*h* sámiti*h* samânî samânám mána*h*
sahá *k*ittám eshâm,
Samânám mántram abhí mantraye va*h* samânéna va*h*
havíshâ *g*uhomi.
Samânî va*h* âkûti*h* samânâ hrídayâni va*h*,

[1] I read yathâpûrve as one word.

Samânám astu vaḥ mánaḥ yáthâ vaḥ súsaha ásati.

'Come together! Speak together! Let your minds be concordant—the gods by being concordant receive their share, one after the other. Their word is the same, their counsel is the same, their mind is the same, their thoughts are at one; I address to you the same word, I worship you with the same sacrifice. Let your endeavour be the same! Let your hearts be the same! Let your mind be the same, that it may go well with you.'

NOTES.

NOTE A.

In the 'Indian Mirror,' published at Calcutta, September 20, 1874, a native writer gave utterance almost at the same time to the same feelings:—

'When the dominion passed from the Mogul to the hands of Englishmen, the latter regarded the natives as little better than niggers, having a civilisation perhaps a shade better than that of the barbarians. . . . The gulf was wide between the conquerors and the conquered. . . . There was no affection to lessen the distance between the two races. . . . The discovery of Sanskrit entirely revolutionised the course of thought and speculations. It served as the "open sesame" to many hidden treasures. It was then that the position of India in the scale of civilisation was distinctly apprehended. It was then that our relations with the advanced nations of the world were fully realised. We were niggers at one time. We now become brethren. . . . The advent of the English found us a nation low sunk in the mire of superstitions, ignorance, and political servitude. The advent of scholars like Sir William Jones found us fully established in a rank above that of every nation, as that from which modern civilisation could be distinctly traced. It would be interesting to contemplate what would have been our position if the science of philology had not been discovered. . . . It was only when the labour of scholars brought to light the treasures of our antiquity that they perceived how near we were to their races in almost

all things that they held dear in their life. It was then that our claims on their affection and regard were first established. As Hindus we ought never to forget the labour of scholars. We owe them our life as a nation, our freedom as a recognised society, and our position in the scale of races. It is the fashion with many to decry the labours of those men as dry, unprofitable, and dreamy. We should know that it is to the study of the roots and inflections of the Sanskrit language that we owe our national salvation. . . . Within a very few years after the discovery of Sanskrit, a revolution took place in the history of comparative science. Never were so many discoveries made at once, and from the speculations of learned scholars like —— the dawnings of many truths are even now visible to the world. . . . Comparative mythology and comparative religion are new terms altogether in the world. . . . We say again that India has no reason to forget the services of scholars.'

NOTE B.

THE following letter addressed by me to the 'Academy,' Oct. 17, 1874, p. 433, gives the reasons for this statement:—

'I was aware of the mission of the four young Brahmans sent to Benares in 1845, to copy out and study the four Vedas respectively. I had read of it last in the "Historical Sketch of the Brahmo Samaj," which Miss Collet had the kindness to send me. But what I said in my address before the Oriental Congress referred to earlier times. That mission in 1845 was, in fact, the last result of much previous discussion, which gradually weakened and destroyed in the mind of Ram Mohun Roy and his followers their traditional faith in the Divine origin of the Vedas. At first Ram Mohun Roy met the arguments of his English friends by simply saying, "If you claim a

Divine origin for your sacred books, so do we;" and when he was pressed by the argument derived from internal evidence, he appealed to a few hymns, such as the Gáyatrî, and to the Upanishads, as by no means inferior to passages in the Bible, and not unworthy of a divine author. The Veda with him was chiefly in the Upanishads, and he had hardly any knowledge of the hymns of the Rig-Veda. I state this on the authority of a conversation that passed between him and young Rosen, who was then working at the MSS. of the Rig-Veda-Saṁhitâ in the British Museum, and to whom Ram Mohun Roy expressed his regret at not being able to read his own sacred books.

'There were other channels, too, through which, after Ram Mohun Roy's death in 1833, a knowledge of the studies of European scholars may have reached the still hesitating reformers of the Brahma Sabhá. Dvarka Náth Tagore paid a visit to Europe in the year 1845. I write from memory. Though not a man of deep religious feelings, he was an enlightened and shrewd observer of all that passed before his eyes. He was not a Sanskrit scholar; and I well recollect, when we paid a visit together to Eugène Burnouf, Dvarka Náth Tagore putting his dark delicate hand on one side of Burnouf's edition of the "Bhagavat Purâṇa," containing the French translation, and saying he could understand that, but not the Sanskrit original on the opposite page. I saw him frequently at Paris, where I was then engaged in collecting materials for a complete edition of the Vedas and the commentary of Sâyaṇâkârya. Many a morning did I pass in his rooms, smoking, accompanying him on the pianoforte, and discussing questions in which we took a common interest. I remember one morning, after he had been singing some Italian, French, and German music, I asked him to sing an Indian song. He declined at first, saying that he knew I should not like it; but at last he yielded, and sang, not one of the modern Persian songs, which commonly go by the name of Indian,

but a genuine native piece of music. I listened quietly, but when it was over, I told him that it seemed strange to me how one who could appreciate Italian and German music could find any pleasure in what sounded to me like mere noise, without melody, rhythm, or harmony. "Oh," he said, "that is exactly like you Europeans! When I first heard your Italian and German music I disliked it: it was no music to me at all. But I persevered, I became accustomed to it, I found out what was good in it, and now I am able to enjoy it. But you despise whatever is strange to you, whether in music, or philosophy, or religion; you will not listen and learn, and we shall understand you much sooner than you will understand us."

'In our conversations on the Vedas he never, as far as I recollect, defended the divine origin of his own sacred writings in the abstract, but he displayed great casuistic cleverness in maintaining that every argument that had ever been adduced in support of a supernatural origin of the Bible could be used with equal force in favour of a divine authorship of the Veda. His own ideas of the Veda were chiefly derived from the Upanishads, and he frequently assured me that there was much more of Vedic literature in India than we imagined. This Dvarka Náth Tagore was the father of Debendra Náth Tagore, the true founder of the Brahmo Samáj, who in 1845, sent the four young Brahmans to Benares to copy out and study the four Vedas. Though Dvarka Náth Tagore was so far orthodox that he maintained a number of Brahmans, yet it was he also who continued the grant for the support of the Church founded at Calcutta by Ram Mohun Roy. One letter written by Dvarka Náth Tagore from Paris to Calcutta in 1845 would supply the missing link between what was passing at that time in a room of an hotel on the Place Vendôme and the resolution taken at Calcutta to find out, once for all, what the Vedas really are.

'In India itself the idea of a critical and historical study

of the Veda originated certainly with English scholars. Dr. Mill once showed me the first attempt at printing the sacred Gâyatrî in Calcutta; and, if I am not mistaken, he added that unfortunately the gentleman who had printed it died soon after, thus confirming the prophecies of the Brahmans that such a sacrilege would not remain unavenged by the gods. Dr. Mill, Stephenson, Wilson, and others were the first to show to the educated natives in India that the Upanishads belonged to a later age than the hymns of the Rig-Veda, and likewise the first to exhibit to Ram Mohun Roy and his friends the real character of these ancient hymns. On a mind like Ram Mohun Roy's the effect was probably much more immediate than on his followers, so that it took several years before they decided on sending their commissioners to Benares to report on the Veda and its real character. Yet that mission was, I believe, the result of a slow process of attrition produced by the contact between native and European minds, and as such I wished to present it in my address at the Oriental Congress.'

XII.

WESTMINSTER LECTURE.

ON MISSIONS.[1]

Delivered in the Nave of Westminster Abbey, on the Evening of December 3, 1873.

THE number of religions which have attained stability and permanence in the history of the world is very small. If we leave out of consideration those vague and varying forms of faith and worship which we

'NOTICE.

[1] Westminster Abbey. Day of Intercession for Missions, Wednesday, December 3, 1873. Lecture in the Nave, at eight o'clock, p.m.

Hymn 25 (*Bp. Heber*) . . . . . *Wittenberg* (p. 50).

From Greenland's icy mountains,
From India's coral strands,
Where Afric's sunny fountains
Roll down their golden sands;
From many an ancient river,
From many a palmy plain,
They call us to deliver
Their land from error's chain.

What though the spicy breezes
Blow soft o'er Ceylon's isle;
Though every prospect pleases,
And only man is vile!
In vain with lavish kindness
The gifts of God are strown;
The heathen in his blindness
Bows down to wood and stone.

Can we whose souls are lighted
With wisdom from on high,
Can we to men benighted
The lamp of life deny?
Salvation, O Salvation!
The joyful sound proclaim,
Till earth's remotest nation
Has learnt Messiah's name.

Waft, waft, ye winds, his story;
And you, ye waters, roll;
Till, like a sea of glory,
It spreads from pole to pole;
Till o'er our ransom'd nature,
The Lamb for sinners slain,
Redeemer, King, Creator,
In bliss returns to reign. Amen.

There will be a Lecture delivered in the Nave on Missions by Professor Max Müller, M.A.

find among uncivilised and unsettled races, among races ignorant of reading and writing, who have neither a literature, nor laws, nor even hymns and prayers handed down by oral teaching from father to son, from mother to daughter, we see that the number of the real historical religions of mankind amounts to no more than eight. The Semitic races have produced three—the Jewish, the Christian, the Mohammedan; the Aryan, or Indo-European races, an equal number—the Brahman, the Buddhist, and the Parsi. Add to these the two religious systems of China, that of Confucius and Lao-tse, and you have before you what may be called the eight distinct languages or utterances of the faith of mankind from the beginning of the world to the present day; you have before you in broad outlines the religious map of the whole world.

All these religions, however, have a history, a history more deeply interesting than the history of language, or literature, or art, or politics. Religions are not unchangeable: on the contrary, they are always growing and changing; and if they cease to grow and cease to change, they cease to live. Some of these religions stand by themselves, totally independent of all the rest; others are closely united, or have influenced each other during various stages of their growth and decay. They must therefore be

Ps. 100 (*New Version*) . . . . *Old Hundredth* (p. 21).

With one consent let all the earth
To God their cheerful voices raise;
Glad homage pay with awful mirth,
And sing before him songs of praise.

Convinced that He is God alone,
From Whom both we and all proceed;
We whom He chooses for His own,
The flock that He vouchsafes to feed.

O enter then His temple gate,
Thence to His courts devoutly press;
And still your grateful hymns repeat,
And still His Name with praises bless.

For He's the Lord supremely good,
His mercy is for ever sure;
His truth, which all times firmly stood,
To endless ages shall endure. Amen.'

studied together, if we wish to understand their real character, their growth, their decay, and their resuscitations. Thus, Mohammedanism would be unintelligible without Christianity; Christianity without Judaism; and there are similar bonds that hold together the great religions of India and Persia—the faith of the Brahman, the Buddhist, and the Parsi. After a careful study of the origin and growth of these religions, and after a critical examination of the sacred books on which all of them profess to be founded, it has become possible to subject them all to a scientific classification, in the same manner as languages, apparently unconnected and mutually unintelligible, have been scientifically arranged and classified; and by a comparison of such points as all or some of them share in common, as well as by a determination of others which are peculiar to each, a new science has been called into life, a science which concerns us all, and in which all who truly care for religion must sooner or later take their part—*the Science of Religion.*

Among the various classifications[1] which have been applied to the religions of the world, there is one that interests us more immediately to-night—I mean the division into Non-Missionary and Missionary religions. This is by no means, as might be supposed, a classification based on an unimportant or merely accidental characteristic; on the contrary, it rests on what is the very heart-blood in every system of human faith. Among the six religions of the Aryan

[1] Different systems of classification applied to the religions of the world are discussed in my *Introduction to the Science of Religion*, pp. 122–143.

and Semitic world, there are three that are opposed to all missionary enterprise—Judaism, Brahmanism, and Zoroastrianism; and three that have a missionary character from their very beginning—Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and Christianity.

The Jews, particularly in ancient times, never thought of spreading their religion. Their religion was to them a treasure, a privilege, a blessing, something to distinguish them, as the chosen people of God, from all the rest of the world. A Jew must be of the seed of Abraham: and when in later times, owing chiefly to political circumstances, the Jews had to admit strangers to some of the privileges of their theocracy, they looked upon them, not as souls that had been gained, saved, born again into a new brotherhood, but as strangers (גֵּרִים), as Proselytes (*προσήλυτοι*)—which means men who have come to them as aliens, not to be trusted, as their saying was, until the twenty-fourth generation.[1]

A very similar feeling prevented the Brahmans from ever attempting to proselytise those who did not by birth belong to the spiritual aristocracy of their country. Their wish was rather to keep the light to themselves, to repel intruders; and they went so far as to punish those who happened to be near enough to hear even the sound of their prayers, or to witness their sacrifices.[2]

[1] 'Proselyto ne fidas usque ad vigesimam quartam generationem.' Jalkut Ruth, f. 163, d; Danz, in Meuschen, *Nov. Test. ex Talm. illustr.* p. 651.

[2] *India, Progress and Condition*, Blue Book presented to Parliament, 1873, p. 99: 'It is asserted (but the assertion must be taken with reserve) that it is a mistake to suppose that the Hindu religion is not proselytising. Any number of outsiders, so long as they do

The Parsi, too, does not wish for converts to his religion; he is proud of his faith, as of his blood; and though he believes in the final victory of truth and light, though he says to every man, 'Be bright as the sun, pure as the moon,' he himself does very little to drive away spiritual darkness from the face of the earth, by letting the light that is within him shine before the world.

But now let us look at the other cluster of religions—at Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and Christianity. However they may differ from each other in some of their most essential doctrines, this they share in common—they all have faith in themselves, they all have life and vigour, they want to convince, they mean to conquer. From the very earliest dawn of their existence these three religions were missionary: their very founders, or their first apostles, recognised the new duty of spreading the truth, of refuting error, of bringing the whole world to acknowledge the paramount, if not the divine, authority of their doctrines. This is what gives to them all a common expression, and lifts them high above the level of the other religions of the world.

Let us begin with Buddhism. We know, indeed, very little of its origin and earliest growth, for the earliest beginnings of all religions withdraw themselves by necessity from the eye of the historian. But we have something like contemporary evidence of the Great Council, held at Pâṭaliputra, 242 B.C., in which the sacred canon of the Buddhist scriptures

not interfere with established castes, can form a new caste, and call themselves Hindus, and the Brahmans are always ready to receive all who submit to and pay them.' Can this be called proselytising?

was settled, and at the end of which missionaries were chosen and sent forth to preach the new doctrine, not only in India, but far beyond the frontiers of that vast country.[1] We possess inscriptions containing the edicts of the King who was to Buddhism what Constantine was to Christianity, who broke with the traditions of the old religion of the Brahmans, and recognised the doctrines of Buddha as the state religion of India. We possess the description of the Council of Pâtaliputra, which was to India what the Council of Nicæa, 570 years later, was to Europe; and we can still read there[2] the simple story, how the chief Elder who had presided over the Council, an old man, too weak to travel by land, and carried from his hermitage to the Council in a boat —how that man, when the Council was over, began to reflect on the future, and found that the time had come to establish the religion of Buddha in foreign countries. He therefore despatched some of the most eminent priests to Cashmere, Cabul, and farther west, to the colonies founded by the Greeks in Bactria, to Alexandria on the Caucasus, and other cities. He sent others northward to Nepal, and to the inhabited portions of the Himalayan mountains. Another mission proceeded to the Dekhan, to the people of Mysore, to the Mahrattas, perhaps to Goa; nay, even Birma and Ceylon are mentioned as among the earliest missionary stations of Buddhist priests. We still possess accounts of their manner of preaching. When threatened by infuriated crowds, one of those Buddhist missionaries said calmly, 'If the whole world, including the Deva heavens, were to come

[1] *Cf. Mahavanso*, cap. 5. [2] *Cf. Mahavanso*, cap. 12.

and terrify me, they would not be able to create in me fear and terror.' And when he had brought the people to listen, he dismissed them with the simple prayer, 'Do not hereafter give way to anger, as before: do not destroy the crops, for all men love happiness. Show mercy to all living beings, and let men dwell in peace.'

No doubt, the accounts of the successes achieved by those early missionaries are exaggerated, and their fights with snakes and dragons and evil spirits remind us sometimes of the legendary accounts of the achievements of such men as St. Patrick in Ireland, or St. Boniface in Germany. But the fact that missionaries were sent out to convert the world seems beyond the reach of reasonable doubt;[1] and this fact represents to us at that time a new thought —new, not only in the history of India, but in the history of the whole world. The recognition of a duty to preach the truth to every man, woman, and child, was an idea opposed to the deepest instincts of Brahmanism; and when, at the end of the chapter on the first missions, we read the simple words of the old chronicler, 'Who would demur, if the salvation of the world is at stake?' we feel at once that we move in a new world, we see the dawn of a new day, the opening of vaster horizons—we feel, for the first time in the history of the world, the beating of the great heart of humanity.[2]

The Koran breathes a different spirit; it does

[1] In some of the places mentioned by the *Chronicle* as among the earliest stations of Buddhist missions, relics have been discovered containing the names of the very missionaries mentioned by the *Chronicle*. See Koeppen, *Die Religion des Buddha*, p. 188.

[1] Note A, p. 76.

not invite, it rather compels the world to come in. Yet there are passages, particularly in the earlier portions, which show that Mohammed, too, had realised the idea of humanity, and of a religion of humanity; nay, that at first he wished to unite his own religion with that of the Jews and Christians, comprehending all under the common name of Islâm. Islâm meant originally humility or devotion; and all who humbled themselves before God, and were filled with real reverence, were called Moslim. 'The Islâm,' says Mohammed, 'is the true worship of God. When men dispute with you, say, "I am a Moslim." Ask those who have sacred books, and ask the heathen: "Are you a Moslim?" If they are, they are on the right path; but if they turn away, then you have no other task but to deliver the message, to preach to them the Islâm.' [1]

As to our own religion, its very soul is missionary, progressive, world-embracing; it would cease to exist if it ceased to be missionary—if it disregarded the parting words of its Founder: 'Go ye therefore and teach all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost; teaching them to observe all things I have commanded; and, lo, I am with you alway, even unto the end of the world.'

It is this missionary character, peculiar to these three religions, Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and

[1] 'Islâm is the verbal noun, and Moslim the participle of the same root which also yields Salâm, peace, and salim and salym, whole, honest. Islâm means, therefore, to satisfy or pacify by forbearance; it also means simply subjection.' Sprenger, *Mohammad*, i. p. 69; iii. 486.

Christianity, which binds them together, and lifts them to a higher sphere. Their differences, no doubt, are great; on some points they are opposed to each other like day and night. But they could not be what they are, they could not have achieved what they have achieved, unless the spirit of truth and the spirit of love had been alive in the hearts of their founders, their first messengers, and missionaries.

The spirit of truth is the life-spring of all religion, and where it exists it must manifest itself, it must plead, it must persuade, it must convince and convert. Missionary work, however, in the usual sense of the word, is only one manifestation of that spirit; for the same spirit which fills the heart of the missionary with daring abroad gives courage also to the preacher at home, bearing witness to the truth that is within him. The religions which can boast of missionaries who left the old home of their childhood, and parted with parents and friends—never to meet again in this life—who went into the wilderness, willing to spend a life of toil among strangers, ready, if need be, to lay down their life as witnesses to the truth, as martyrs for the glory of God—the same religions are rich also in those honest and intrepid inquirers who, at the bidding of the same spirit of truth, were ready to leave behind them the cherished creed of their childhood, to separate from the friends they loved best, to stand alone among men that shrug their shoulders, and ask, 'What is truth?' and to bear in silence a martyrdom more galling often than death itself. There are men who say that, if they held the whole truth in their hand, they would not open one finger. Such men know

little of the working of the spirit of truth, of the true missionary spirit. As long as there are doubt and darkness and anxiety in the soul of an inquirer, reticence may be his natural attitude. But when once doubt has yielded to certainty, darkness to light, anxiety to joy, the rays of truth will burst forth; and to close our hand or to shut our lips would be as impossible as for the petals of a flower to shut themselves against the summons of the sun of spring.

What is there in this short life that should seal our lips? What should we wait for, if we are not to speak *here* and *now*? There is missionary work at home as much as abroad; there are thousands waiting to listen, if *one* man will but speak the truth, and nothing but the truth; there are thousands starving, because they cannot find that food which is convenient for them.

And even if the spirit of truth might be chained down by fear or prudence, the spirit of love would never yield. Once recognise the common brotherhood of mankind, not as a name or a theory, but as a real bond, as a bond more binding, more lasting than the bonds of family, caste, and race, and the questions, Why should I open my hand? why should I open my heart? why should I speak to my brother? will never be asked again. Is it not far better to speak than to walk through life silent, unknown, unknowing? Has any one of us ever spoken to a friend and opened to him his inmost soul, and been answered with harshness or repelled with scorn? Has any one of us, be he priest or layman, ever listened to the honest questionings of a truth-loving soul without

feeling his own soul filled with love? aye, without feeling humbled by the very honesty of a brother's confession?

If we would but confess, friend to friend, if we would be but honest, man to man, we should not want confessors or confessionals.

If our doubts and difficulties are self-made, if they can be removed by wiser and better men, why not give to our brother the opportunity of helping us? But if our difficulties are not self-made, if they are not due either to ignorance or presumption, is it not even then better for us to know that we are all carrying the same burden, the common burden of humanity, if haply we may find that for the heavy-laden there is but one who can give them rest?

There may be times when silence is gold and speech silver: but there are times also when silence is death, and speech is life—the very life of Pentecost.

How can man be afraid of man? How can we be afraid of those whom we love?

Are the young afraid of the old? But nothing delights the older man more than to see that he is trusted by the young, and that they believe he will tell them the truth.

Are the old afraid of the young? But nothing sustains the young more than to know that they do not stand alone in their troubles, and that in many trials of the soul the father is as helpless as the child.

Are women afraid of men? But men are not wiser in the things appertaining to God than women, and real love of God is theirs far more than ours.

Are men afraid of women? But though women may hide their troubles more carefully, their heart aches as much as ours, when they whisper to themselves, 'Lord, I believe, help thou my unbelief.'

Are the laity afraid of the clergy? But where is the clergyman who would not respect honest doubt more than unquestioning faith?

Are the clergy afraid of the laity? But surely we know, in this place at least, that the clear voice of honesty and humility draws more hearts than the harsh accents of dogmatic assurance or ecclesiastic exclusiveness.

> 'There lives more faith in honest doubt,
> Believe me, than in half the creeds.'

A missionary must know no fear; his heart must overflow with love—love of man, love of truth, love of God; and in this, the highest and truest sense of the word, every Christian is, or ought to be, a missionary.

And now, let us look again at the religions in which the missionary spirit has been at work, and compare them with those in which any attempt to convince others by argument, to save souls, to bear witness to the truth, is treated with pity or scorn. *The former are alive, the latter are dying or dead.*

The religion of Zoroaster—the religion of Cyrus, of Darius and Xerxes—which, but for the battles of Marathon and Salamis, might have become the religion of the civilised world, is now professed by only 100,000 souls[1]—that is, by about a ten-thousandth part of the inhabitants of the world. During

[1] The last Indian census gives 150,000.

the last two centuries their number has steadily decreased from four to one hundred thousand, and another century will probably exhaust what is still left of the worshippers of the Wise Spirit, Ahuramazda.

The Jews are about thirty times the number of the Parsis, and they therefore represent a more appreciable portion of mankind. Though it is not likely that they will ever increase in number, yet such is their physical vigour and their intellectual tenacity, such also their pride of race and their faith in Jehovah, that we can hardly imagine that their patriarchal religion and their ancient customs will soon vanish from the face of the earth.

But though the religion of the Parsis and Jews might justly seem to have paid the penalty of their anti-missionary spirit, how, it will be said, can the same be maintained with regard to the religion of the Brahmans? That religion is still professed by at least 110,000,000 of human souls, and, to judge from the last census, even that enormous number falls much short of the real truth. And yet I do not shrink from saying that their religion is dying or dead. And why? Because it cannot stand the light of day. The worship of Siva, Vishnu, and the other popular deities, is of the same, nay in many cases of a more degraded and savage character than the worship of Jupiter, Apollo, and Minerva; it belongs to a stratum of thought which is long buried beneath our feet: it may live on, like the lion and the tiger, but the mere air of free thought and civilised life will extinguish it. A religion may linger on for a long time, it may be accepted by the large masses of the people, because it is there, and there is nothing

better. But when a religion has ceased to produce defenders of the faith, prophets, champions, martyrs, it has ceased to live, in the true sense of the word; and in that sense the old, orthodox Brahmanism has ceased to live for more than a thousand years.

It is true there are millions of children, women, and men in India who fall down before the stone image of Vishnu, with his four arms, riding on a creature half bird, half man, or sleeping on the serpent; who worship Siva, a monster with three eyes, riding naked on a bull, with a necklace of skulls for his ornament. There are human beings who still believe in a god of war, Kârtikêya, with six faces, riding on a peacock, and holding bow and arrow in his hands; and who invoke a god of success, Ganesa, with four hands and an elephant's head, sitting on a rat. Nay, it is true that, in the broad daylight of the nineteenth century, the figure of the goddess Kali is carried through the streets of her own city, Calcutta,[1] her wild dishevelled hair reaching to her feet, with a necklace of human heads, her tongue protruded from her mouth, her girdle stained with blood. All this is true! But ask any Hindu who can read and write and think, whether these are the gods he believes in, and he will smile at your credulity. How long this living death of national religion in India may last, no one can tell: for our purposes, however, for gaining an idea of the issue of the great religious struggle of the future, that religion, too, is dead and gone.

The three religions which are alive, and between

[1] Lassen, *Indische Alterthumskunde*, vol. iv. p. 635. *Cf. Indian Antiquary*, 1873, p. 370. *Academy*, 1874, p. 61.

which the decisive battle for the dominion of the world will have to be fought, are the three missionary religions, *Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and Christianity.* Though religious statistics are perhaps the most uncertain of all, yet it is well to have a general conception of the forces of our enemies; and it is well to know that, though the number of Christians is double the number of Mohammedans, the Buddhist religion still occupies the first place in the religious census of mankind.[1]

Buddhism rules supreme in Central, Northern, Eastern, and Southern Asia, and it gradually absorbs whatever there is left of aboriginal heathenism in that vast and populous area.

Mohammedanism claims as its own Arabia, Persia, great parts of India, Asia Minor, Turkey, and Egypt; and its greatest conquests by missionary efforts are made among the heathen population of Africa.

Christianity reigns in Europe and America, and it is conquering the native races of Polynesia and Melanesia, while its missionary outposts are scattered all over the world.

Between these three powers, then, the religious battle of the future, the Holy War of mankind, will have to be fought, and is being fought at the present moment, though apparently with little effect. To convert a Mohammedan is difficult; to convert a Buddhist, more difficult still; to convert a Christian, let us hope, well nigh impossible.

What then, it may be asked, is the use of missionaries? Why should we spend millions on foreign missions, when there are children in our cities who

[1] See *Religious Statistics of Buddhism, infra,* p. 223.

are allowed to grow up in ignorance? Why should we deprive ourselves of some of the noblest, boldest, most ardent and devoted spirits and send them into the wilderness, while so many labourers are wanted in the vineyard at home?

It is right to ask these questions; and we ought not to blame those political economists who tell us that every convert costs us 200*l.*, and that at the present rate of progress it would take more than 200,000 years to evangelise the world. There is nothing at all startling in these figures. Every child born in Europe is as much a heathen as the child of a Melanesian cannibal; and it costs us more than 200*l.* to turn a child into a Christian man. The other calculation is totally erroneous; for an intellectual harvest must not be calculated by adding simply grain to grain, but by counting each grain as a living seed, that will bring forth fruit a hundred and a thousand fold.

If we want to know what work there is for the missionary to do, what results we may expect from it, we must distinguish between two kinds of work: the one is *parental*, the other *controversial*. Among uncivilised races the work of the missionary is the work of a parent. Whether his pupils are young in years or old, he has to treat them with a parent's love, to teach them with a parent's authority; he has to win them, not to argue with them. I know this kind of missionary work is often despised; it is called mere religious kidnapping; and it is said that missionary success obtained by such means proves nothing for the truth of Christianity; that the child handed over to a Mohammedan would grow up a Moham-

medan, as much as a child taken by a Christian missionary becomes a Christian. All this is true; missionary success obtained by such means proves nothing for the truth of our Creeds: but it proves what is far more important—it proves Christian love. Read only the 'Life of Patteson,' the Bishop of Melanesia; follow him in his vessel, sailing from island to island, begging for children, carrying them off as a mother her new-born child, nursing them, washing and combing them, clothing them, feeding them, teaching them in his Episcopal Palace, in which he himself is everything, nurse, and housemaid, and cook, schoolmaster, physician, and bishop —read there, how that man who tore himself away from his aged father, from his friends, from his favourite studies and pursuits, had the most loving of hearts for these children, how indignantly he repelled for them the name of savages, how he trusted them, respected them, honoured them, and when they were formed and stablished, took them back to their island homes, there to be a leaven for future ages. Yes, read the life, the work, the death of that man—a death in very truth, a ransom for the sins of others—and then say whether you would like to suppress a profession that can call forth such self-denial, such heroism, such sanctity, such love. It has been my privilege to have known some of the finest and noblest spirits which England has produced during this century, but there is none to whose memory I look up with greater reverence, none by whose friendship I feel more deeply humbled than by that of that true saint, that true martyr, that truly parental missionary.

The work of the parental missionary is clear, and its success undeniable, not only in Polynesia and Melanesia, but in many parts of India—think only of the bright light of Tinnevelly—in Africa, in China, in America, in Syria, in Turkey, aye, in the very heart of London.

The case is different with the controversial missionary, who has to attack the faith of men brought up in other religions, in religions which contain much truth, though mixed up with much error. Here the difficulties are immense, the results very discouraging. Nor need we wonder at this. We know, each of us, but too well, how little argument avails in theological discussion; how often it produces the very opposite result of what we expected; confirming rather than shaking opinions no less erroneous, no less indefensible, than many articles of the Mohammedan or Buddhist faith.

And even when argument proves successful, when it forces a verdict from an unwilling judge, how often has the result been disappointing; because in tearing up the rotten stem on which the tree rested, the tenderest fibres of the tree itself have been injured, its roots unsettled, its life destroyed.

We have little ground to expect that these controversial weapons will carry the day in the struggle between the three great religions of the world.

But there is a third kind of missionary activity, which has produced the most important results, and through which alone, I believe, the final victory will be gained. Whenever two religions are brought into contact, when members of each live together in peace, abstaining from all direct attempts at conver-

sion, whether by force or by argument, though conscious all the time of the fact that they and their religion are on their trial, that they are being watched, that they are responsible for all they say and do—the effect has always been the greatest blessing to both. It calls out all the best elements in each, and at the same time keeps under all that is felt to be of doubtful value, of uncertain truth. Whenever this has happened in the history of the world, it has generally led either to the reform of both systems, or to the foundation of a new religion.

When after the conquest of India the violent measures for the conversion of the Hindus to Mohammedanism had ceased, and Mohammedans and Brahmans lived together in the enjoyment of perfect equality, the result was a purified Mohammedanism, and a purified Brahmanism.[1] The worshippers of Vishnu, Siva, and other deities, became ashamed of these mythological gods, and were led to admit that there was, either over and above these individual deities, or instead of them, a higher divine power (the Para-Brahma), the true source of all being, the only and almighty ruler of the world. That religious movement assumed its most important development at the beginning of the twelfth century, when Râmânuja founded the reformed sect of the worshippers of Vishnu; and again, in the fourteenth century, when his fifth successor, Râmânanda, imparted a still more liberal character to that powerful sect. Not only did he abolish many of the restrictions of caste, many of the minute ceremonial observances in

[1] Lassen, *Indische Alterthumskunde*, vol. iv. p. 606; Wilson, *Asiatic Researches*, xvi. p. 21.

eating, drinking, and bathing, but he replaced the classical Sanskrit—which was unintelligible to the large masses of the people—by the living vernaculars, in which he preached a purer worship of God.

The most remarkable man of that time was a weaver, the pupil of Râmânanda, known by the name of Kabir.[1] He, indeed, deserved the name which the members of the reformed sect claimed for themselves, Avadhûta, which means one who has shaken off the dust of superstition. He broke entirely with the popular mythology and the customs of the ceremonial law, and addressed himself alike to Hindu and Mohammedan. According to him, there is but one God, the creator of the world, without beginning and end, of inconceivable purity, and irresistible strength. The pure man is the image of God, and after death attains community with God. The commandments of Kabir are few: Not to injure anything that has life, for life is of God; to speak the truth; to keep aloof from the world; to obey the teacher. His poetry is most beautiful, hardly surpassed in any other language.

Still more important in the history of India was the reform of Nânak (1469–1538), the founder of the Sikh religion. He, too, worked entirely in the spirit of Kabir. Both laboured to persuade the Hindus and Mohammedans that the truly essential parts of their creeds were the same, that they ought to discard the varieties of practical detail, and the corruptions of their teachers, for the worship of the *One Only Supreme*, whether he was termed Allah or Vishnu.

[1] Lived under Sikander Shâh Lodi, 1488–1512; see Trumpp, *Adigranth*.

The effect of these religious reforms has been highly beneficial; it has cut into the very roots of idolatry, and has spread throughout India an intelligent and spiritual worship, which may at any time develop into a higher national creed.

The same effect which Mohammedanism produced on Hinduism is now being produced, in a much higher degree, on the religious mind of India by the mere presence of Christianity. That silent influence began to tell many years ago, even at a time when no missionaries were allowed within the territory of the old East India Company. Its first representative was Ram Mohun Roy, born just one hundred years ago, in 1772, who died at Bristol in 1833, the founder of the Brahma-Samâj. A man so highly cultivated and so highly religious as he was could not but feel humiliated at the spectacle which the popular religion of his country presented to his English friends. He drew their attention to the fact that there was a purer religion to be found in the old sacred writings of his people, the Vedas. He went so far as to claim for the Vedas a divine origin, and to attempt the foundation of a reformed faith on their authority. In this attempt he failed.

No doubt the Vedas and other works of the ancient poets and prophets of India contain treasures of truth which ought never to be forgotten, least of all by the sons of India. The late good Bishop Cotton, in his address to the students of a missionary institution at Calcutta, advised them to use a certain hymn of the Rig-Veda in their daily prayers.[1] Nowhere do we

[1] See *Brahmic Questions of the Day*, 1869, p. 16.

find stronger arguments against idolatry, nowhere has the unity of the Deity been upheld more strenuously against the errors of polytheism than by some of the ancient sages of India. Even in the oldest of their sacred books, the Rig-Veda, composed three or four thousand years ago—where we find hymns addressed to the different deities of the sky, the air, the earth, the rivers—the protest of the human heart against many gods breaks forth from time to time with no uncertain sound. One poet, after he has asked to whom sacrifice is due, answers, 'to Him who is God above all gods.'[1] Another poet, after enumerating the names of many deities, affirms, without hesitation, that 'these are all but names of Him who is One.' And even when single deities are invoked, it is not difficult to see that, in the mind of the poet, each one of the names is meant to express the highest conception of deity of which the human mind was *then* capable. The god of the sky is called Father and Mother and Friend; he is the Creator, the Upholder of the Universe; he rewards virtue and punishes sin; he listens to the prayers of those who love him.

But granting all this, we may well understand why an attempt to claim for these books a divine origin, and thus to make them an artificial foundation for a new religion, failed. The successor of Ram Mohun Roy, the present head of the Brahma-Samâj, the wise and excellent Debendra Nâth Tagore, was for a time even more decided in holding to the Vedas as the sole foundation of the new faith. But this could not last.

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, by M. M. (2nd ed.), p. 569.

As soon as the true character of the Vedas,[1] which but few people in India can understand, became known, partly through the efforts of native, partly of European scholars, the Indian reformers relinquished the claim of divine inspiration in favour of their Vedas, and were satisfied with a selection of passages from the works of the ancient sages of India, to express and embody the creed which the members of the Brahma-Samâj hold in common.[2]

The work which these religious reformers have been doing in India is excellent, and those only who know what it is, in religious matters, to break with the past, to forsake the established custom of a nation, to oppose the rush of public opinion, to brave adverse criticism, to submit to social persecution, can form any idea of what those men have suffered in bearing witness to the truth that was within them.

They could not reckon on any sympathy on the part of Christian missionaries; nor did their work attract much attention in Europe till very lately, when a schism broke out in the Brahma-Samâj between the old conservative party and a new party, led by Keshub Chunder Sen. The former, though willing to surrender all that was clearly idolatrous in the ancient religion and customs of India, wished to retain all that might safely be retained: it did not wish to see the religion of India denationalised. The other party, inspired and led by Keshub Chunder Sen, went further in their zeal for religious purity. All that smacked of the old leaven was to be sur-

[1] *The Adi Brahma-Samâj, its Views and Principles*, Calcutta, 1870, p. 10.

[2] *A Brief History of the Calcutta Brahma-Samâj*, 1868, p. 15.

rendered: not only caste, but even that sacred cord —the religious riband which makes and marks the Brahman, which is to remind him at every moment of his life, and whatever work he may be engaged in, of his God, of his ancestors, and of his children— even that was to be abandoned; and instead of founding their creed exclusively on the utterances of the ancient sages of their own country, all that was best in the sacred books of the whole world was to be selected and formed into a new sacred Code.[1]

The schism between these two parties is deeply to be deplored; but it is nevertheless a sign of life. It augurs success rather than failure for the future. It is the same schism which St. Paul had to heal in the Church of Corinth, and he healed it with the words, so often misunderstood,' Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.'

In the eyes of our missionaries this religious reform in India has not found much favour: nor need we wonder at this. Their object is to transplant, if possible, Christianity in its full integrity from England to India, as we might wish to transplant a full-grown tree. They do not deny the moral worth, the noble aspirations, the self-sacrificing zeal of these native reformers; but they fear that all this will but increase their dangerous influence, and retard the progress of Christianity, by drawing some of the best minds of India, that might have been gained over to our religion, into a different current. They feel towards Keshub Chunder Sen [2] as Athanasius might have felt towards Ulfilas, the Arian Bishop of the

[1] See Note B, p. 78. [2] See Note C, p. 82.

Goths: and yet what would have become of Christianity in Europe but for those Gothic races, but for those Arian heretics, who were considered more dangerous than downright pagans?

If we think of the future of India, and of the influence which that country has always exercised on the East, the movement of religious reform which is now going on appears to my mind the most momentous in this momentous century. If our missionaries feel constrained to repudiate it as their own work, history will be more just to them than they themselves.[1] And if not as the work of Christian missionaries, it will be recognised hereafter as the work of those missionary Christians who have lived in India as examples of a true Christian life, who have approached the natives in a truly missionary spirit, in the spirit of truth and in the spirit of love; whose bright presence has thawed the ice, and brought out beneath it the old soil, ready to blossom into new life. These Indian puritans are not against us; for all the highest purposes of life they are with us, and we, I trust, with them. What would the early Christians have said to men, outside the pale of Christianity, who spoke of Christ and his

[1] The *Indian Mirror* (Sept. 10, 1869) constantly treats of missionary efforts of various kinds in a spirit which is not only friendly, but even desirous of reciprocal sympathy; and hopeful that whatever differences may exist between them (the missionaries) and the Brahmos, the two parties will heartily combine as brethren to exterminate idolatry, and promote true morality in India.

Many of our own ministers and leading men, says the *Indian Mirror*, are recruited from missionary schools, which, by affording religious education, prove more favourable to the growth and spread of Brahmoism than Government schools with Comte and Secularism. (*Indian Theism*, by S. D. Collet, 1870, p. 22).

doctrine as some of these Indian reformers? Would they have said to them, 'Unless you speak our language and think our thoughts, unless you accept our Creed and sign our Articles, we can have nothing in common with you.'

O that Christians, and particularly missionaries, would lay to heart the words of a missionary Bishop![1] 'I have for years thought,' writes Bishop Patteson, 'that we seek in our Missions a great deal too much to make *English* Christians. . . . Evidently the heathen man is not treated fairly, if we encumber our message with unnecessary requirements. The ancient Church had its "selection of fundamentals." . . . Anyone can see what mistakes we have made in India. . . . Few men think themselves into the state of the Eastern mind. . . . We seek to denationalise these races as far as I can see; whereas we ought surely to change as little as possible—only what is clearly incompatible with the simplest form of Christian teaching and practice. I do not mean that we are to compromise truth . . . but do we not overlay it a good deal with human traditions!'

If we had many such missionaries as Bishop Patteson and Bishop Cotton, if Christianity were not only preached, but lived in that spirit, it would then prove itself what it is—the religion of humanity at large, large enough itself to take in all shades and diversities of character and race.

And more than that—if this true missionary spirit, this spirit of truth and love, of forbearance, of trust, of toleration, of humility, were once to kindle

[1] *Life of John Coleridge Patteson*, by C. M. Yonge, ii. p. 167.

the hearts of all those chivalrous ambassadors of Christ, the message of the Gospel which they have to deliver would then become as great a blessing to the giver as to the receiver. Even now, missionary work unites, both at home and abroad, those who are widely separated by the barriers of theological sects.[1]

It might do so far more still. When we stand before a common enemy, we soon forget our own small feuds. But why? Often, I fear, from motives of prudence only and selfishness. Can we not, then, if we stand in spirit before a common friend—can we not, before the face of God, forget our small

[1] 'The large body of European and American missionaries settled in India bring their various moral influences to bear upon the country with the greater force, because they act together with a compactness which is but little understood. Though belonging to various denominations of Christians, yet from the nature of their work, their isolated position, and their long experience, they have been led to think rather of the numerous questions on which they agree than of those on which they differ, and they co-operate heartily together. Localities are divided among them by friendly arrangements, and, with a few exceptions, it is a fixed rule among them that they will not interfere with each other's converts and each other's spheres of duty. School-books, translations of the Scriptures and religious works, prepared by various missions, are used in common; and help and improvements secured by one mission are freely placed at the command of all. The large body of missionaries resident in each of the presidency towns form missionary conferences, hold periodic meetings, and act together on public matters. They have frequently addressed the Indian Government on important social questions involving the welfare of the native community, and have suggested valuable improvements in existing laws. During the past twenty years, on five occasions, general conferences have been held for mutual consultation respecting their missionary work; and in January last, at the latest of these gatherings, at Allahabad, 121 missionaries met together belonging to twenty different societies, and including several men of long experience who have been twenty years in India.'—*India, Progress and Condition*, 1873, p. 124.

feuds, for very shame? If missionaries admit to their fold converts who can hardly understand the equivocal abstractions of our creeds and formulas, is it necessary to exclude those who understand them but too well to submit the wings of their free spirit to such galling chains? When we try to think of the majesty of God, what are all those formulas but the stammerings of children, which only a loving father can interpret and understand! The fundamentals of our religion are not in these poor Creeds; true Christianity lives, not in our belief, but in our love—*in our love of God, and in our love of man, founded on our love of God.*

That is the whole Law and the Prophets; that is the religion to be preached to the whole world; that is the Gospel which will conquer all other religions —even Buddhism and Mohammedanism—which will win the hearts of all men.

There can never be too much love, though there may be too much faith—particularly when it leads to the requirement of exactly the same measure of faith in others. Let those who wish for the true success of missionary work learn to throw in of the abundance of their faith; let them learn to demand less from others than from themselves. That is the best offering, the most valuable contribution which they can make to-day to the missionary cause.

Let missionaries preach the Gospel again as it was preached when it began the conquest of the Roman Empire and the Gothic nations; when it had to struggle with powers and principalities, with time-honoured religions and triumphant philosophies, with pride of civilisation and savagery of life—and

yet came out victorious. At that time conversion was not a question to be settled by the acceptance or rejection of certain formulas or articles; a simple prayer was often enough: 'God be merciful to me a sinner.'

There is one kind of faith that revels in words, there is another that can hardly find utterance: the former is like riches that come to us by inheritance, the latter is like the daily bread which each of us has to win in the sweat of his brow. We cannot expect the former from new converts; we ought not to expect it or to exact it, for fear that it might lead to hypocrisy or superstition. The mere believing of miracles, the mere repeating of formulas requires no effort in converts brought up to believe in the Purâṇas of the Brahmans or the Buddhist Gâtakas. They find it much easier to accept a legend than to love God, to repeat a creed than to forgive their enemies. In this respect they are exactly like ourselves. Let missionaries remember that the Christian faith at home is no longer what it was, and that it is impossible to have one creed to preach abroad, another to preach at home. Much that was formerly considered as essential is now neglected; much that was formerly neglected is now considered as essential. I think of the laity more than of the clergy: but what would the clergy be without the laity? There are many of our best men, men of the greatest power and influence in literature, science, art, politics, ay, even in the Church itself, who are no longer Christian in the old sense of the word. Some imagine they have ceased to be Christians altogether, because they feel that they cannot believe as much

as others profess to believe. We cannot afford to lose these men, nor shall we lose them if we learn to be satisfied with what satisfied Christ and the Apostles, with what satisfies many a hard-working missionary. If Christianity is to retain its hold on Europe and America, if it is to conquer in the Holy War of the future, it must throw off its heavy armour, the helmet of brass and the coat of mail, and face the world like David, with his staff, his stones, and his sling. We want less of creeds, but more of trust; less of ceremony, but more of work; less of solemnity, but more of genial honesty; less of doctrine, but more of love. There is a faith, as small as a grain of mustard-seed, but that grain alone can move mountains, and more than that, it can move hearts. Whatever the world may say of us, of us of little faith, let us remember that there was one who accepted the offering of the poor widow. She threw in but two mites, but that was all she had, even all her living.

NOTES.

NOTE A.

Mahâdayassâpi *g*inassa ka*ddh*ana*m*,
Vihâya patta*m* amata*m* sukham pi te
Kari*m*su lokassa hita*m* tahi*m* tahi*m*,
Bhaveyya ko lokahite pamâdavâ ?

The first line is elliptical.

(Imitating) the resignation of the all-merciful Conqueror,
They also, resigning the deathless bliss within their reach,
Worked the welfare of mankind in various lands.
What man is there who would be remiss in doing good to mankind ?

Hardy, in his 'Manual of Buddhism' (p. 187), relates how fifty-four princes and a thousand fire-worshippers became the disciples of Buddha. 'Whilst Buddha remained at Isipatana, Yasa, the son of Sujatá, who had been brought up in all delicacy, one night went secretly to him, was received with affection, became a priest, and entered the first path. The father on discovering that he had fled, was disconsolate; but Buddha delivered to him a discourse, by which he became a rahat. The fifty-four companions of Yasa went to the monastery to induce him to return and play with them as usual; but when they saw him, they were so struck with his manner and appearance, that they also resolved on becoming priests. When they went to

Buddha, they were admitted, by the power of irdhi received the pirikara requisites of the priesthood, and became rahats. Buddha had now sixty disciples who were rahats, and he commanded them to go by different ways, and proclaim to all that a supreme Buddha had appeared in the world.'

Mr. Childers has kindly sent me the following extract from Fausböll's 'Dhammapada' (p. 119), where the same story is told :—

. . . Yasakulaputtassa upanissayasampattim disvâ tam rattibhâge nibbiggitvâ geham pahâya nikkhantam 'ehi Yasâti' pakkositvâ, tasmiñ ñeva rattibhâge sotâpattiphalam punadivase arahattam pâpesi. Apare pi tassa sahâyake katupannâsagane ehibhikkhupabbaggâya pabbâgetvâ arahattam pâpesi. Evam loke ekasatthiyâ arahantesu gâtesu vut thavasso pavâretvâ 'karatha bhikkhave kârikan' ti satthim bhikkhû disâsu pesetvâ. . . . 'Seeing that the young nobleman Yasa was ripe for conversion, in the night, when weary with the vanities of the world he had left his home and embraced the ascetic life, he called him, saying, "Follow me, Yasa," and that very night he caused him to obtain the fruition of the first path, and on the following day arhatship. And fifty-four other persons, who were friends of Yasa's, he ordained with the formula, "Follow me, priest," and caused them to attain arhatship. Thus when there were sixty-one arhats in the world, having passed the period of seclusion during the rains and resumed active duties, he sent forth the sixty priests in all directions, saying, "Go forth, priests, on your rounds (or travels)."'

Another passage, too, showing Buddha's desire to see his doctrine preached in the whole world, was pointed out to me by Mr. Childers from the 'Mahâparinibbâna Sutta,' which has since been published by this indefatigable scholar in the 'Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society,' vol. vii. p 77:

'Three months before his death, when Gautama's health and strength is fast failing, he is tempted by Mâra, who

comes to him and urges him to bring his life and mission at once to a close by attaining Nirvâ*n*a (dying). Buddha replies that he will not die until his disciples are perfect on all points, and able to maintain the Truth with power against all unbelievers. Mâra replies that this is already the case, whereupon Buddha uses these striking words:—Na tâvâha*m* pâpima parinibbâyissâmi yâva me ima*m* brahma-*k*ariya*m* na iddha*ñ* *k*' eva bhavissati phîta*ñ* *k*a vitthârika*m* bâhuja*ññam* puthubhûta*m*, yâvad eva manussehi suppakâsitan ti. "O wicked one, I will not die until this my holy religion thrives and prospers, until it is widely spread, known to many peoples, and grown great, until it is completely published among men." Mâra again asserts that this is already the case, and Buddha replies, "Strive no more, wicked one, the death of the Tathâgata is at hand: at the end of three months from this time, the Tathâgata will attain Nirvâ*n*a." '

NOTE B.

The Schism in the Brahma-Samâj.[1]

The present position of the two parties in the Brahma-Samâj is well described by Rajnarain Bose (the 'Adi Brahmo Samaj,' Calcutta, 1873, p. 11). 'The particular opinions above referred to can be divided into two comprehensive classes—conservative and progressive. The conservative Brahmos are those who are unwilling to push religious and social reformation to any great extreme. They are of opinion that reformation should be gradual, the law of gradual progress being universally prevalent in nature.

[1] Brahma-Samâj, the Church of Brahma, is the general title. When the schism took place, the original Samâj was called Adi Brahma-Samâj, *i.e.* the First Church of Brahma, while the progressive party under Keshub Chunder Sen was distinguished by the name of the Brahma-Samâj of India. The vowels *u* and *o* are often the same in Bengali, and are sometimes used for *a*.

They also say that the principle of Brahmic harmony requires a harmonious discharge of all our duties, and that, as it is a duty to take a part in reformation, so there are other duties to perform—namely, those towards parents and society—and that we should harmonise all these duties as much as we can. However unsatisfactory such arguments may appear to a progressive Brahmo, they are such as could not be slighted at first sight. They are certainly such as to make the conservative Brahmo think sincerely that he is justified in not pushing religious and social reformation to any great extreme. The progressive Brahmo cannot, therefore, call him a hypocrite. A union of both the conservative and the progressive elements in the Brahmo Church is necessary for its stability. The conservative element will prevent the progressive from spoiling the cause of reformation by taking premature and abortive measures for advancing that cause; the progressive element will prevent the conservative from proving a stolid obstruction to it. The conservative element will serve as a link between the progressive element and the orthodox community, and prevent the progressive Brahmo from being completely estranged from that community, as the native Christians are; while the progressive element will prevent the conservative from remaining inert and being absorbed by the orthodox community. The common interests of Brahmo Dharma should lead both classes to respect and be on amicable terms with each other. It is true the progressive of the present half century will prove the conservative of the next; but there could never come a time when the two classes would cease to exist in the bosom of the Church. She should, like a wise mother, make them live in peace with each other, and work harmoniously together for her benefit.

'As idolatry is intimately interwoven with our social fabric, conservative Brahmos, though discarding it in other respects, find it very difficult to do so on the occasion of

such very important domestic ceremonies as marriage, shradh (ancestral sacrifices), and upanayana (spiritual apprenticing); but they should consider that Brahmoism is not so imperative on any other point as on the renunciation of idolatry. It can allow conservatism in other respects, but not on the point of idolatry. It can consider a man a Brahmo, if he be conservative in other respects than idolatry; but it can never consider an idolater to be a Brahmo. The conservative Brahmo can do one thing—that is, observe the old ritual, leaving out only the idolatrous portion of it, if he do not choose to follow the positive Brahmo ritual laid down in the "Anushthâna Paddhati." Liberty should be given by the progressive Brahmo to the conservative Brahmo in judging of the idolatrous character of the portions of the old ritual rejected by him. If a progressive Brahmo requires a conservative one to reject those portions which the former considers to be idolatrous, but the latter does not, he denies liberty of conscience to a fellow-Brahmo.

'The Adi Brahmo-Samâj is the national Hindu Theistic Church, whose principles of Church reformation we have been describing above. Its demeanour towards the old religion of the country is friendly, but corrective and reformative. It is this circumstance which pre-eminently distinguishes it from the Brahmo-Samâj of India, whose attitude to that religion is antagonistic and offensive. The mission of the Adi Samâj is to fulfil the old religion, and not to destroy it. The attitude of the Adi Samâj to the old religion is friendly, but it is not at the same time opposed to progress. It is a mistake to call it a conservative Church. It is rather a conservative-progressive Church, or, more correctly, simply a Church or religious body, leaving matters of social reformation to the judgments of individual members or bodies of such members. It contains both progressive and conservative members. As the ultra-progressive Brahmos, who wanted to eliminate the conservative element

from it, were obliged to secede from it, so if a high conservative party arise in its bosom which would attempt to do violence to the progressive element and convert the Church into a partly conservative one, that party also would be obliged to secede from it. Only men who can be tolerant of each other's opinions, and can respect each other's earnest convictions, progressive and conservative, can remain its members.'

The strong national feeling of the Indian reformers finds expression in the following passage from 'Brahmic Questions,' p. 9:—

'A Samâj is accessible to all. The minds of the majority of our countrymen are not deeply saturated with Christian sentiments. What would they think of a Brahmo minister who would quote on the Vedi (altar) sayings from the Bible? Would they not from that time conceive an intolerable hatred towards Brahmoism and everything Brahmo? If quoting a sentence from the Bible or Koran offend our countrymen, we shall not do so. Truth is as catholic when taken from the Śâstras as from the Koran or the Bible. True liberality consists, not in quoting texts from the religious Scriptures of other nations, but in bringing up, as we advance, the rear who are grovelling in ignorance and superstition. We certainly do not act against the dictates of conscience, if we quote texts from the Hindu Śâstras only, and not from all the religious Scriptures of all the countries on the face of the globe. Moreover, there is not a single saying in the Scriptures of other nations which has not its counterpart in the Śâstras.'

And again in 'The Adi Brahma-Samâj, its Views and Principles,' p. 1:—

'The members of the Adi Samâj, aiming to diffuse the truths of Theism among their own nation, the Hindus, have naturally adopted a Hindu mode of propagation, just as an Arab Theist would adopt an Arabian mode of propagation, and a Chinese Theist a Chinese one. Such dif-

ferences in the aspect of Theism in different countries must naturally arise from the usual course of things, but they are adventitious, not essential, national, not sectarian. Although Brahmoism is a universal religion, it is impossible to communicate a universal form to it. It must wear a particular form in a particular country. A so-called universal form would make it appear grotesque and ridiculous to the nation or religious denomination among whom it is intended to be propagated, and would not command their veneration. In conformity with such views, the Adi Samâj has adopted a Hindu form to propagate Theism among Hindus. It has therefore retained many innocent Hindu usages and customs, and has adopted a form of divine service containing passages extracted from the Hindu Śâstras only, a book of Theistic texts containing selections from those sacred books only, and a ritual containing as much of the ancient form as could be kept consistently with the dictates of conscience.'

NOTE C.

Extracts from Keshub Chunder Sen's Lecture on Christ and Christianity, 1870.

'Why have I cherished respect and reverence for Christ? . . Why is it that, though I do not take the name of "Christian," I still persevere in offering my hearty thanksgivings to Jesus Christ? There must be something in the life and death of Christ—there must be something in his great gospel which tends to bring comfort and light and strength to a heart heavy-laden with iniquity and wickedness. . . . I studied Christ ethically, nay spiritually—and I studied the Bible also in the same spirit, and I must acknowledge candidly and sincerely that I owe a great deal to Christ and to the gospel of Christ. . . .

'My first inquiry was, What is the creed taught in the Bible? . . . Must I go through all the dogmas and doctrines which constitute Christianity in the eye of the various sects, or is there something simple which I can at once grasp and turn to account?

'I found Christ spoke one language and Christianity another. I went to him prepared to hear what he had to say, and was immensely gratified when he told me: "Love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, with all thy mind, with all thy soul, and with all thy strength, and love thy neighbour as thyself;" and then he added, "This is the whole law and the prophets"—in other words, the whole philosophy, theology, and ethics of the law and the prophets are concentrated in these two great doctrines of love to God and love to man; and then elsewhere he said, "This do and ye shall inherit everlasting life." . . . If we love God and love man we become Christ-like, and so attain everlasting life.

'Christ never demanded from me worship or adoration that is due to God, the Creator of the Universe. . . . He places himself before me as the spirit I must imbibe in order to approach the Divine Father, as the great Teacher and guide who will lead me to God.

'There are some persons who believe that if we pass through the ceremony of baptism and sacrament, we shall be accepted by God; but if you accept baptism as an outward rite, you cannot thereby render your life acceptable to God, for Christ wants something internal, a complete conversion of the heart, a giving up the yoke of mammon and accepting the yoke of religion, and truth, and God. He wants us to baptize our hearts, not with cold water, but with the fire of religious and spiritual enthusiasm; he calls upon us not to go through any outward rite, but to make baptism a ceremony of the heart, a spiritual enkindling of all our energies, of all our loftiest and most heavenly aspi-

rations and activities. That is true baptism. So with regard to the doctrine of the Sacrament. There are many who eat the bread and drink the wine at the Sacramental table, and go through the ceremony in the most pious and fervent spirit; but, after all, what does the real Sacrament mean. If men simply adopt it as a tribute of respect and honour to Christ, shall he be satisfied? Shall they themselves be satisfied? Can we look upon them as Christians simply because they have gone through this rite regularly for twenty or fifty years of their lives? I think not. Christ demands of us absolute sanctification and purification of the heart. In this matter, also, I see Christ on one side, and Christian sects on the other.

'What is that bread which Christ asked his disciples to eat? what that wine which he asked them to taste? Any man who has simple intelligence in him would at once come to the conclusion that all this was metaphorical, and highly and eminently spiritual. Now, are you prepared to accept Christ simply as an outward Christ, an outward teacher, an external atonement and propitiation, or will you prove true to Christ by accepting his solemn injunctions in their spiritual importance and weight? He distinctly says, every follower of his must eat his flesh and drink his blood. If we eat, bread is converted into strength and health, and becomes the means of prolonging our life; so, spiritually, if we take truth into our heart, if we put Christ into the soul, we assimilate the spirit of Christ to our spiritual being, and then we find Christ incorporated into our existence and converted into spiritual strength, and health, and joy, and blessedness. Christ wants something that will amount to self-sacrifice, a casting away of the old man and a new growth in the heart. I thus draw a line of demarcation between the visible and outward Christ and the invisible and inward Christ, between bodily Christ and spiritual Christ, between the Christ of images and pictures and the Christ that grows in the heart, between dead Christ

and living Christ, between Christ that lived and that was and Christ that does live and that is. . . .

'To be a Christian, then, is to be Christ-like. Christianity means becoming like Christ, not acceptance of Christ as a proposition or as an outward representation, but spiritual conformity with the life and character of Christ. And what is Christ? By Christ I understand one who said, "Thy will be done;" and when I talk of Christ, I talk of that spirit of loyalty to God, that spirit of absolute determinedness and preparedness to say at all times and in all circumstances, "Thy will be done, not mine." . . .

'This prayer about forgiving an enemy, and loving an enemy, this transcendental doctrine of love of man, is really sweet to me, and when I think of that blessed Man of God crucified on the cross, and uttering those blessed words, "Father, forgive them, they know not what they do;" oh! I feel that I must love that being, I feel that there is something within me which is touched by these sweet and heavenly utterances, I feel that I must love Christ, let Christians say what they like against me; that Christ I must love, for he preached love for an enemy. . . .

'When every individual man becomes Christian in spirit —repudiate the name, if you like—when every individual man becomes as prayerful as Christ was, as loving and forgiving towards enemies as Christ was, as self-sacrificing as Christ was, then these little units, these little individualities, will coalesce and combine together by the natural affinity of their hearts; and these new creatures, reformed, regenerated, in the child-like and Christ-like spirit of devotion and faith, will feel drawn towards each other, and they shall constitute a real Christian Church, a real Christian nation. Allow me, friends, to say, England is not yet a Christian nation.'

EXTRACTS FROM A CATECHISM ISSUED BY A MEMBER OF THE ADI BRAHMO-SAMÂJ.

Q. Who is the deity of the Brahmos?

A. The One True God, one only without a second, whom all Hindu *Sâstras* proclaim.

Q. What is the divine worship of the Brahmos?

A. Loving God, and doing the works He loveth.

Q. What is the temple of the Brahmos?

A. The pure heart.

Q. What are the ceremonial observances of the Brahmos?

A. Good works.

Q. What is the sacrifice of the Brahmos?

A. Renunciation of selfishness.

Q. What are the austerities of the Brahmos?

A. Not committing sin. The Mahábhárata says, He who does not commit sin in mind, speech, action, or understanding, performs austerities; not he who drieth up his body.

Q. What is the place of pilgrimage of the Brahmos?

A. The company of the good.

Q. What is the Veda of the Brahmos?

A. Divine knowledge. It is superior to all Vedas. The Veda itself says: 'The inferior knowledge is the Rig Veda, the Yajur Veda, the Sama Veda, the Atharva Veda, etc.; the superior knowledge is that which treats of God.

Q. What is the most sacred formula of the Brahmos?

A. Be good and do good.

Q. Who is the true Brahman?

A. He who knows Brahma. The *Bṛihadâraṇyaka*-Upanishad says: He who departs from this world knowing God, is a Brahman. (See 'Brahmic Questions of the Day,' 1869.)

XIII.

ON THE

VITALITY OF BRAHMANISM.

THE delivery of a lecture on Missions in Westminster Abbey by a layman, and that layman a German, caused great excitement at the time. While some persons of great experience and authority in Church and State expressed their full approval of the bold step which the Dean of Westminster had taken, and while some of the most devoted missionaries conveyed to me their hearty thanks for what I had said in my lecture, others could not find terms sufficiently violent to vent their displeasure against the Dean, and to proclaim their horror at the heretical opinions embodied in my address. I was publicly threatened with legal proceedings, and an eminent lawyer informed me in the 'Times' of the exact length of imprisonment I should have to undergo.

I did not reply. I had lived long enough in England to know that no good cause can ever be served by a breach of the law, and neither the Dean nor I myself would have acted as we did, unless it had been ascertained beforehand by the highest legal authorities that, with the sanction of the Dean, there was nothing illegal in a layman delivering such a lecture within the precincts of his Abbey. As to the opinions which I expressed on that occasion, I had

expressed them before in my published 'Lectures on the Science of Religion.' Whether they are orthodox or heretical, others are more competent to determine than I am. I simply hold them to be true, and at my time of life, mere contradictions, abuse, or even threats are not likely to keep me from expressing opinions which, whether rightly or wrongly, seem to me founded in truth.

But while I refrained from replying to mere outbursts of anger, I gladly avail myself of the opportunity offered by an article published in the 'Fortnightly Review' (July 1874) by Mr. Lyall, a highly distinguished Indian civilian, in order to explain more fully some of the views expressed in my lecture which seemed liable to misapprehension. Unfortunately the writer of the article 'On Missionary Religions' had not the whole of my lecture before him when writing his criticisms, but had to form his opinion of it from a condensed report which appeared in the 'Times' of December 5, 1873. The limits of a lecture are in themselves very narrow, and when so large a subject as that of which I had to treat in Westminster Abbey had to be condensed within sixty minutes, not only those who wish to misunderstand, but those also who try to judge fairly, may discover in what has been said, or what has not been said, a very different meaning from that which the lecturer wished to convey. And if a closely packed lecture is compressed once more into one column of the 'Times,' it is hardly possible to avoid what has happened in this case. Mr. Lyall has blamed me for not quoting facts or statements which, as he will have seen by this time, I had quoted in my lecture. I am reminded by him, for in-

stance, of the remarks made by Sir George Campbell in his Report upon the Government of Bengal in 1871–72, when he wrote, 'It is a great mistake to suppose that the Hindu religion is not proselytising; the system of castes gives room for the introduction of any number of outsiders; so long as people do not interfere with existing castes, they may form a new caste and call themselves Hindus; and the Brahmans are always ready to receive all who will submit to them and pay them. The process of manufacturing Rajputs from ambitious aborigines goes on before our eyes.' 'This,' Mr. Lyall observes, 'is one recently recorded observation out of many that might be quoted.'

It is this very passage which I had quoted in my third note, only that in quoting it from the 'Report on the Progress and Condition of India,' laid before Parliament in 1873, I had added the caution of the reporter, that 'this assertion must be taken with reserve.'

With such small exceptions, however, I have really nothing to complain of in the line of argument adopted by Mr. Lyall. I believe that, after having read my paper, he would have modified some portions of what he has written, but I feel equally certain that it is well that what he has written should have been written, and should be carefully pondered both by those who have the interests of the natives and by those who have the interests of Christian missions at heart. The few remarks which I take the liberty of making are made by way of explanation only; on all truly essential points I believe there is not much difference of opinion between Mr. Lyall and myself.

As my lecture in Westminster Abbey was de-

livered shortly after the publication of my 'Introduction to the Science of Religion,' I ventured to take certain points which I had fully treated there as generally known. One of them is the exact value to be ascribed to canonical books in a scientific treatment of religion. When Mr. Lyall observes *in limine*, that inferences as to the nature and tendency of various existing religions which are drawn from study and exegetic comparison of their scriptures must be qualified by actual observation of these religions and their popular form and working effects, he expresses an opinion which I hold as strongly as he holds it himself. After enumerating the books which are recognised as sacred or authoritative by large religious communities in India—books of such bulk and such difficulty that it seems almost impossible for any single scholar to master them in their entirety—I added, 'And even then our eyes would not have reached many of the sacred recesses in which the Hindu mind has taken refuge, either to meditate on the great problems of life, or to free itself from the temptations and fetters of worldly existence by penances and mortifications of the most exquisite cruelty. India has always been teeming with religious sects, and its religious life has been broken up into countless local centres which it required all the ingenuity and perseverance of a priestly caste to hold together with a semblance of dogmatic uniformity.'

We must take care, however, in all scientific studies, not to render a task impossible by attaching to it conditions which, humanly speaking, cannot be fulfilled. It is desirable, no doubt, to study some of the local varieties of faith and worship in

every religion, but it is impossible to do this with anything like completeness. Were we to wait till we had examined every Christian sect before trusting ourselves to form a general judgment of Christianity, not one of us could honestly say that he knew his own religion. It seems to me that in studying religions we must expect to meet with the same difficulties which we have to encounter in the comparative study of languages. It may, no doubt, be argued with great force that no one knows English who is ignorant of the spoken dialects, of the jargon of sailors and miners, or of the slang of public-houses and prisons. It is perfectly true that what we call the literary and classical language is never the really living language of a people, and that a foreigner may know Shakspeare, Milton, and Byron, and yet fail to understand, if not the debates in Parliament, at all events the wrangling of sellers and buyers in the markets of the city. Nevertheless, when we learn English, or German, or French, or any of the dead languages, such as Latin and Greek, we must depend on grammars, which grammars are founded on a few classical writers; and when we speak of these languages in general, when we subject them to a scientific treatment, analyse them, and attempt to classify them, we avail ourselves for all such purposes almost exclusively of classical works, of literary productions of recognised authority. It is the same, and it can hardly be otherwise, when we approach the study of religions, whether for practical or for scientific purposes. Suppose a Hindu wished to know what the Christian religion really was, should we tell him to go first to Rome, then to Paris, then to St.

Petersburg, then to Athens, then to Oxford, then to Berlin, that he might hear the sermons of Roman Catholics, Greeks, and Protestants, or read their so-called religious papers, in order to form out of these scattered impressions an idea of the real nature of the working effects of Christianity? Or should we not rather tell him to take the Bible, and the hymns of Christian Churches, and from them to form his ideal of true Christianity? A religion is much more likely to become 'a mysterious thing' when it is sought for in the heart of each individual believer, where alone, no doubt, it truly lives, or in the endless shibboleths of parties, or in the often contradictory tenets of sects, than when it is studied in those sacred books which are recognised as authoritative by all believers, however much they may vary in their interpretations of certain passages, and still more in the practical application of the doctrines contained in their sacred codes to the ordering of their daily life. Let the dialects of languages or religions be studied by all means, let even the peculiarities in the utterances of each town, village, or family, be carefully noted; but let it be recognised at the same time that, for practical purposes, the immense variety of individual expression has to be merged in one general type, and that this alone supplies the chance of a truly scientific treatment.

So much in justification of the principle which I have followed throughout in my treatment of the so-called Book-religions, holding that they must be judged, first of all, out of their own mouths—*i.e.* out of their sacred writings. Although each individual believer is responsible for his religion, no religion

can be made responsible for each individual believer. Even if we adopt the theory of development in religion, and grant to every thinking man his right of private interpretation, there remains, and there must always remain, to the historian of religion, an appeal to the statutes of the original code with which each religion stands and falls, and by which alone it can justly be judged.

It may be, as Mr. Lyall says, an inveterate modern habit to assume all great historic names to represent something definite, symmetrical, and organised. It may be that Asiatic institutions, as he asserts, are incapable of being circumscribed by rules and formal definitions. But Mr. Lyall, if he directed his attention to European institutions, would meet with much the same difficulties there. Christianity, in the largest sense of the word, is as difficult to define as Brahmanism: the English constitution is as unsymmetrical as the system of caste. Yet, if we mean to speak and argue about them, we must attempt to define them, and with regard to any religion, whether Asiatic or European, no definition, it seems to me, can be fairer than that which we gain from its canonical books.

I now come to a more important point. I had divided the six great religions of the world into *Missionary* and *non-Missionary*, including Judaism, Brahmanism, and Zoroastrianism, under the latter; Buddhism, Christianity, and Mohammedanism, under the former category. If I had followed the good old rule of always giving a definition of technical terms, the objections raised by Mr. Lyall and others would probably never have been urged. I thought, how-

ever, that from the whole tenor of my lecture it would have been clear that by missionary religions I meant *those in which the spreading of the truth and the conversion of unbelievers are raised to the rank of a sacred duty by the founder or his immediate successors.* In explaining the meaning of the word proselyte, or προσήλυτος, I had shown that literally it means those who come to us, not those to whom we go, so that even a religion so exclusive as Judaism might admit proselytes, might possibly, if we insisted only on the etymological meaning of the word, be called proselytising, without having any right to the name of a missionary religion. But I imagined that I had said enough to make such a misunderstanding impossible. We may say that the English nobility grows, but we should never say that it proselytises, and it would be a mere playing with words if, because Brahmanism *admits* new comers, we were to claim for it the title of a proselytising religion. The Brahmanic Scriptures have not a word of welcome for converts—quite the contrary; and as long as those Scriptures are recognised as the highest authority by the Hindus themselves, we have no right to ascribe to Brahmanism what is in direct contradiction with their teaching. The burning of widows was not enjoined in the Vedas, and hence, in order to gain a sanction for it, a passage in the Veda was falsified. No such necessity was ever felt with regard to gaining converts for the Brahmanic faith. And this shows that, though admission to certain Brahmanic privileges may be easier at present than it was in the days of Visvâmitra, conversion by persuasion has never become an integral portion of the Brahmanic law.

However, as Mr. Lyall does not stand alone in his opinions, and as others have claimed for Judaism and Zoroastrianism the same missionary character which he claims in the name of Brahmanism, a few explanations may not be out of place.

Till very lately, an orthodox Jew was rather proud of the fact that he and his people had never condescended to spread their religion among Christians by such means as Christians use for the conversion of Jews. The Parsi community, too, seemed to share with the Quakers a prudent reluctance in admitting outsiders to the advantages conferred by membership of so respectable and influential a community; while the Brahmans certainly were the very last to compass heaven and earth for the conversion of Mle*kkha*s or outcasts. Suddenly, however, all this is changed. The Chief Rabbi in London, stung to the quick by the reproach of the absence of the missionary spirit in Judaism, has delivered a sermon to show that I had maligned his people, and that, though they never had missionaries, they had been the most proselytising people in the world. Some strong arguments in support of the same view have been brought forward by the Rev. Charles Voysey, whose conception of Judaism, however, is founded rather on what the great prophets wished it should have been than on what history teaches us it was. As the facts and arguments advanced by the Jewish advocates could not modify my judgment of the historical character of Judaism, I did not think it necessary to reply, particularly as another eminent Rabbi, the editor of the 'Jewish World,' fully endorsed my views of Judaism, and expressed his sur-

prise at the unorthodox theories advanced by so high an authority as Dr. Adler. I am informed, however, that the discussion thus originated will not remain without practical results, and that something like a Jewish Missionary Society is actually forming in London, to prove that, if missionary zeal is a test of life, the Jewish religion will not shrink from such a test. 'We have done something,' the Rev. Charles Voysey remarks, 'to stir them up; but let us not forget that our reminder was answered, not by a repulse or expression of surprise, but by an assurance that many earnest Jews had already been thinking of this very work, and planning among themselves how they could revive some kind of missionary enterprise. Before long, I feel sure, they will give practical evidence that the missionary spirit is still alive and striving in their religion.' And again: 'The Jews will soon show whether their religion is alive or dead, will soon meet the rival religions of the world on more than equal terms, and will once more take the lead in these days of enlightened belief, and in search after conceptions worthy of a God, just as of old Judaism stood on a lofty height, far above all the religions of mankind.'

What has happened in London seems to have happened in Bombay also. The Zoroastrians, too, did not like to be told that their religion was dying, and that their gradual decay was due to the absence of the missionary spirit among them. We read in the 'Oriental' of April, 1874, 'There is a discussion as to whether it is contrary to the creed of Zoroaster to seek converts to the faith. While conceding that Zoroaster was himself opposed to proselytising hea-

thens, most of the Parsis hold that the great decrease in the number of his followers renders it absolutely necessary to augment the sect.'

Lastly, Mr. Lyall stands up for Brahmanism, and maintains that in India Brahmanism has spread out during the last hundred years, while Islam and Christianity have contracted. 'More persons in India,' he says, 'become every year Brahmanists, than all the converts to all the other religions in India put together.' 'The number of converts,' he maintains, 'added to Brahmanism in the last few generations, especially in this country, must be immense; and *if the word proselyte may be used in the sense of one that has come, not necessarily being one that has been invited or persuaded to come*, then Brahmanism may lay claim to be by far the most successful proselytising religion of modern times in India.'

The words which I have ventured to put in italics, will show at once how little difference of opinion there is between Mr. Lyall and myself, as long as we use the same words in the same sense. If proselytising could be used in the etymological sense here assigned to it by Mr. Lyall, then, no doubt, Brahmanism would be a proselytising or missionary religion. But this is mere playing with words. In English, proselytising is never used in that sense. If I meant by missionary religions nothing more than religions which are capable of increase by admitting those that wish to be admitted, religions which say to the world at large, 'Knock and it shall be opened unto you,' but no more, then, no doubt, Brahmanism, or at least some phases of it,

might be called by that name. But what, according to my explanation, constitutes a missionary religion is something totally different. It is the spirit of truth in the hearts of believers which cannot rest, unless it manifests itself in thought, word, and deed, which is not satisfied till it has carried its message to every human soul, till what it believes to be the truth is accepted as the truth by all members of the human family.

That spirit imparts to certain religions a character of their own, a character which, if I am not mistaken, constitutes the vital principle of our own religion, and of the other two which, in that respect, stand nearest to Christianity—Buddhism and Mohammedanism. This is not a mere outward difference, depending on the willingness of others to join or not to join; it is an inward difference which stamped Christianity as a missionary religion when as yet it counted no more than twelve apostles, and which lays on everyone that calls himself a Christian the duty of avowing his convictions, whatever they may be, and gaining others to embrace the truth. In that sense every true Christian is a missionary. Mr. Lyall is evidently aware of all this, if we may judge by the expressions which he uses when speaking of the increase of Brahmanism. He speaks of the clans and races which inhabit the hill-tracts, the outlying uplands, and the uncleared jungle districts of India, as *melting* into Hinduism. He represents the ethnical frontier, described by Mr. Hunter in the 'Annals of Rural Bengal,' as an ever-breaking shore of primitive beliefs, which *tumble* constantly into the ocean of Brahmanism. And even when he dwells on the fact

that non-Aryans are invited by the Brahmans to enter in, he adds that this is done for the sake of profit and repute, not from a wish to eradicate error, to save souls, or to spread the truth. Such instances occurred even in the ancient history of India; and I had myself, in my 'History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature,' pointed out the case of the Rathakaras or carpenters who were admitted to the Vedic sacrifices, and who, probably from a mere similarity of name—their leader being called Bribu—had the old Vedic Ribhus assigned to them as their peculiar deities. But these were exceptions, they were *concessions aux nègres*, deviations from traditional rules, entirely owing to the pressure of circumstances; not manifestations springing from religious impulses. If Mr. Lyall remarks himself that a religion which thus, half involuntarily, enlarges its borders is not, in the strict sense of the word, a missionary religion, he shows that he is fully aware of the profound difference between a religion that grows by mere agglomeration and a religion that grows by its own strength, by its irrepressible missionary zeal. In answer to his concluding remark, that this ground was *not* taken in my lecture, I can only say that it was—nay, that it formed the very foundation on which the whole argument of my lecture was meant to rest.[1]

There is more force in the objections which Mr. Lyall raises against my calling Brahmanism already

[1] Mr. G. A. Grierson, in his 'Notes on the Rangpur Dialect' (*Journal of the Asiat. Soc. of Bengal*, 1877, p. 186), remarks with great truth: 'The Hindu, while probably the most receptive, is the least missionary religion in the world.'

dead. The word was too strong; at all events, it was liable to be misunderstood. What I meant to say was that the popular worship of Śiva and Vishṇu belongs to the same intellectual stratum as the worship of Jupiter and Apollo, that it is an anachronism in the nineteenth century, and that, for our purposes, for prognosticating the issues of the religious struggles of the future, it may simply be set aside. For settling any of the questions that may be said to be pending between Christianity, Mohammedanism, and Buddhism, Brahmanism is dead. For converting any number of Christians, Mohammedans, and Buddhists back to idol-worship, Brahmanism is dead. It may absorb Sonthals, and Gonds, and Bhils, and other half-savage races, with their rough-hewn jungle deities, it may even raise them to a higher stage of civilisation, and imbue them with the first principles of a truer faith and a purer worship, but for carrying any of the strong positions of Buddhism, Mohammedanism, and Christianity, Brahmanism is powerless and dead. In India itself, where it clings to the soil with a thousand roots, it was beaten by Buddhism, and, if it afterwards recovered its position, that was due to physical force, not to persuasion and conversion. The struggle between Mohammedanism and Brahmanism in India was on both sides a political rather than a religious struggle: still, when a change of religion arose from conviction, we see Brahmanism yielding to the purer light of Islam, not Islam to Brahmanism.

I did not undervalue the actual power of Brahmanism, particularly its power of resistance; nor did I prophesy its speedy extinction. I said, on the

contrary, that 'a religion may linger on for a long time, and be accepted by the large masses of the people, because it is there, and there is nothing better.' 'It is true,' I added, 'there are millions of children, women, and men in India who fall down before the stone image of Vishnu, with his four arms, riding on a creature, half-bird, half-man, or sleeping on the serpent; who worship Siva, a monster with three eyes, riding naked on a bull, with a necklace of skulls for his ornament. There are human beings who still believe in a god of war, Kârtikeya, with six faces, riding on a peacock, and holding bow and arrow in his hands; and who invoke a God of success, Ganesa, with four hands and an elephant's head, sitting on a rat. Nay, it is true that, in the broad daylight of the nineteenth century, the figure of the goddess Kali is carried through the streets of her own city, Calcutta, her wild dishevelled hair reaching to her feet, with a necklace of human heads, her tongue protruded from her mouth, her girdle stained with blood. All this is true; but ask any Hindu who can read and write and think, whether these are the gods he believes in, and he will smile at your credulity. How long this living death of national religion in India may last, no one can tell: for our purposes, however, for gaining an idea of the issue of the great religious struggle of the future, that religion is dead and gone.'

I ask Mr. Lyall, is this true or is it not? He says himself, 'that Brahmanism may possibly melt away of a heap and break up, I would not absolutely deny.' Would Mr. Lyall say the same of Buddhism, Mohammedanism, or Christianity? He points himself to

42502

the description which Gibbon gives of the ancient Roman religion in the second century of the Christian era, and shows how closely applicable it is to the present state of Brahmanism in India. 'The tolerant superstition of the people, "not confined by the claims of any speculative system;" the "devout polytheist, whom fear, gratitude, and curiosity, a dream, or an omen, a singular disorder, or a distant journey, perpetually disposed to multiply the articles of his belief and to enlarge the list of his protectors;" the "ingenuous youth alike instructed in every school to reject and despise the religion of the multitude;" the philosophic class who "look with indulgence on the errors of the vulgar, diligently practice the ceremonies of their fathers, and devoutly frequent the temples of their gods;" the "magistrates who know and value the advantages of religion as it is connected with civil government"—all these scenes and feelings are represented in India at this moment, though by no means in all parts of India.' If, then, in the second century a student of religious pathology had expressed his conviction that in spite of the number of its professors, in spite of its antiquity, in spite of its indigenous character, in spite of its political, civil, and social influences, in spite of its temples and priests, in spite of its schools and philosophers, the ancient religion of Jupiter had lost its vitality, was sick unto death, nay, for all real purposes was dead, would he have been far wrong? It may be replied, no doubt, that similar corruptions have crept into other religions also: that gaudy dolls are carried about in Christian cathedrals; that people are invited to see tears rolling down from the eyes of

images, or to worship wine changed into blood, to say nothing of even more terrible hallucinations on the Eucharist propounded from so-called Protestant pulpits; and that, in spite of all this, we should not call the Christian religion dying or dead. This is true, and I thought that, by my remarks on the different revivals of Hinduism from the twelfth to the nineteenth century, I had sufficiently indicated that new life may spring even from such apparently hopeless corruption. If it is Brahmanism that lives in the sects of Râmânuga and Râmânanda, in the poetry of Kabir and the wisdom of Nânak, in the honest purposes of Ram Mohun Roy and in the high aspirations of Keshub Chunder Sen, then I quite agree with Mr. Lyall that Brahmanism is not dead, but lives more intensely than ever.

But here, for some reason or other, Mr. Lyall seems to demur to my hopeful estimate of Brahmoism. He had expressed his own conviction that Brahmanism, though it might suddenly collapse and vanish, was more likely gradually to spiritualise and centralise its pantheon, reduce its theology to a compact system, soften down its morals by symbolisms and interpolations, discard 'dogmatic extremes,' and generally to bring itself into accordance with improved standards of science and intelligence. He had also quoted with implied approval the remark of qualified observers, 'that we might at any time witness a great Brahmanic reforming revival in India, if some really gifted and singularly powerful prophet were to arise among the Hindus.' But when I hinted that this prophet had actually arisen, and that in Brahmoism, as preached by Ram Mohun Roy,

Debendra Nath Tagore, and Keshub Chunder Sen, we ought to recognise a transition from Brahmanism to a purer faith; when I pointed out that, though Christian missionaries might not wish to recognise Brahmoism as their work, it was the work of those missionary Christians who have lived in India, as examples of a true Christian life, who have approached the natives in a truly missionary spirit, in the spirit of truth and in the spirit of love, Mr. Lyall replies that 'Brahmoism, as propagated by Keshub Chunder Sen, seems to be Unitarianism of a European type, and, so far as one can understand its argument, appears to have no logical stability or *locus standi* between revelation and pure rationalism: that it propounds either too much or too little to its hearers.' 'A faith,' he continues, 'which contains mere fervent sentiments, and high conceptions of morality, does not partake of the complexion or nature of those religions which have encompassed the heart of great nations, nor is it generally supposed in India that Brahmoism is perceptibly on the increase.'

Mutatis mutandis, this is very much what an orthodox Rabbi might have said of Christianity. Let us wait. I am not given to prophesy, but though I am no longer young, I still hold to a belief that a cause upheld with such honesty of purpose, purity, and unselfishness as Brahmoism has been, must and will meet with ultimate success. Does Mr. Lyall think that Unitarian Christianity is no Christianity? Does he find logical stability in Trinitarianism? Does he consider pure rationalism incompatible with revelation? Does he know of any teacher who might

not be accused of saying either too little or too much? In A.D. 800 the Double Procession was as much a burning question as the Homoousia in 324—are, therefore, both Channing and Dr. Döllinger to be anathematised now? Brahmoism may not be like the religions of old, but must the religions of the future be like the religions of the past? However, I do not wish to draw Mr. Lyall into a theological argument. His estimate of the real value and vitality of Brahmoism may be right—mine may be wrong. His presence in India, and his personal intercourse with the Brahmos, may have given him opportunities of judging which I have not. Only let us not forget that for watching the movements of a great struggle, and for judging of its successful issue, a certain distance from the field of battle has its advantages also, and that judges in India have not always proved the best judges of India.

One point, however, I am quite willing to concede. If Brahmoism and similar movements may be considered as reforms and resuscitations of Brahmanism, then I withdraw my expression that Brahmanism is dead. Only let us remember that we are thus using Brahmanism in two very different senses—that we are again playing with words. In the one sense it is stark idolatry: in the other, the loftiest spiritual worship. The former asserts the existence of many personal gods: the latter shrinks even from the attribute of personality as too human a conception of the Highest Spirit. The former makes the priest a kind of god on earth, the latter proclaims the priesthood of all men; the former is guided by scriptures which man calls sacred, the latter knows

of no sacred oracles but the still small voice in the heart of every man. The two are like two opposite poles. What is negative on one side is positive on the other; what is regarded by the one as the most sacred truth is anathematised by the other as deadly error.

Mr. Lyall tell us of Ghási Dás, an inspired prophet, who sojourned in the wilderness for six months, and then issued forth preaching to the poor and ignorant the creed of the True Name (Satnám). He gathered about half a million people together before he died in 1850. He borrowed his doctrines from the well-known Hindu sect of the Satnâmis, and though he denounced Brahmanic abuses, he instituted caste rules of his own, and his successor was murdered, not for heresy, but because he aped Brahmanic insignia and privileges. Mr. Lyall thinks that this community, if left alone, will relapse into a modified Brahmanism. This may be so, but it can hardly be said, that a reform the followers of which are murdered for aping Brahmanic insignia and privileges represents Brahmanism, which Mr. Lyall defines as 'the broad denomination of what is recognised by all Hindus as the supreme theological faculty and the comprehensive scheme of authoritative tradition to which all minor beliefs are referred for sanction.'

When I spoke of Brahmanism as dead, I meant the popular orthodox Brahmanism, which is openly patronised by the Brahmans, though scorned by them in secret. I did not, and could not, mean the worship of Brahma as the Supreme Spirit, which has existed in India from the time of the Upanishads to the present day, and has lately assumed the name of

Brahmoism—a worship so pure, so exalted, so deeply human, so truly divine, that every man can join in it without apostasy, whether he be born a Jew, a Gentile, or a Christian.

That many antagonistic forms of religious faith, some the most degraded, others the most exalted, should live on the same soil, among the same people, is indeed a disheartening truth, enough almost to shake one's belief in the common origin and the common destinies of the human race. And yet we must not shut our eyes to the fact that amongst ourselves, too, men who call themselves Christians are almost as widely separated from each other in their conceptions of the Divine and the Human, in their grounds of belief and in their sense of duty, as, in India, the worshippers of Ganesa—the god of success, with four hands and an elephant's head, sitting on a rat—on one side, and the believers in the true Brahma, on the other. There is a Christianity that is dead, though it may be professed by millions of people; but there is also, let us trust, a Christianity that is alive, though it may count but twelve apostles. As in India, so in Europe, many would call death what we call life: many would call life what we call death. Here, as elsewhere, it is high time that men should define the exact meaning of their words, trusting that definiteness, frankness, and honesty may offer a better chance of mutual understanding, and serve as a stronger bond of union between man and man, than vague formulas, faint-hearted reticence, and what is at the root of it all, want of true love of Man, and of true faith in God.

If Mr. Lyall imagined that the object of my Lec-

ture was to discourage missionary efforts, he must have found out his mistake when he came to read it as I delivered it in Westminster Abbey. I know of no nobler life than that of a true missionary. I tried to defend the labours of the paternal missionary against disparaging criticisms. I tried to account for the small success of controversial missions, by showing how little is gained by mere argument and casuistry at home. And I pointed to the indirect missionary influence exercised by every man who leads a Christian life in India or elsewhere, as the most encouraging sign of the final triumph of a pure and living Christianity. It is very possible, as Mr. Lyall says somewhat sarcastically, that 'missionaries will even yet hardly agree that the essentials of their religion are not in the creeds, but in love; because they are sent forth to propound scriptures which say clearly that what we believe or disbelieve is literally a *burning* question.' But those who, with Mr. Lyall, consider love of man founded on love of God nothing but 'flat morality,' must have forgotten that a Higher One than they declared that on these two hang all the law and the commandments. By placing abstruse tenets, the handiwork of Popes and Councils, in the place of Christ's teaching, and by making a belief in these positive articles a *burning* question, weak mortals have driven weak mortals to ask, 'Are we Christians still?' Let them for once 'by observation and experience' try the oldest and simplest and most positive article of Christianity, real love of man founded on real love of God, and I believe they will soon ask themselves, 'When shall we be Christians at last?'

XIV.

LECTURE

ON THE VEDAS OR THE SACRED BOOKS OF THE BRAHMANS,[1]

Delivered at the Philosophical Institution, Leeds, March, 1865.

I HAVE brought with me one volume of my edition of the Veda, and I should not wonder if it were the first copy of the work which has ever reached this busy town of Leeds. Nay, I confess I have some misgivings that I may have undertaken a hopeless task, and I begin to doubt whether I shall succeed in explaining to you the interest which I feel for this ancient collection of sacred hymns—an interest which has never failed me while devoting to the publication of this voluminous work the best twenty years of my life. Many times have I been asked, But what is the Veda? Why should it be published? What are we likely to learn from a book composed nearly four thousand years ago, and intended from the beginning for an uncultivated race of mere heathens and savages, —a book which the natives of India have never published themselves, although, to the present day, they profess to regard it as the highest authority for their

[1] Some of the points touched upon in this Lecture have been more fully treated in my *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*. As the second edition of this work has been out of print for several years, I have here quoted a few passages from it in full.

religion, morals, and philosophy? Are we, the people of England or of Europe, in the nineteenth century, likely to gain any new light on religious, moral, or philosophical questions from the old songs of the Brahmans? And is it so very certain that the whole book is not a modern forgery, without any substantial claims to that high antiquity which is ascribed to it by the Hindus, so that all the labour bestowed upon it would not only be labour lost, but throw discredit on our powers of discrimination, and make us a laughing-stock among the shrewd natives of India?

These and similar questions I have had to answer many times when asked by others, and some of them when asked by myself, before embarking on so hazardous an undertaking as the publication of the Rig-Veda and its ancient commentary. And I believe I am not mistaken in supposing that many of those who to-night have honoured me with their presence may have entertained similar doubts and misgivings when invited to listen to a Lecture 'On the Vedas or the Sacred Books of the Brahmans.'

I shall endeavour, therefore, as far as this is possible within the limits of one Lecture, to answer some of these questions, and to remove some of these doubts, by explaining to you, first, what the Veda really is, and, secondly, what importance it possesses, not only to the people of India, but to ourselves in Europe—and here again, not only to the student of Oriental languages, but to every student of history, religion, or philosophy; to every man who has once felt the charm of tracing that mighty stream of human thought on which we ourselves are floating onward,

back to its distant mountain-sources; to every one who has a heart for whatever has once filled the hearts of millions of human beings with their noblest hopes, and fears, and aspirations—to every student of mankind in the fullest sense of that full and weighty word. Whoever claims that noble title must not forget, whether he examines the highest achievements of mankind in our own age, or the miserable failures of former ages, what man is, and in whose image and after whose likeness man was made. Whether listening to the shrieks of the Shaman sorcerers of Tatary, or to the odes of Pindar, or to the sacred songs of Paul Gerhard; whether looking at the Pagodas of China, or the Parthenon of Athens, or the cathedral of Cologne; whether reading the sacred books of the Buddhists, or of the Jews, or of those who worship God in spirit and in truth, we ought to be able to say, like the Emperor Maximilian, 'Homo sum, humani nihil a me alienum puto,' or, translating his words somewhat freely, 'I am a man, nothing pertaining to man I deem foreign to myself.' Yes, we must learn to read in the history of the whole human race something of our own history; and as in looking back on the story of our own life we all dwell with a peculiar delight on the earliest chapters of our childhood, and try to find there the key to many of the riddles of our later life, it is but natural that the historian, too, should ponder with most intense interest over the few relics that have been preserved to him of the childhood of the human race. These relics are few indeed, and therefore very precious, and this I may venture to say, at the outset and without fear of contradiction, that there exists no literary relic

that carries us back to a more primitive, or, if you like, more childlike state in the history of man [1] than the Veda. As the language of the Veda, the Sanskrit, is the most ancient type of the English of the present day (Sanskrit and English are but varieties of one and the same language), so its thoughts and feelings contain in reality the first roots and germs of that intellectual growth which by an unbroken chain connects our own generation with the ancestors of the Aryan race—with those very people who at the rising and setting of the sun listened with trembling hearts to the songs of the Veda that told them of bright powers above, and of a life to come after the sun of their own lives had set in the clouds of the evening. These men were the true ancestors of our race; and the Veda is the oldest book we have in which to study the first beginnings of our language and of all that is embodied in language. We are by nature Aryan, Indo-European, not Semitic: our spiritual kith and kin are to be found in India, Persia, Greece, Italy, Germany; not in Mesopotamia, Egypt, or Palestine. This is a fact that ought to be clearly perceived and constantly kept in view, in order to understand the importance which the Veda still has for us, after the lapse of more than three thousand years and after ever so many changes in our language, thought, and religion.

Whatever the intrinsic value of the Veda, if it

[1] 'In the sciences of law and society, old means not old in chronology, but in structure: that is most archaic which lies nearest to the beginning of human progress considered as a development, and that is most modern which is farthest removed from that beginning.'—J. F. McLennan, *Primitive Marriage*, p. 8.

simply contained the names of kings, the description of battles, the dates of famines, it would still be, by its age alone, the most venerable of books. Do we ever find much beyond such matters in Egyptian hieroglyphics, or in cuneiform inscriptions? In fact, what does the ancient history of the world before Cyrus, before 500 B.C., consist of but meagre lists of Egyptian, Babylonian, Assyrian dynasties? What do the tablets of Karnak, the palaces of Nineveh, and the cylinders of Babylon tell us about the thoughts of men? All is dead and barren, nowhere a sigh, nowhere a jest, nowhere a glimpse of humanity.[1] There has been but one oasis in that vast desert of ancient Asiatic history, the history of the Jews. Another such oasis is the Veda. Here, too, we come to a stratum of ancient thought, of ancient feelings, hopes, joys and fears—of ancient religion. There is perhaps too little of kings and battles in the Veda, and scarcely anything of the chronological framework of history. But poets surely are better than kings, hymns and prayers are more worth listening to than the agonies of butchered armies, and guesses at truth more valuable than unmeaning titles of Egyptian or Babylonian despots. It will be difficult to settle whether the Veda is 'the oldest of books,' and whether some of the portions of the Old Testament may not be traced back to the same or even an earlier date than the oldest hymns of the Veda. But, in the Aryan world, the Veda is certainly the oldest book, and its preservation amounts almost to a miracle.

[1] After the progress made of late years in the decipherment of Egyptian and Babylonian inscriptions this statement requires some modification.

It is nearly twenty years ago since my attention was first drawn to the Veda, while attending, in the years 1846 and 1847, the lectures of Eugène Burnouf at the Collège de France. I was then looking out, like most young men at that time of life, for some great work, and without weighing long the difficulties which had hitherto prevented the publication of the Veda, I determined to devote all my time to a collection of the materials necessary for such an undertaking. I had read the principal works of the later Sanskrit literature, but had found little there that seemed to be more than curious. But to publish the Veda, a work that had never before been published in India or in Europe, that occupied in the history of Sanskrit literature the same position which the Old Testament occupies in the history of the Jews, the New Testament in the history of modern Europe, the Koran in the history of Mohammedanism; a work which fills a gap in the history of the human mind, and promises to bring us nearer than any other work to the first beginnings of Aryan language and Aryan thought—this seemed to me an undertaking not altogether unworthy a man's life. What added to the charm of it was that it had once before been undertaken by Frederick Rosen, a young German scholar, who died in England before he had finished the first book, and that after his death no one seemed willing to carry on his work. What I had to do, first of all, was to copy not only the text, but the commentary of the Rig-Veda, a work which when finished will fill six of these large volumes. The author or rather the compiler of this commentary, Sâya*n*a Â*k*ârya, lived about 1400 after

Christ—that is to say, about as many centuries after as the poets of the Veda lived before the beginning of our era. Yet through the 3,000 years which separate the original poetry of the Veda from the latest commentary, there runs an almost continuous stream of tradition, and it is from it, rather than from his own brain, that Sâyaṇa draws his explanations of the sacred texts. Numerous MSS., more or less complete, more or less inaccurate, of Sâyaṇa's classical work, existed in the then Royal Library at Paris, in the Library of the East-India House, then in Leadenhall Street, and in the Bodleian Library at Oxford. But to copy and collate these MSS. was by no means all. A number of other works were constantly quoted in Sâyaṇa's commentary, and these quotations had all to be verified. It was necessary first to copy these books, and to make indexes to all of them, in order to be able to find any passage that might be referred to in the larger commentary. Many of them have since been published in Germany and France, but they were not to be procured twenty years ago. The work, of course, proceeded but slowly, and many times I doubted whether I should be able to carry it through. Lastly came the difficulty—and by no means the smallest—who was to publish a work that would occupy about six thousand pages in quarto, all in Sanskrit, and of which probably not a hundred copies would ever be sold? Well, I came to England in order to collect more materials at the East India House and at the Bodleian Library, and thanks to the exertions of my generous friend Baron Bunsen, and of the late Professor Wilson, the Board of Directors of the East India

Company decided to defray the expenses of a work which, as they stated in their letter, 'is in a peculiar manner deserving of the patronage of the East India Company, connected as it is with the early religion, history, and language of the great body of their Indian subjects.' It thus became necessary for me to take up my abode in England, which has since become my second home. The first volume was published in 1849, the second in 1853, the third in 1856, the fourth in 1862. The materials for the remaining volumes are ready, so that, if I can but make leisure, there is little doubt that before long the whole work will be complete.[1]

Now, first, as to the name. Veda means originally knowing or knowledge, and this name is given by the Brahmans, not to one work, but to the whole body of their most ancient sacred literature. Veda, is the same word which appears in the Greek *οἶδα*, I know, and in the English *wise, wisdom, to wit.*[2] The name of Veda is commonly given to four collections of hymns, which are respectively known by the names of Rig-Veda, Yagur-Veda, Sâma-Veda, and Atharva-Veda, each of these collections having certain prose works, Brâhmanas, Âranyakas and

[1] The fifth appeared in 1872; the sixth and last in 1874.

Sanskrit	Greek	Gothic	Anglo-Saxon	German
véda	*οἶδα*	vait	wât	ich weiss
véttha	*οἶσθα*	vaist	wâst	du weisst
véda	*οἶδε*	vait	wât	er weiss
vidvá	—	vitu	—	—
vidáthuḥ	*ἴστον*	vituts	—	—
vidátuḥ	*ἴστον*	—	—	—
vidmá	*ἴσμεν*	vitum	witon	wir wissen
vidá	*ἴστε*	vituth	wite	ihr wisset
vidúḥ	*ἴσασι*	vitun	witan	sie wissen

Sûtras attached to them. For our own purposes, however—namely, for tracing the earliest growth of religious ideas in India—the only important, the only real Veda, is the Rig-Veda.

The other so-called Vedas—which deserve the name of Veda no more than the Talmud deserves the name of Bible—contain chiefly extracts from the Rig-Veda, together with sacrificial formulas, charms, and incantations, many of them, no doubt, extremely curious, but never likely to interest anyone except the Sanskrit scholar by profession.

The Samhitâs, or collections of hymns, of the Yagur-Veda and Sâma-Veda may be described as prayer-books, arranged according to the order of certain sacrifices, and intended to be used by certain classes of priests.

Four classes of priests were required in India at the most solemn sacrifices:—

1. The officiating priests, manual labourers, and acolytes; who have chiefly to prepare the sacrificial ground, to dress the altar, slay the victims, and pour out the libations.
2. The choristers, who chant the sacred hymns.
3. The reciters or readers, who repeat certain hymns.
4. The overseers or bishops, who watch and superintend the proceedings of the other priests, and ought to be familiar with all the Vedas.

The formulas and verses to be muttered by the first class are contained in the Yagur-Veda-Samhitâ.

The hymns to be sung by the second class are in the Sâma-Veda-Samhitâ.

The Atharva-Veda is said to be intended for the

Brahman or overseer, who is to watch the proceedings of the sacrifice, and to remedy any mistake that may occur.[1]

Fortunately, the hymns to be recited by the third class were not arranged in a sacrificial prayer-book, but were preserved in an old collection of hymns, containing all that had been saved of ancient, sacred, and popular poetry, more like the Psalms than like a ritual; a collection made for its own sake, and not for the sake of any sacrificial performances.

I shall, therefore, confine my remarks to the Rig-Veda, which in the eyes of the historical student is the Veda *par excellence*. Rig-Veda means the Veda of hymns of praise, for *Rich*—which before the initial soft letter of Veda is changed to *Rig*—is derived from a root which in Sanskrit means to celebrate.

In the Rig-Veda we must distinguish again between the original collection of the hymns or Mantras, called the Sa*m*hitâ or the collection, being entirely metrical and poetical, and a number of works, called Brâhma*n*as and Sûtras, written in prose, and giving information on the proper use of the hymns at sacrifices, on their sacred meaning, on their supposed authors, and similar topics. These works, too, go by the name of Rig-Veda: but, though very curious in themselves, they are evidently of a much later period, and of little help to us in tracing the beginnings of religious life in India. For that purpose we must depend entirely on the hymns, such as we find them in the Sa*m*hitâ or the collection of the Rig-Veda.

Now, this collection consists of ten books, and

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 449.

contains altogether 1,028 hymns. As early as about 600 B.C. we find that in the theological schools of India every verse, every word, every syllable of the Veda had been carefully counted. The number of verses as computed in treatises of that date, varies from 10,402 to 10,622; that of the words is 153,826, that of the syllables 432,000.[1] With these numbers, and with the description given in these early treatises of each hymn, of its metre, its deity, its number of verses, our modern MSS. of the Veda correspond as closely as could be expected.

I say, our modern MSS., for all our MSS. are modern, and very modern. Not many Sanskrit MSS. are more than four or five hundred years old, the fact being that in the damp climate of India no paper will last for more than a few centuries, though a few are known that are supposed to date from the tenth or ninth century, A.D.

How, then, you will naturally ask, can it be proved that the original hymns were composed between 1200 and 1500 before the Christian era if our MSS. only carry us back to about the same date after the Christian era? It is not very easy to bridge over this gulf of nearly three thousand years, but all I can say is that, after carefully examining every possible objection that can be made against the date of the Vedic hymns, their claim to that high antiquity which is ascribed to them has not, as far as I can judge, been shaken. I shall try to explain on what kind of evidence these claims rest.

You know that we possess no MS. of the Old Testament in Hebrew older than about the tenth or

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, second edition, p. 219 *eq.*

ninth century of the Christian era;[1] yet the Septuagint translation by itself would be sufficient to prove that the Old Testament, such on the whole as we now read it, existed in MS. previous at least to the third century before our era. By a similar train of argument, the works to which I referred before, in which we find every hymn, every verse, every word and syllable of the Veda accurately counted by native scholars about five or six hundred years before Christ, guarantee the existence of the Veda, such on the whole as we now read it, as far back at least as five or six hundred years before Christ. Now, in the works of that period, the Veda is already considered, not only as an ancient, but as a sacred book; and, more than this, its language had ceased to be generally intelligible. The language of India had changed since the Veda was composed, and learned commentaries were necessary in order to explain to the people then living the true purport, nay, the proper pronunciation, of their sacred hymns. But more than this. In certain exegetical compositions, which are generally comprised under the name of Sûtras, and which are contemporary with, or even anterior to, the treatises on the theological statistics just mentioned, not only are the ancient hymns represented as invested with sacred authority, but that other class of writings, the Brâhmanas, standing half-way between the hymns and the Sûtras, have likewise been raised to the dignity of a revealed

[1] Dr. Ginsburg (*Times*, March 2, 1877) assigns the earliest known MS. of the whole O.T. (University Library, Cambridge) to the middle of the ninth century, and a fragment in the Library of St. Petersburg to the beginning of the ninth century.

literature. These Brâhmanas, you will remember, are prose treatises, written in illustration of the ancient sacrifices and of the hymns employed at them. Such treatises would only spring up when some kind of explanation began to be wanted both for the ceremonial and for the hymns to be recited at certain sacrifices, and we find, in consequence, that in many cases the authors of the Brâhmanas had already lost the power of understanding the text of the ancient hymns in its natural and grammatical meaning, and that they suggested the most absurd explanations of the various sacrificial acts, most of which we may charitably suppose had originally some rational purpose.

Thus it becomes evident that the period during which the hymns were composed must have been separated by some centuries, at least, from the period that gave birth to the Brâhmanas, in order to allow time for the hymns growing unintelligible and becoming invested with a sacred character.

Secondly, the period during which the Brâhmanas were composed must be separated by some centuries from the authors of the Sûtras, in order to allow time for further changes in the language, and more particularly for the growth of a new theology, which ascribed to the Brâhmanas the same exceptional and revealed character which the Brâhmanas themselves ascribed to the hymns. So that we want previously to 600 B.C., when every syllable of the Veda was counted, at least two strata of intellectual and literary growth, of two or three centuries each; and are thus brought to 1100 or 1200 B.C. as the earliest time when we may suppose the collec-

tion of the Vedic hymns to have been finished. This collection of hymns again contains, by its own showing, ancient and modern hymns, the hymns of the sons, together with the hymns of their fathers and earlier ancestors; so that we cannot well assign a date more recent than 1200 to 1500 before our era for the original composition of those simple hymns which up to the present day are regarded by the Brahmans with the same feelings with which a Mohammedan regards the Koran, a Jew the Old Testament, a Christian his Gospel.

That the Veda is not quite a modern forgery can be proved, however, by more tangible evidence. Hiouen-thsang, a Buddhist pilgrim, who travelled from China to India in the years 629-645, and who, in his diary translated from Chinese into French by M. Stanislas Julien, gives the names of the four Vedas, mentions some grammatical forms peculiar to the Vedic Sanskrit, and states that at his time young Brahmans spent all their time, from the seventh to the thirtieth year of their age, in learning these sacred texts. At the time when Hiouen-thsang was travelling in India, Buddhism was clearly on the decline. But Buddhism was originally a reaction against Brahmanism, and chiefly against the exclusive privileges which the Brahmans claimed, and which from the beginning were represented by them as based on their revealed writings, the Vedas, and hence beyond the reach of human attacks. Buddhism, whatever the date of its founder, became the state religion of India under Asoka, the Constantine of India, in the middle of the third century B.C. This Asoka was the third king of a new dynasty founded

by Kandragupta, the well-known contemporary of Alexander and Seleucus, about 315 B.C. The preceding dynasty was that of the Nandas, and it is under this dynasty that the traditions of the Brahmans place a number of distinguished scholars whose treatises on the Veda we still possess, such as Saunaka, Kâtyâyana, Âsvalâyana, and others. Their works, and others written with a similar object and in the same style, carry us back to about 600 B.C. This period of literature, which is called the Sûtra period, was preceded, as we saw, by another class of writings, the Brâhmanas, composed in a very prolix and tedious style, and containing lengthy lucubrations on the sacrifices and on the duties of the different classes of priests. Each of the three or four Vedas, or each of the three or four classes of priests, has its own Brâhmanas and its own Sûtras; and as the Brâhmanas are presupposed by the Sûtras, while no Sûtra is ever quoted by the Brâhmanas, it is clear that the period of the Brâhmana literature must have preceded the period of the Sûtra literature. There are, however, old and new Brâhmanas, and there are in the Brâhmanas themselves long lists of teachers who handed down old Brâhmanas or composed new ones, so that it seems impossible to accommodate the whole of that literature in less than two centuries, from about 800 to 600 B.C. Before, however, a single Brâhmana could have been composed, it was not only necessary that there should have been one collection of ancient hymns, like that contained in the ten books of the Rig-Veda, but the three or four classes of priests must have been established, the officiating priests and the choristers must have

had their special prayer-books, nay, these prayer-books must have undergone certain changes, because the Brâhmaṇas presuppose different texts, called śâkhâs, of each of these prayer-books, which are called the Yagur-Veda-Sanhitâ, the Sâma-Veda-Sanhitâ, and the Atharva-Veda-Sanhitâ. The work of collecting the prayers for the different classes of priests, and of adding new hymns and formulas for purely sacrificial purposes, belonged probably to the tenth century B.C., and three generations more would, at least, be required to account for the various readings adopted in the prayer-books by different sects, and invested with a kind of sacred authority, long before the composition of even the earliest among the Brâhmaṇas. If, therefore, the years from about 1000 to 800 B.C. are assigned to this collecting age, the time before 1000 B.C. must be set apart for the free and natural growth of what was then national and religious, but not yet sacred and sacrificial poetry. How far back this period extends it is impossible to tell; it is enough if the hymns of the Rig-Veda can be traced to a period anterior to 1000 B.C.

Much in the chronological arrangement of the three periods of Vedic literature that are supposed to have followed the period of the original growth of the hymns must of necesssity be hypothetical, and has been put forward rather to invite than to silence criticism. In order to discover truth, we must be truthful ourselves, and must welcome those who point out our errors as heartily as those who approve and confirm our discoveries. What seems, however, to speak strongly in favour of the historical character of the three periods of Vedic literature is the uni-

formity of style which marks the productions of each. In modern literature we find, at one and the same time, different styles of prose and poetry cultivated by one and the same author. A Goethe writes tragedy, comedy, satire, lyrical poetry, and scientific prose; but we find nothing like this in primitive literature. The individual is there much less prominent, and the poet's character disappears in the general character of the layer of literature to which he belongs. It is the discovery of such large layers of literature following each other in regular succession which inspires the critical historian with confidence in the truly historical character of the successive literary productions of ancient India. As in Greece there is an epic age of literature, where we should look in vain for prose or dramatic poetry; as in that country we never meet with real elegiac poetry before the end of the eighth century, nor with iambics before the same date; as even in more modern times rhymed heroic poetry appears in England with the Norman conquest, and in Germany the Minnesänger rise and set with the Swabian dynasty—so, only in a much more decided manner, we see in the ancient and spontaneous literature of India, an age of poets followed by an age of collectors and imitators, that age to be succeeded by an age of theological prose writers, and this last by an age of writers of scientific manuals. New wants produced new supplies, and nothing sprang up or was allowed to live, in prose or poetry, except what was really wanted. If the works of poets, collectors, imitators, theologians, and teachers were all mixed up together—if the Brâhmaṇas quoted the Sûtras, and the hymns alluded to the Brâhmaṇas

—an historical restoration of the Vedic literature of India would be almost an impossibility. We should suspect artificial influences, and look with small confidence on the historical character of such a literary agglomerate. But he who would question the antiquity of the Veda must explain how the layers of literature were formed that are superimposed over the original stratum of the poetry of the Rishis; he who would suspect a literary forgery must show how, when, and for what purpose the 1000 hymns of the Rig-Veda could have been forged, and have become the basis of the religious, moral, political, and literary life of the ancient inhabitants of India.

The idea of revelation, and I mean more particularly book-revelation, is not a modern idea, nor is it an idea peculiar to Christianity. Though we look for it in vain in the literature of Greece and Rome, we find the literature of India saturated with this idea from beginning to end. In no country, I believe, has the theory of revelation been so minutely elaborated as in India. The name for revelation in Sanskrit is *Sruti*, which means hearing; and this title distinguishes the Vedic hymns and, at a later time, the Brâhma*n*as also, from all other works, which, however sacred and authoritative to the Hindu mind, are admitted to have been composed by human authors. The Laws of Manu, for instance, according to the Brahmanic theology, are not revelation; they are not *Sruti*, but only Sm*r*iti, which means recollection or tradition. If these laws or any other work of authority can be proved on any point to be at variance with a single passage of the Veda, their authority is at once overruled. According to the

orthodox views of Indian theologians, not a single line of the Veda was the work of human authors. The whole Veda is in some way or other the work of the Deity; and even those who received the revelation, or, as they express it, those who saw it, were not supposed to be ordinary mortals, but beings raised above the level of common humanity, and less liable therefore to error in the reception of revealed truth. The views entertained of revelation by the orthodox theologians of India are far more minute and elaborate than those of the most extreme advocates of verbal inspiration in Europe. The human element, called paurusheyatva in Sanskrit, is driven out of every corner or hiding-place, and as the Veda is held to have existed in the mind of the Deity before the beginning of time, every allusion to historical events, of which there are not a few, is explained away with a zeal and ingenuity worthy of a better cause.

But let me state at once that there is nothing in the hymns themselves to warrant such extravagant theories. In many a hymn the author says plainly that he or his friends made it to please the gods; that he made it, as a carpenter makes a chariot (Rv. I. 130, 6; V. 2, 11), or like a beautiful vesture (Rv. V. 29, 15); that he fashioned it in his heart and kept it in his mind (Rv. I. 171, 2); that he expects, as his reward, the favour of the god whom he celebrates (Rv. I. 1, 9). But though the poets of the Veda know nothing of the artificial theories of verbal inspiration, they were not altogether unconscious of higher influences: nay, they speak of their hymns as *god-given* ('devattam,' Rv. I. 37, 4). One poet says (Rv. VI. 47, 10): 'O god (Indra),

have mercy, give me my daily bread! Sharpen my mind, like the edge of iron. Whatever I now may utter, longing for thee, do thou accept it; make me possessed of God!' Another utters for the first time the famous hymn, the Gâyatrî, which now for more than three thousand years has been the daily prayer of every Brahman, and is still repeated every morning by millions of pious worshippers: 'Let us meditate on the adorable light of the divine Creator: may he rouse our minds.'[1] This consciousness of higher influences, or of divine help in those who uttered for the first time the simple words of prayer, praise, and thanksgiving, is very different, however, from the artificial theories of verbal inspiration which we find in the later theological writings; it is, indeed, but another expression of that deep-felt dependence on the Deity, of that surrender and denial of all that seems to be self, which was felt more or less by every nation, but by none, I believe, more strongly, more constantly, than by the Indian. 'It is He that has made it'—viz. the prayer in which the soul of the poet has thrown off her burden—is but a variation of, 'It is He that has made us,' which is the key-note of all religion, whether ancient or modern, whether natural or revealed.

I must say no more to-night of what the Veda is, for I am very anxious to explain to you, as far it is possible, what I consider to be the real importance of the Veda to the student of history, to the student of religion, to the student of mankind.

[1] 'Tat Savitur varenyam bhargo devasya dhîmahi, dhiyo yo nah prakodayât.'—Colebrooke, *Miscellaneous Essays*, i. 30. Many passages bearing on this subject have been collected by Dr. Muir in the third volume of his *Sanskrit Texts*, p. 114 *seq.*

In the study of mankind there can hardly be a subject more deeply interesting than the study of the different forms of religion; and much as I value the Science of Language for the aid which it lends us in unravelling some of the most complicated tissues of the human intellect, I confess that to my mind there is no study more absorbing than that of the Religions of the World—the study, if I may so call it, of the various languages in which man has spoken to his Maker, and of that language in which his Maker 'at sundry times and in divers manners' spake to man.

To my mind the great epochs in the world's history are marked, not by the foundation or the destruction of empires, by the migrations of races, or by French revolutions. All this is outward history, made up of events that seem gigantic and overpowering to those only who cannot see beyond and beneath. The real history of man is the history of religion: the wonderful ways by which the different families of the human race advanced towards a truer knowledge and a deeper love to God. This is the foundation that underlies all profane history: it is the light, the soul, and life of history, and without it, all history would indeed be profane.

On this subject there are some excellent works in English, such as Mr. Maurice's 'Lectures on the Religions of the World,' or Mr. Hardwick's 'Christ and other Masters;' in German I need only mention Hegel's 'Philosophy of Religion,' out of many other learned treatises on the different systems of religion in the East and the West. But in all these works religions are treated very much as languages

were treated during the last century. They are rudely classed, either according to the different localities in which they prevailed, just as in Adelung's 'Mithridates' you find the languages of the world classified as European, African, American, Asiatic, &c.; or according to their age, as formerly languages used to be divided into ancient and modern; or according to their respective dignity, as languages used to be treated as sacred or profane, as classical or illiterate. Now, you know that the Science of Language has sanctioned a totally different system of classification; and that the Comparative Philologist ignores altogether the division of languages according to their real locality, or according to their age, or according to their classical or illiterate character. Languages are now classified genealogically, *i.e.* according to their real relationship; and the most important languages of Asia, Europe, and Africa—that is to say, of that part of the world on which what we call the history of man has been acted—have been grouped together into three great divisions, the Aryan or Indo-European Family, the Semitic Family, and a non-descript so-called Turanian Class. According to that division you are aware that English together with all the Teutonic languages of the Continent, Celtic, Slavonic, Greek, Latin, with its modern offshoots, such as French and Italian, Persian, and Sanskrit, are so many varieties of one common type of speech: that Sanskrit, the ancient language of the Veda, is no more distinct from the Greek of Homer, or from the Gothic of Ulfilas, or from the Anglo-Saxon of Alfred, than French is from Italian. All these languages together

form one family, one whole, in which every member shares certain features in common with all the rest, and is at the same time distinguished from the rest by certain features peculiarly its own. The same applies to the Semitic Family, which comprises, as its most important members, the Hebrew of the Old Testament, the Arabic of the Koran, and the ancient languages on the monuments of Phenicia and Carthage, of Babylon and Assyria. These languages, again, form a compact family, and differ entirely from the other family, which we called Aryan or Indo-European. The third group of languages, for we cannot call it a family, comprises most of the remaining languages of Asia, and counts among its principal members the Tungusic, Mongolic, Turkic, Samoyedic, and Finnic, and—if we are satisfied with a purely formal similarity—the languages also of Siam, the Malay Islands, Tibet, and Southern India. Lastly, the Chinese language stands by itself, as monosyllabic, the only remnant of the earliest formation of human speech.

Now, I believe that the same division which has introduced a new and natural order into the history of languages, and has enabled us to understand the growth of human speech in a manner never dreamt of in former days, will be found applicable to a scientific study of religions. I shall say nothing to-night of the Semitic or Turanian or Chinese religions, but confine my remarks to the religions of the Aryan family. These religions, though more important in the ancient history of the world, as the religions of the Greeks and Romans, of our own Teutonic ancestors, and of the Celtic and

Slavonic races, are nevertheless of great importance even at the present day. For although there are no longer any worshippers of Zeus, or Jupiter, of Wodan, Esus,[1] or Perkunas,[2] the two religions of Aryan origin which still survive, Brahmanism and Buddhism, claim together a decided majority among the inhabitants of the globe. Out of the whole population of the world,

31·2 per cent. are Buddhists,
13·4 per cent. are Brahmanists,

44·6

which together give us 44 per cent. for what may be called living Aryan religions. Of the remaining 56 per cent. 15·7 are Mohammedans, 8·7 per cent. non-descript Heathens, 30·7 per cent. Christians, and 0·3 per cent. Jews.

Now, as a scientific study of the Aryan languages became possible only after the discovery of Sanskrit, a scientific study of the Aryan religion dates really from the discovery of the Veda. The study of Sanskrit brought to light the original documents of three religions, the Sacred Books of the Brahmans, the Sacred Books of the Magians, the followers of Zoroaster, and the Sacred Books of the Buddhists. Fifty years ago, these three collections of

[1] Mommsen, *Inscriptiones Helveticae*, 40. Becker, 'Die inschriftlichen Überreste der Keltischen Sprache,' in *Beiträge zur vergleichenden Sprachforschung*, vol. iii. p. 341. Lucan, *Phars.* i. 445, 'horrensque feris altaribus Hesus.'

[2] *Cf.* G. Bühler, 'Über Parjanya,' in Benfey's *Orient und Occident*, vol. i. p. 214. In the Old Irish, *arg*, a drop, has been pointed out as derived from the same root as par*g*anya.

sacred writings were all but unknown, their very existence was doubted, and there was not a single scholar who could have correctly translated a line of the Veda, a line of the Avesta, or a line of the Buddhist Tripitaka. At present large portions of these, the canonical writings of the most ancient and most important religions of the Aryan race, are published and deciphered, and we begin to see a natural progress, and almost a logical necessity, in the growth of these three systems of worship. The oldest, most primitive, most simple form of Aryan faith finds its expression in the Veda. The Zend-Avesta represents in its language, as well as in its thoughts, a branching off from that more primitive stem; a more or less conscious opposition to the worship of the gods of nature, as adored in the Veda, and a striving after a more spiritual, supreme, moral deity, such as Zoroaster proclaimed under the name of Ahura mazda, or Ormuzd. Buddhism, lastly, marks a decided schism, a decided antagonism against the established religion of the Brahmans, a denial of the true divinity of the Vedic gods, and a proclamation of new philosophical and social doctrines.

Without the Veda, therefore, neither the reforms of Zoroaster nor the new teaching of Buddha would have been intelligible: we should not know what was behind them, or what forces impelled Zoroaster and Buddha to the founding of new religions—how much they received, how much they destroyed, how much they created. Take but one word in the religious phraseology of these three systems. In the Veda the gods are called Deva. This word in Sanskrit means bright—brightness or light being one of the most

general attributes shared by the various manifestations of the Deity, invoked in the Veda, as Sun, or Sky, or Fire, or Dawn, or Storm. We can see, in fact, how in the minds of the poets of the Veda, deva, from meaning bright, came gradually to mean divine. In the Zend-Avesta the same word daêva means evil spirit. Many of the Vedic gods, with Indra at their head, have been degraded to the position of daêvas, in order to make room for Ahura-mazda, the Wise Spirit, as the supreme deity of the Zoroastrians. In his confession of faith the follower of Zoroaster declares: 'I cease to be a worshipper of the daêvas.' In Buddhism, again, we find these ancient Devas, Indra and the rest, as merely legendary beings, often carried about at shows, as servants of Buddha, as goblins or fabulous heroes; but no longer either worshipped or even feared by those with whom the name of Deva had lost every trace of its original meaning. Thus this one word Deva marks the mutual relations of these three religions. But more than this. The same word deva is the Latin deus, thus pointing to that common source of language and religion, far beyond the heights of the Vedic Olympus, from which the Romans, as well as the Hindus, draw the names of their deities, and the elements of their language as well as of their religion.

The Veda, by its language and its thoughts, supplies that distant background in the history of all the religions of the Aryan race, which was missed, indeed, by every careful observer, but which formerly could be supplied by guess-work only. How the Persians came to worship Ormuzd, how the Buddhists came to protest against temples and sacrifices, how Zeus and

the Olympian gods came to be what they are in the mind of Homer, or how such beings as Jupiter and Mars came to be worshipped by the Italian peasant—all these questions, which used to yield material for endless and baseless speculations, can now be answered by a simple reference to the hymns of the Veda.

The religion of the Veda is not the source of all the other religions of the Aryan world, nor is Sanskrit the mother of all the Aryan languages. Sanskrit, as compared to Greek and Latin, is an elder sister, not a parent: Sanskrit is the earliest deposit of Aryan speech, as the Veda is the earliest deposit of Aryan faith. But the religion and incipient mythology of the Veda possess the same simplicity and transparency which distinguish the grammar of Sanskrit from Greek, Latin, or German grammar. We can watch in the Veda ideas and their names growing, which in Persia, Greece, and Rome we meet with only as full-grown or as fast decaying. We get one step nearer to that distant source of religious thought and language which has fed the different national streams of Persia, Greece, Rome, and Germany; and we begin to see clearly, what ought never to have been doubted, that there is no religion without God, or, as St. Augustine expressed it, that 'there is no false religion which does not contain some elements of truth.'

I do not wish by what I have said to raise any exaggerated expectations as to the worth of these ancient hymns of the Veda, and the character of that religion which they indicate rather than fully describe. The historical importance of the Veda can hardly be exaggerated, but its intrinsic merit, and particularly the beauty or elevation of its sentiments,

have by many been rated far too high. Large numbers of the Vedic hymns are childish in the extreme: tedious, low, commonplace. The gods are constantly invoked to protect their worshippers, to grant them food, large flocks, large families, and a long life; for all which benefits they are to be rewarded by the praises and sacrifices offered day after day, or at certain seasons of the year. But hidden in this rubbish there are precious stones. Only in order to appreciate them justly, we must try to divest ourselves entirely of the common notions about polytheism and idolatry, so repugnant not only to our feelings, but to our understanding. No doubt, if we must employ technical terms, the religion of the Veda is polytheism, not monotheism. Deities are invoked by different names, some clear and intelligible, such as Agni, fire; Sûrya, the sun; Ushas, dawn; Maruts, the storms; Prithivî, the earth; Âp, the waters; Nadî, the rivers: others, mere proper names, such as Varuna, Mitra, Indra or Aditi, which disclose but dimly their original application to the great aspects of nature, the sky, the sun, the day. But whenever one of these individual gods is invoked, they are not conceived as limited by the powers of others, as superior or inferior in rank. Each god is to the mind of the supplicant as good as all gods. He is felt, at the time, as a real divinity—as supreme and absolute—without a suspicion of those limitations which, to our mind, a plurality of gods *must* entail on every single god. All the rest disappear for a moment from the vision of the poet, and he only who is to fulfil their desires stands in full light before the eyes of the worshippers. In one hymn,

ascribed to Manu, the poet says: 'Among you, O gods, there is none that is small, none that is young; you are all great indeed.' And this is, indeed, the key-note of the ancient Aryan worship. Yet it would be easy to find in the numerous hymns of the Veda passages in which almost every important deity is represented as supreme and absolute. Thus in one hymn, Agni (fire) is called 'the ruler of the universe,' 'the lord of men,' 'the wise king, the father, the brother, the son, the friend of man;' nay, all the powers and names of the other gods are distinctly ascribed to Agni. But though Agni is thus highly exalted, nothing is said to disparage the divine character of the other gods. In another hymn another god, Indra, is said to be greater than all: 'The gods,' it is said, 'do not reach thee, Indra, nor men; thou overcomest all creatures in strength.' Another god, Soma, is called the king of the world, the king of heaven and earth, the conqueror of all. And what more could human language achieve, in trying to express the idea of a divine and supreme power, than what another poet says of another god, Varuṇa: 'Thou art lord of all, of heaven and earth; thou art the king of all, of those who are gods, and of those who are men'?

This surely is not what is commonly understood by polytheism. Yet it would be equally wrong to call it *monotheism*. If we must have a name for it, I should call it *Kathenotheism*, or simply *Henotheism—i.e.* a belief in single gods. The consciousness that all the deities are but different names of one and the same godhead breaks forth, indeed, here and there in the Veda. But it is far from being general.

One poet, for instance, says (Rv. I. 164, 46): 'They call him Indra, Mitra, Varuna, Agni; then he is the beautifully-winged heavenly Garutmat: that which is One the wise call it in divers manners: they call it Agni, Yama, Mâtarisvan.' And again, Rv. X. 114, 5: 'Wise poets make the beautifully-winged, though he is one, manifold by words.'

I shall read you a few Vedic verses in which the religious sentiment predominates, and in which we perceive a yearning after truth, and after the true God, untrammeled as yet by any names or any traditions (Rv. X. 121)[1]:

1. In the beginning there arose Hiraṇyagarbha (the golden child). He was the one born lord of all that is. He stablished the earth and this sky;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

2. He who gives breath, He who gives strength; whose command all the bright gods revere; whose shadow is immortality, whose shadow is death;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

3. He who through his power became the sole king of the breathing and slumbering world;—He who gŏverns all, man and beast;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

4. He through whose greatness these snowy mountains are, and the sea, they say, with the distant river (the Raṣâ)—He of whom these regions are the two arms;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

5. He through whom the sky is bright and the earth firm—He through whom the heaven was

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 569.

stablished—nay, the highest heaven—He who measured out the space in the sky;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

6. He to whom heaven and earth,[1] standing firm by His will, look up, trembling in their mind—He over whom the rising sun shines forth;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

7. When the great waters went everywhere, holding the seed and generating the fire, thence arose He who is the sole life of the bright gods;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

8. He who by His might looked even over the waters which held power and generated the sacrificial fire, He who alone is God above all gods;[2]—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?

9. May He not hurt us—He who is the creator of the earth; or He, the righteous, who created the heaven; He who also created the bright and mighty waters;—Who is the God to whom we shall offer our sacrifice?[3]

The following may serve as specimens of hymns addressed to individual deities whose names have become the centres of religious thought and legendary traditions; deities, in fact, like Jupiter, Apollo, Mars, or Minerva, no longer mere germs, but fully developed forms of early religious thought and language:

[1] Read rodasî for krandasî.

[2] τὸν ἐπὶ πᾶσι θεόν, *cf.* Froude, 'Celsus,' in *Fraser's Magazine*, 1878, p. 131.

[3] A last verse is added, which entirely spoils the poetical beauty and the whole character of the hymn. Its later origin seems to have struck even native critics, for the author of the Pada text did not receive it. 'O Praǵâpati, no other than thou hast embraced all these created things; may what we desired when we called on thee be granted to us, may we be lords of riches.'

Hymn to Indra (Rv. I. 53)[1].

1. Keep silence well[2]! we offer praises to the great Indra in the house of the sacrificer. Does he

[1] I subjoin for some of the hymns here translated, the translation of the late Professor Wilson, in order to show what kind of difference there is between the traditional rendering of the Vedic hymns, as adopted by him, and their interpretation according to the rules of modern scholarship:—

1. We ever offer fitting praise to the mighty Indra, in the dwelling of the worshipper, by which he (the deity) has quickly acquired riches, as (a thief) hastily carries (off the property) of the sleeping. Praise ill expressed is not valued among the munificent.

2. Thou, Indra, art the giver of horses, of cattle, of barley, the master and protector of wealth, the foremost in liberality, (the being) of many days; thou disappointest not desires (addressed to thee); thou art a friend to our friends: such an Indra we praise.

3. Wise and resplendent Indra, the achiever of great deeds, the riches that are spread around are known to be thine: having collected them, victor (over thy enemies), bring them to us: disappoint not the expectation of the worshipper who trusts in thee.

4. Propitiated by these offerings, by these libations, dispel poverty with cattle and horses: may we, subduing our adversary, and relieved from enemies by Indra, (pleased) by our libations, enjoy together abundant food.

5. Indra, may we become possessed of riches, and of food; and with energies agreeable to many, and shining around, may we prosper through thy divine favour, the source of prowess, of cattle, and of horses.

6. Those who were thy allies, (the Maruts,) brought thee joy: protector of the pious, those libations and oblations (that were offered thee on slaying Vritra) yielded thee delight, when thou, unimpeded by foes, didst destroy the ten thousand obstacles opposed to him who praised thee and offered thee libations.

7. Humiliator (of adversaries), thou goest from battle to battle, and destroyest by thy might city after city: with thy foe-prostrating associate (the thunderbolt), thou, Indra, didst slay afar off the deceiver named Namuki.

8. Thou hast slain Karañga and Parnaya with thy bright gleaming spear, in the cause of Atithigva: unaided, thou didst demolish the hundred cities of Vangrida, when besieged by *Rigis*van.

[2] Favete linguis.

find treasure for those who are like sleepers? Mean praise is not valued among the munificent.

2. Thou art the giver of horses, Indra, thou art the giver of cows, the giver of corn, the strong lord of wealth: the old guide of man, disappointing no desires, a friend to friends:—to him we address this song.

3. O powerful Indra, achiever of many works, most brilliant god—all this wealth around here is known to be thine alone: take from it, conqueror, bring it hither. Do not stint the desire of the worshipper who longs for thee!

4. On these days thou art gracious, and on these nights [1], keeping off the enemy from our cows and from our stud. Tearing [2] the fiend night after night with the help of Indra, let us rejoice in food, freed from haters.

5. Let us rejoice, Indra, in treasure and food, in wealth of manifold delight and splendour. Let us rejoice in the blessing of the gods, which gives us the strength of offspring, gives us cows first and horses.

6. These draughts inspired thee, O lord of the

9. Thou, renowned Indra, overthrewest by thy not-to-be-overtaken chariot-wheel, the twenty kings of men, who had come against Suśravas, unaided, and their sixty thousand and ninety and nine followers.

10. Thou, Indra, hast preserved Suśravas by thy succour, Tûrvayâṇa by thy assistance: thou hast made Kutsa, Atithigva and Âyu subject to the mighty, though youthful Suśravas.

11. Protected by the gods, we remain, Indra, at the close of the sacrifice, thy most fortunate friends: we praise thee, as enjoying through thee excellent offspring, and a long and prosperous life.

[1] Cf. Rv. I. 112, 25, 'dyúbhir aktúbhiḥ,' by day and by night; also Rv. III. 31, 16. M. M., *Todtenbestattung*, p. v.

[2] Professor Benfey reads durayantaḥ, but all MSS. that I know, without exception, read darayantaḥ.

brave! these were vigour, these libations, in battles, when for the sake of the poet, the sacrificer, thou struckest down irresistibly ten thousands of enemies.

7. From battle to battle [1] thou advancest bravely, from town to town thou destroyest all this with might, when thou, Indra, with Nâmî as thy friend, struckest down from afar the deceiver Namuki.

8. Thou hast slain Karañga and Parnaya with the brightest spear of Atithigva. Without a helper thou didst demolish the hundred cities of Vangrida, which were besieged by *Rig*isvan.

9. Thou hast felled down with the heavy chariot-wheel these twenty kings of men, who had attacked the friendless Susravas [2], and gloriously the sixty thousand and ninety-nine forts.

10. Thou, Indra, hast succoured Susravas with thy succours, Tûrvayâna with thy protections. Thou hast made Kutsa, Atithigva, and Âyu subject to this mighty youthful king.

11. We who in future, protected by the gods, wish to be thy most blessed friends, we shall praise thee, blessed by thee with offspring, and enjoying henceforth a longer life.

The next hymn is one of many addressed to Agni as the god of fire, not only the fire as a powerful element, but likewise the fire of the hearth and the altar, the guardian of the house, the minister of the sacrifice, the messenger between gods and men: —

[1] For a different translation see Roth, in *Deutsche Monatsschrift*, p. 89.

[2] See Spiegel, *Erân*, p. 269, on Khai Khosru = Susravas; Grassmann, in Kuhn's *Zeitschrift*, xvi. p. 106.

Hymn to Agni (Rv. II. 6).

1. Agni, accept this log which I offer to thee, accept this my service; listen well to these my songs.

2. With this log, O Agni, may we worship thee, thou son of strength, conqueror of horses! and with this hymn, thou high-born!

3. May we, thy servants, serve thee with songs, O granter of riches, thou who lovest songs and delightest in riches.

4. Thou lord of wealth and giver of wealth, be thou wise and powerful; drive away from us the enemies!

5. He gives us rain from heaven, he gives us inviolable strength, he gives us food a thousandfold.

6. Youngest of the gods, their messenger, their invoker, most deserving of worship, come, at our praise, to him who worships thee and longs for thy help.

7. For thou, O sage, goest wisely between these two creations (heaven and earth, gods and men), like a friendly messenger between two hamlets.

8. Thou art wise, and thou hast been pleased: perform thou, intelligent Agni, the sacrifice without interruption, sit down on this sacred grass!

The following hymn, partly laudatory, partly deprecatory, is addressed to the Maruts or Rudras, the Storm-gods:

Hymn to the Maruts (Rv. 1 39).[1]

1. When you thus from afar cast forward your

[1] Professor Wilson translates as follows:—

1. When, Maruts, who make (all things) tremble, you direct your awful (vigour) downwards from afar, as light (descends from heaven)

measure, like a blast of fire, through whose wisdom is it, through whose design? To whom do you go, to whom, ye shakers (of the earth)?

2. May your weapons be firm to attack, strong also to withstand! May yours be the more glorious strength, not that of the deceitful mortal!

3. When you overthrow what is firm, O ye men, and whirl about what is heavy, ye pass through the trees of the earth, through the clefts of the rocks.

4. No real foe of yours is known in heaven, nor in earth, ye devourers of enemies! May strength be yours, together with your race, O Rudras, to defy even now.

by whose worship, by whose praise (are you attracted)? To what (place of sacrifice), to whom, indeed, do you repair?

2. Strong be your weapons for driving away (your) foes, firm in resisting them: yours be the strength that merits praise, not (the strength) of a treacherous mortal.

3. Directing Maruts, when you demolish what is stable, when you scatter what is ponderous, then you make your way through the forest (trees) of the earth and the defiles of the mountains.

4. Destroyers of foes, no adversary of yours is known above the heavens, nor (is any) upon earth: may your collective strength be quickly exerted, sons of Rudra, to humble (your enemies).

5. They make the mountains tremble, they drive apart the forest trees. Go, divine Maruts, whither you will, with all your progeny, like those intoxicated.

6. You have harnessed the spotted deer to your chariot; the red deer yoked between them, (aids to) drag the car: the firmament listens for your coming, and men are alarmed.

7. Rudras, we have recourse to your assistance for the sake of our progeny: come quickly to the timid Kanva, as you formerly came, for our protection.

8. Should any adversary, instigated by you, or by man, assail us, withhold from him food and strength and your assistance.

9. Praketasas, who are to be unreservedly worshipped, uphold (the sacrificer) Kanva: come to us, Maruts, with undivided protective assistances, as the lightnings (bring) the rain.

10. Bounteous givers, you enjoy unimpaired vigour: shakers (of the earth), you possess undiminished strength: Maruts, let loose your anger, like an arrow, upon the wrathful enemy of the Rishis.

5. They make the rocks to tremble, they tear asunder the kings of the forest. Come on, Maruts, like madmen, ye gods, with your whole tribe.

6. You have harnessed the spotted deer to your chariots, a red deer draws as leader. Even the earth listened at your approach, and men were frightened.

7. O Rudras, we quickly desire your help for our race. Come now to us with help, as of yore, thus for the sake of the frightened Kanva.

8. Whatever fiend, roused by you or roused by mortals, attacks us, tear him (from us) by your power, by your strength, by your aid.

9. For you, worshipful and wise, have wholly protected Kanva. Come to us, Maruts, with your whole help, as quickly as lightnings come after the rain.

10. Bounteous givers, ye possess whole strength, whole power, ye shakers (of the earth). Send, O Maruts, against the proud enemy of the poets an enemy, like an arrow.

The following is a simple prayer addressed to the Dawn:—

HYMN TO USHAS (RV. VII. 77).

1. She shines upon us, like a young wife, rousing every living being to go to his work. When the fire had to be kindled by men, she made the light by striking down darkness.

2. She rose up, spreading far and wide, and moving everywhere. She grew in brightness, wearing her brilliant garment. The mother of the cows (the mornings), the leader of the days, she shone gold-coloured, lovely to behold.

3. She, the fortunate, who brings the eye of the gods, who leads the white and lovely steed (of the sun), the Dawn was seen revealed by her rays, with brilliant treasures, following every one.

4. Thou who art a blessing where thou art near, drive far away the unfriendly; make the pasture wide, give us safety! Scatter the enemy, bring riches! Raise up wealth to the worshipper, thou mighty Dawn.

5. Shine for us with thy best rays, thou bright Dawn, thou who lengthenest our life, thou the love of all, who givest us food, who givest us wealth in cows, horses, and chariots.

6. Thou daughter of the sky, thou high-born Dawn, whom the Vasish*th*as magnify with songs, give us riches high and wide: all ye gods protect us always with your blessings.

I must confine myself to shorter extracts in order to be able to show to you that all the principal elements of real religion are present in the Veda. I remind you again that the Veda contains a great deal of what is childish and foolish, though very little of what is bad and objectionable. Some of its poets ascribe to the gods sentiments and passions unworthy of the deity, such as anger, revenge, delight in material sacrifices; they likewise represent human nature on a low level of selfishness and worldliness. Many hymns are utterly unmeaning and insipid, and we must search patiently before we meet, here and there, with sentiments that come from the depth of the soul, and with prayers in which we could join ourselves. Yet there are such passages, and they are

the really important passages, as marking the highest points to which the religious life of the ancient poets of India had reached; and it is to these that I shall now call your attention.

First of all, the religion of the Veda knows of no idols. The worship of idols in India is a secondary formation, a later degradation of the more primitive worship of ideal gods.

The gods of the Veda are conceived as immortal. Passages in which the birth of certain gods is mentioned have a physical meaning: they refer to the birth of the day, the rising of the sun, the return of the year.

The gods are supposed to dwell in heaven, though several of them, as, for instance, Agni, the god of fire, are represented as living among men, or as approaching the sacrifice, and listening to the praises of their worshippers.

Heaven and earth are believed to have been made or to have been established by certain gods. Elaborate theories of creation, which abound in the later works, the Brâhmaṇas, are not to be found as yet in the hymns. What do we find are such passages as—

'Agni held the earth, he stablished the heaven by truthful words' (Rv. I. 67, 3).

'Varuṇa stemmed asunder the wide firmaments; he lifted on high the bright and glorious heaven; he stretched out apart the starry sky and the earth' (Rv. VII. 86, 1).

More frequently, however, the poets confess their ignorance of the beginning of all things, and one of them exclaims:—

'Who has seen the first-born? Where was the

life, the blood, the soul of the world? Who went to ask this from any that knew it?' (Rv. I. 164, 4).[1]

Or again, Rv. X. 81, 4: 'What was the forest, what was the tree (ὕλη) out of which they shaped heaven and earth? Wise men, ask this indeed in your mind, on what he stood when he held the worlds?'

I now come to a more important subject. We find in the Veda, what few would have expected to find there, the two ideas, so contradictory to the human understanding, and yet so easily reconciled in every human heart: God has established the eternal laws of right and wrong, he punishes sin and rewards virtue, and yet the same God is willing to forgive; just, yet merciful; a judge, and yet a father. Consider, for instance, the following lines, Rv. I. 41, 4: 'His path is easy and without thorns, who does what is right.'

And again, Rv. I. 41, 9: 'Let man fear Him who holds the four (dice), before he throws them down (*i.e.* God who holds the destinies of men in his hand); let no man delight in evil words!'

And then consider the following hymns, and imagine the feelings which alone could have prompted them:—

HYMN TO VARUṆA (RV. VII. 89).

1. Let me not yet, O Varuṇa, enter into the house of earth; have mercy, almighty, have mercy!

2. If I move along trembling, like a cloud driven by the wind; have mercy, almighty, have mercy!

3. Through want of strength, thou strong and

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 20, note.

bright god, have I gone astray; have mercy, almighty, have mercy!

4. Thirst came upon the worshipper, though he stood in the midst of the waters; have mercy, almighty, have mercy!

5. Whenever we men, O Varuna, commit an offence before the heavenly host, whenever we break the law through thoughtlessness; punish us not, O god, for that offence.

And again, Rv. VII. 86:[1]—

1. Wise and mighty are the works of him who stemmed asunder the wide firmaments (heaven and earth). He lifted on high the bright and glorious heaven; he stretched out apart the starry sky and the earth.

2. Do I say this to my own self? How can I get near unto Varuna? Will he accept my offering without displeasure? When shall I, with a quiet mind, see him propitiated?

3. I ask, O Varuna, wishing to know this my sin. I go to ask the wise. The sages all tell me the same: Varuna it is who is angry with thee.

4. Was it an old sin, O Varuna, that thou wishest to destroy thy friend, who always praises thee? Tell me, thou unconquerable Lord, and I will quickly turn to thee with praise, freed from sin.

5. Absolve us from the sins of our fathers, and from those which we committed with our own bodies. Release Vasishtha, O king, like a thief who has feasted on stolen oxen; release him like a calf from the rope.

6. It was not our own doing, O Varuna, it was a slip, an intoxicating draught, passion, dice, thought-

[1] See *Introduction to the Science of Religion*, p. 233.

lessness. The old is there to mislead the young; even sleep is not free from mischief.

7. Let me, freed from sin, do service to the angry god, like a slave to his lord.[1] The lord god enlightened the foolish; he, the wisest, leads his worshipper to wealth.

8. O lord Varuna, may this song go well to thy heart! May we prosper in acquiring and keeping! Protect us, O gods, always with your blessings!

The consciousness of sin is a prominent feature in the religion of the Veda; so is likewise the belief that the gods are able to take away from man the heavy burden of his sins. And when we read such passages as 'Varuna is merciful even to him who has committed sin' (Rv. VII. 87, 7), we should surely not allow the strange name of Varuna to jar on our ears, but should remember that it is but one of the many names which men invented in their helplessness to express their ideas of the Deity, however partial and imperfect.

The next hymn, which is taken from the Atharva-Veda (IV. 16), will show how near the language of the ancient poets of India may approach to the language of the Bible:[2]—

1. The great lord of these worlds sees as if he were near. If a man thinks he is walking by stealth, the gods know it all.

2. If a man stands or walks or hides, if he goes

[1] Benfey, *Nachrichten*, 1874, p. 370.

[2] This hymn was first pointed out by Professor Roth in a dissertation on the Atharva-Veda (Tübingen, 1856), and it has since been translated and annotated by Dr. Muir, in his article on the *Vedic Theogony and Cosmogony*, p. 31.

to lie down or to get up, what two people sitting together whisper, King Varuṇa knows it, he is there as the third.

3. This earth, too, belongs to Varuṇa, the king, and this wide sky with its ends far apart. The two seas (the sky and the ocean) are Varuṇa's loins; he is also contained in this small drop of water.

4. He who should flee far beyond the sky, even he would not be rid of Varuṇa, the king. His spies proceed from heaven towards this world; with thousand eyes they overlook this earth.

5. King Varuṇa sees all this, what is between heaven and earth, and what is beyond. He has counted the twinklings of the eyes of men. As a player throws the dice, he settles all things.

6. May all thy fatal nooses, which stand spread out seven by seven and threefold, catch the man who tells a lie; may they pass by him who speaks the truth.

Another idea which we find in the Veda is that of faith: not only in the sense of trust in the gods, in their power, their protection, their kindness, but in that of belief in their existence. The Latin word *credo*, I believe, is the same as the Sanskrit śraddhâ, and this śraddhâ occurs in the Veda:—

Rv. I. 102, 2. 'Sun and moon go on in regular succession, that we may see, Indra, and believe.'

Rv. I. 104, 6. 'Destroy not our future offspring, O Indra, for we have believed in thy great power.'

Rv. I. 55, 5. 'When Indra hurls again and again his thunderbolt, then they believe in the brilliant god.'[1]

[1] During violent thunderstorms the natives of New Holland are so afraid of War-ru-gu-ra, the evil spirit, that they seek shelter even in caves haunted by Ingnas, subordinate demons, which at

A similar sentiment—namely, that men only believe in the gods when they see their signs and wonders in the sky—is expressed by another poet (Rv. VIII. 21, 14):—

'Thou, Indra, never findest a rich man to be thy friend; wine-swillers despise thee. But when thou thunderest, when thou gatherest (the clouds), then thou art called like a father.'

And with this belief in god, there is also coupled that doubt, that true disbelief, if we may so call it, which is meant to give to faith its real strength. We find passages even in these early hymns where the poet asks himself whether there is really such a god as Indra—a question immediately succeeded by an answer, as if given to the poet by Indra himself. Thus we read Rv. VIII. 100, 3:—

'If you wish for strength, offer to Indra a hymn of praise: a true hymn, if Indra truly exist; for some one says, Indra does not exist! Who has seen him? Whom shall we praise?'

Then Indra answers through the poet:—

'Here I am, O worshipper, behold me here! in might I surpass all things.'

Similar visions occur elsewhere, where the poet, after inviting a god to a sacrifice, or imploring his pardon for his offences, suddenly exclaims that he has seen the god, and that he feels that his prayer is granted. For instance:—

other times they would enter on no account. There, in silent terror, they prostrate themselves with their faces to the ground, waiting until the spirit, having expended his fury, shall retire to Uta (hell) without having discovered their hiding-place.—*Transactions of Ethnological Society*, vol. iii. p. 229. Oldfield, *The Aborigines of Australia.*

HYMN TO VARUṆA (RV. I. 25).

1. However we break thy laws from day to day, men as we are, O god, Varuṇa,

2. Do not deliver us unto death, nor to the blow of the furious; nor to the wrath of the spiteful!

3. To propitiate thee, O Varuṇa, we unbend thy mind with songs, as the charioteer (unties) a weary steed.

4. Away from me they flee dispirited, intent only on gaining wealth; as birds to their nests.

5. When shall we bring hither the man, who is victory to the warriors; when shall we bring Varuṇa, the wide-seeing, to be propitiated?

[6. They (Mitra and Varuṇa) take this in common; gracious, they never fail the faithful giver.]

7. He who knows the place of the birds that fly through the sky, who on the waters knows the ships;—

8. He, the upholder of order, who knows the twelve months with the offspring of each, and knows the month that is engendered afterwards;—

9. He who knows the track of the wind, of the wide, the bright, the mighty; and knows those who reside on high;—

10. He, the upholder of order, Varuṇa, sits down among his people; he, the wise, sits there to govern.

11. From thence perceiving all wondrous things, he sees what has been and what will be done.

12. May he, the wise Âditya, make our paths straight all our days; may he prolong our lives!

13. Varuṇa, wearing golden mail, has put on his shining cloak; the spies sat down around him.

14. The god whom the scoffers do not provoke,

nor the tormentors of men, nor the plotters of mischief;—

15. He, who gives to men glory, and not half glory, who gives it even to our own selves;—

16. Yearning for him, the far-seeing, my thoughts move onwards, as kine move to their pastures.

17. Let us speak together again, because my honey has been brought: that thou mayst eat what thou likest, like a friend.[1]

18. Did I see the god who is to be seen by all, did I see the chariot above the earth? He must have accepted my prayers.

19. O hear this my calling, Varuna, be gracious now; longing for help, I have called upon thee.

20. Thou, O wise god, art lord of all, of heaven and earth: listen on thy way.

21. That I may live, take from me the upper rope, loose the middle, and remove the lowest!

In conclusion, let me tell you that there is in the Vedic hymns no trace of *metempsychosis* or that transmigration of souls from human to animal bodies which is generally supposed to be a distinguishing feature of Indian religion. Instead of this, we find what is really the *sine quâ non* of all real religion, a belief in immortality, and in personal immortality.[2]

[1] See Bollensen, in *Orient und Occident*, ii. p. 147. One might read hotrâ-iva, 'because honey has been brought by me, as by a priest, sweet to taste.'

[2] Acts xxii. 30; xxiii. 6. Lessing (vol. xi. p. 63, ed. Lachmann) says: 'Without faith in a future life, a future reward and punishment, no religion could exist;' and he adds: 'We must either deny the Gentiles all religion, or admit that they, too, had that faith.' Schopenhauer, *Paral.* i. p. 137, says: 'The real religion of the Jews, as it is represented and taught in Genesis and in all the historical books to

Without a belief in personal immortality, religion surely is like an arch resting on one pillar, like a bridge ending in an abyss. We cannot wonder at the great difficulties felt and expressed by Bishop Warburton and other eminent divines with regard to the supposed total absence of the doctrine of immortality or personal immortality in the Old Testament; and it is equally startling that the Sadducees, who sat in the same council with the high-priest, openly denied the resurrection.[1] However, though not expressly asserted anywhere, a belief in personal immortality is taken for granted in several passages of the Old Testament, and we can hardly think of Abraham or Moses as without a belief in life and immortality. But while this difficulty, so keenly felt with regard to the Jewish religion, ought to make us careful in the judgments which we form of other religions, and teach us the wisdom of charitable interpretation, it is all the more important to mark that in the Veda passages occur where immortality of the soul, personal immortality and personal responsibility after death, are clearly proclaimed. Thus we read:—

'He who gives alms goes to the highest place in heaven; he goes to the gods' (Rv. I. 125, 56).

Another poet, after rebuking those who are rich and do not communicate, says:—

'The kind mortal is greater than the great in heaven!'

the end of Chronicles, is the rudest of all religions, because the only one which has no doctrine of immortality at all, nor any trace of it.'

[1] Acts xxii. 30, xxiii. 6.

Even the idea, so frequent in the later literature of the Brahmans, that immortality is secured by a son, seems implied, unless our translation deceives us, in one passage of the Veda, VII. 56, 24:

'Asmé (íti) vîráh marutah sushmí astu
Gánânâm yáh ásurah vi dhartâ,
Apáh yéna su-kshitáye tárema,
Ádha svám ókah abhí vah syâma.'

'O Maruts, may there be to us a strong son, who is a living ruler of men: through whom we may cross the waters on our way to the happy abode; then may we come to your own house!'

One poet prays that he may see again his father and mother after death (Rv. I. 24, 1); and the fathers (Pitris) are invoked almost like gods, oblations are offered to them, and they are believed to enjoy, in company with the gods, a life of never-ending felicity (Rv. X. 15, 16).

We find this prayer addressed to Soma (Rv. IX. 113, 7):—

'Where there is eternal light, in the world where the sun is placed, in that immortal imperishable world place me, O Soma!

'Where king Vaivasvata reigns, where the secret place of heaven is, where these mighty waters are, there make me immortal!

'Where life is free, in the third heaven of heavens, where the worlds are radiant, there make me immortal!

'Where wishes and desires are, where the bowl of the bright Soma is, where there is food and rejoicing, there make me immortal!

'Where there is happiness and delight, where joy and pleasure reside, where the desires of our desire are attained, there make me immortal!'[1]

Whether the old Rishis believed likewise in a place of punishment for the wicked is more doubtful, though vague allusions to it occur in the Rig-Veda, and more distinct descriptions are found in the Atharva-Veda. In one verse it is said that the dead is rewarded for his good deeds, that he leaves or casts off all evil, and glorified takes his new body (Rv. X. 14, 8).[2] The dogs of Yama, the king of the departed, present some terrible aspects, and Yama is asked to protect the departed from them (Rv. X. 14, 11). Again, a pit (karta) is mentioned into which the lawless are said to be hurled down (Rv. IX. 73, 8), and into which Indra casts those who offer no sacrifices (Rv. I. 121, 13). One poet prays that the Âdityas may preserve him from the destroying wolf, and from falling into the pit (Rv. II. 29, 6). In one passage we read that 'those who break the commandments of Varuna and who speak lies are born for that deep place' (Rv. IV. 5, 5).[3]

[1] Professor Roth, after quoting several passages from the Veda in which a belief in immortality is expressed, remarks with great truth: 'We here find, not without astonishment, beautiful conceptions on immortality expressed in unadorned language with child-like conviction. If it were necessary, we might here find the most powerful weapons against the view which has lately been revived, and proclaimed as new, that Persia was the only birthplace of the idea of immortality, and that even the nations of Europe had derived it from that quarter. As if the religious spirit of every gifted race was not able to arrive at it by its own strength.'—(*Journal of the German Oriental Society*, vol. iv. p. 427). See Dr. Muir's article on Yama, in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, p. 10.

[2] M. M., 'Die Todtenbestattung bei den Brahmanen,' *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft*, vol. ix. p. xii.

[3] Dr. Muir, article on Yama, p. 18.

Surely the discovery of a religion like this, as unexpected as the discovery of the jaw-bone of Abbeville, deserves to arrest our thoughts for a moment, even in the haste and hurry of this busy life. No doubt, for the daily wants of life the old division of religions into true and false is quite sufficient; as for practical purposes we distinguish only between our own mother-tongue on the one side and all other foreign languages on the other. But from a higher point of view it would not be right to ignore the new evidence that has come to light; and as the study of geology has given us a truer insight into the stratification of the earth, it is but natural to expect that a thoughtful study of the original works of three of the most important religions of the world, Brahmanism, Magism, and Buddhism, will modify our views as to the growth or history of religion, and as to the hidden layers of religious thought beneath the soil on which we stand. Such inquiries should be undertaken without prejudice and without fear: the evidence is placed before us; our duty is to sift it critically, to weigh it honestly, and to wait for the results.

Three of these results, to which, I believe, a comparative study of religions is sure to lead, I may state before I conclude this Lecture:—

1. We shall learn that religions in their most ancient form, or in the minds of their authors, are generally free from many of the blemishes that attach to them in later times.

2. We shall learn that there is hardly one religion which does not contain some truth, some important truth; truth sufficient to enable those who seek the

Lord and feel after Him to find Him in their hour of need.

3. We shall learn to appreciate better than ever what we have in our own religion. No one who has not examined patiently and honestly the other religions of the world can know what Christianity really is, or can join with such truth and sincerity in the words of St. Paul: 'I am not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ.'

XV.

BUDDHISM.[1]

If the words of St. Paul, 'Prove all things, hold fast that which is good,' may be supposed to refer to spiritual things, and, more especially, to religious doctrines, it must be confessed that few only, whether theologians or laymen, have ever taken to heart the apostle's command. How many candidates for holy orders are there who could give a straightforward answer if asked to enumerate the principal religions of the world, or to state the names of their founders, and the titles of the works which are still considered by millions of human beings as the sacred authorities for their religious belief? To study such books as the Koran of the Mohammedans, the Zend-Avesta of the Parsis, the Kings of the Confucians, the Tao-te-King of the Taoists, the Vedas of the Brahmans, the Tripiṭaka of the Buddhists, the Sûtras of the Jains, or the Granth of the Sikhs, would be considered by many mere waste of time. Yet St. Paul's command is very clear and simple; and to maintain that it referred to the heresies of his own time only, or to the philosophical systems of the Greeks and

[1] *Le Bouddha et sa Religion.* Par J. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, Membre de l'Institut. Paris, 1860.

Romans, would be to narrow the horizon of the apostle's mind, and to destroy the general applicability of his teaching to all times and to all countries. Many will ask what possible good could be derived from the works of men who must have been either deceived or deceivers; nor would it be difficult to quote passages from every one of the sacred books of the world showing their utter absurdity and worthlessness. But this was not the spirit in which the apostle of the Gentiles addressed himself to the Epicureans and Stoics, nor is this the feeling with which a thoughtful Christian and a sincere believer in a divine government of the world is likely to rise from a perusal of any of the books which he knows to be or to have been the only source of spiritual light and comfort to thousands and thousands among the dwellers on earth.

Many are the advantages to be derived from a careful study of other religions, but the greatest of all is that it teaches us to appreciate more truly what we possess in our own. When do we feel the blessings of our own country more warmly and more truly than when we return from abroad? It is the same with regard to religion. Let us see what other nations have had and still have in the place of religion; let us examine the prayers, the worship, the theology even of the most highly civilised races—the Greeks, the Romans, the Hindus, the Persians—and we shall then understand more thoroughly what blessings are vouchsafed to us in being allowed to breathe from the first breath of life the pure air of a land of Christian light and knowledge. We are too apt to take the greatest blessings as matters of

course, and even religion forms no exception. We have done so little to gain our religion, we have suffered so little in the cause of truth, that, however highly we prize our own Christianity, we never prize it highly enough until we have compared it with the religions of the rest of the world.

This, however, is not the only advantage; and we think that M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire has formed too low an estimate of the benefits to be derived from a thoughtful study of the religions of mankind when he writes of Buddhism: 'Le seul, mais immense service que le Bouddhisme puisse nous rendre, c'est par son triste contraste de nous faire apprécier mieux encore la valeur inestimable de nos croyances, en nous montrant tout ce qu'il en coûte à l'humanité qui ne les partage point.' This is not all. If a knowledge of other countries and a study of the manners and customs of foreign nations teach us to appreciate what we have at home, they likewise form the best cure of that national conceit and want of sympathy with which we are too apt to look on all that is strange and foreign. The feeling which led the Hellenic races to divide the whole world into Greeks and Barbarians is so deeply engrained in human nature that not even Christianity has been able altogether to remove it. Thus when we cast our first glance into the labyrinth of the religions of the world all seems to us darkness, self-deceit, and vanity. It sounds like a degradation of the very name of religion to apply it to the wild ravings of Hindu Yogins or the blank blasphemies of Chinese Buddhists. But as we slowly and patiently wend our way through the dreary prisons, our own

eyes seem to expand, and we perceive a glimmer of light where all was darkness at first. We learn to understand the saying of one who more than anybody had a right to speak with authority on this subject, that 'there is no religion which does not contain a spark of truth.' Those who would limit the riches of God's goodness and forbearance and long-suffering, and would hand over the largest portion of the human race to inevitable perdition, have never adduced a tittle of evidence from the Gospel or from any other trustworthy source in support of so unhallowed a belief. They have generally appealed to the devilries and orgies of heathen worship; they have quoted the blasphemies of Oriental Sufis and the immoralities sanctioned by the successors of Mohammed; but they have seldom, if ever, endeavoured to discover the true and original character of the strange forms of faith and worship which they call the work of the devil. If the Indians had formed their notions of Christianity from the soldiers of Cortez and Pizarro, or if the Hindus had studied the principles of Christian morality in the lives of Clive and Warren Hastings; or, to take a less extreme case, if a Mohammedan, settled in England, were to test the practical working of Christian charity by the spirit displayed in the journals of our religious parties, their notions of Christianity would be about as correct as the ideas which thousands of educated Christians entertain of the diabolical character of heathen religions. Even Christianity has been depraved into Jesuitism and Mormonism, and if we, as Protestants, claim the right to appeal to the Gospel as the only test by which our

faith is to be judged, we must grant a similar privilege to Mohammedans and Buddhists, and to all who possess a written and, as they believe, revealed authority for the articles of their faith.

But though no one is likely to deny the necessity of studying each religion in its most ancient form and from its original documents before we venture to pronounce our verdict, the difficulties of this task are such that in them more than in anything else must be sought the cause why so few of our best thinkers and writers have devoted themselves to a critical and historical study of the religions of the world. All important religions have sprung up in the East. Their sacred books are written in Eastern tongues, and some of them are of such ancient date that those even who profess to believe in them admit that they are unable to understand them without the help of translations and commentaries. Until very lately the sacred books of three of the most important religions, those of the Brahmans, the Buddhists, and the Parsis, were totally unknown in Europe. It was one of the most important results of the study of Sanskrit, or the ancient language of India, that through it the key, not only to the sacred books of the Brahmans, the Vedas, but likewise to those of the Buddhists and Zoroastrians, was recovered. And nothing shows more strikingly the rapid progress of Sanskrit scholarship than that even Sir William Jones, whose name has still, with many, a more familiar sound than the names of Colebrooke, Burnouf, and Lassen, should have known nothing of the Vedas; that he should

never have read a line of the canonical books of the Buddhists, and that he actually expressed his belief that Buddha was the same as the Teutonic deity Wodan or Odin, and *Sâkya*, another name of Buddha, the same as Shishac, king of Egypt. The same distinguished scholar never perceived the intimate relationship between the language of the Zend-Avesta and Sanskrit, and he declared the whole of the Zoroastrian writings to be modern forgeries.

Even at present we are not yet in possession of a complete edition, much less of any trustworthy translation, of all the Vedas; we only possess the originals of a few books of the Buddhist canon; and though the text of the Zend-Avesta has been edited in its entirety, its interpretation is beset with greater difficulties than that of the Vedas or the Tripiṭaka. A study of the ancient religions of China, those of Confucius and Laotse, presupposes an acquaintance with Chinese, a language which it takes a life to learn thoroughly; and even the religion of Mohammed, though more accessible than any other Eastern religion, cannot be fully examined except by a master of Arabic. It is less surprising, therefore, than it might at first appear, that a comprehensive and scholarlike treatment of the religions of the world should still be a desideratum. Scholars who have gained a knowledge of the language, and thereby free access to original documents, find so much work at hand which none but themselves can do, that they grudge the time for collecting and arranging, for the benefit of the public at large, the results which they have obtained. Nor need we wonder that critical

historians should rather abstain from the study of the religions of antiquity than trust to free translations and second-hand authorities.

Under these circumstances we feel all the more grateful if we meet with a writer like M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, who has acquired a knowledge of Eastern languages sufficient to enable him to consult original texts and to control the researches of other scholars, and who at the same time commands that wide view of the history of human thought which enables him to assign to each system its proper place, to perceive its most salient features, and to distinguish between what is really important and what is not, in the lengthy lucubrations of ancient poets and prophets. M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire is one of the most accomplished scholars of France; and his reputation as the translator of Aristotle has made us almost forget that the Professor of Greek philosophy at the Collège de France[1] is the same as the active writer in the 'Globe' of 1827, and the 'National' of 1830; the same who signed the protest against the July 'ordonnances,' and who in 1848 was Chief Secretary of the Provisional Government. If such a man takes the trouble to acquire a knowledge of Sanskrit, and to attend in the same College where he was professor the lectures of his colleague, the late Eugène Burnouf, his publications on Hindu philosophy and religion will naturally attract a large amount of public interest. The Sanskrit scholar by profession works and publishes chiefly for the benefit

[1] M. Barthélemy St.-Hilaire resigned the Chair of Greek Literature at the Collège de France after the *coup d'état* of 1851, declining to take the oath of allegiance to the Imperial Government.

of other Sanskrit scholars. He is satisfied with bringing to light the ore which he has extracted by patient labour from among the dusty MSS. of the East-India House. He seldom takes the trouble to separate the metal from the ore, to purify or to strike it into current coin. He is but too often apt to forget that no lasting addition is ever made to the treasury of human knowledge unless the results of special research are translated into the universal language of science, and rendered available to every person of intellect and education. A division of labour seems most conducive to this end. We want a class of interpreters, men such as M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, who are fully competent to follow and to control the researches of professional students, and who at the same time have not forgotten the language of the world.

In his work on Buddhism, of which a second edition has just appeared, M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire has undertaken to give to the world at large the really trustworthy and important results which have been obtained by the laborious researches of Oriental scholars, from the original documents of that interesting and still mysterious religion. It was a task of no ordinary difficulty, for although these researches are of very recent date, and belong to a period of Sanskrit scholarship posterior to Sir W. Jones and Colebrooke, yet such is the amount of evidence brought together by the combined industry of Hodgson, Turnour, Csoma de Körös, Stanislas Julien, Foucaux, Fausböll, Spence Hardy, but above all, of the late Eugène Burnouf, that it required no common patience and discrimination to compose

from such materials so accurate, and at the same time so lucid and readable a book on Buddhism as that which we owe to M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire. The greater part of it appeared originally in the 'Journal des Savants,' the time-honoured organ of the French Academy, which counts on its staff the names of Cousin, Flourens, Villemain, Biot, Mignet, Littré, &c., and admits as contributors sixteen only of the most illustrious members of that illustrious body, *la crême de la crême.*

Though much had been said and written about Buddhism—enough to frighten priests by seeing themselves anticipated in auricular confession, beads, and tonsure by the Lamas of Tibet,[1] and to disconcert philosophers by finding themselves outbid in positivism and nihilism by the inmates of Chinese monasteries—the real beginning of an historical and critical study of the doctrines of Buddha dates from the year 1824. In that year Mr. Hodgson announced the fact that the original documents of the Buddhist canon had been preserved in Sanskrit in the monasteries of Nepal. Before that time our informa-

[1] The late Abbé Huc pointed out the similarities between the Buddhist and Roman Catholic ceremonials with such *naïveté* that, to his surprise, he found his delightful *Travels in Tibet* placed on the *Index*. 'On ne peut s'empêcher d'être frappé,' he writes, 'de leur rapport avec le Catholicisme. La crosse, la mitre, la dalmatique, la chape ou le pluvial, que les grands Lamas portent en voyage, ou lorsqu'ils font quelque cérémonie hors du temple ; l'office à deux chœurs, la psalmodie, les exorcismes, l'encensoir soutenu par cinq chaines, et pouvant s'ouvrir et se fermer à volonté ; les bénédictions données par les Lamas en étendant la main droite sur la tête des fidèles ; le chapelet, le célibat ecclésiastique, les retraites spirituelles, le culte des saints, les jeûnes, les processions, les litanies, l'eau bénite ; voilà autant de rapports que les Bouddhistes ont avec nous.' He might have added tonsure, relics, and confession.

tion on Buddhism had been derived at random from China, Japan, Burmah, Tibet, Mongolia, and Tatary; and though it was known that the Buddhist literature in all these countries professed itself to be derived, directly or indirectly, from India, and that the technical terms of that religion, not excepting the very name of Buddha, had their etymology in Sanskrit only, no hope was entertained that the originals of these various translations could ever be recovered. Mr. Hodgson, who settled in Nepal in 1821, as political resident of the East-India Company, and whose eyes were always open, not only to the natural history of that little-explored country, but likewise to its antiquities, its languages, and traditions, was not long before he discovered that his friends the priests of Nepal possessed a complete literature of their own. That literature was not written in the spoken dialects of the country, but in Sanskrit. Mr. Hodgson procured a catalogue of all the works, still in existence, which formed the Buddhist canon. He afterwards succeeded in acquiring copies of many of these works, and he was able in 1824 to send about sixty volumes to the Asiatic Society of Bengal. As no member of that society seemed inclined to devote himself to the study of these MSS., Mr. Hodgson sent two complete collections of the same MSS. to the Asiatic Society of London and the Société Asiatique of Paris. Before alluding to the brilliant results which the last-named collection produced in the hands of Eugène Burnouf we must mention the labours of other students, which preceded the publication of Burnouf's researches.

Mr. Hodgson himself gave to the world a number

of valuable essays written on the spot, and afterwards collected under the title of 'Illustrations of the Literature and Religion of the Buddhists' (Serampore, 1841).[1] He established the important fact, in accordance with the traditions of the priests of Nepal, that some of the Sanskrit documents which he recovered had existed in the monasteries of Nepal ever since the second century of our era.

The Buddhists of Nepal assert that the original body of the scriptures amounted to 84,000 volumes. The same tradition exists in the south, but was meant originally for 84,000 topics or paragraphs, not books. They are called Dhammakkandha in Pâli, of which 82,000 are ascribed to Buddha himself, and 2,000 to the Bhikshus. What corresponds among the Northern to the Tripiṭaka of the Southern Buddhists are the nine Dharmas, though it is difficult to understand why those nine works should have been selected from the bulk of the Buddhist literature of Nepal, and why divine worship should have been offered to them.[2]

Mr. Hodgson showed that the whole of that collection had, five or six hundred years later, when Buddhism became definitely established in Tibet, been translated into the language of that country. As the art of printing had been introduced from China into Tibet, there was less difficulty in procuring complete copies of the Tibetan translation of the Buddhist canon. The real difficulty was to find a person acquainted with the language. By a fortunate concurrence of circumstances, however, it

[1] *Essays on the Languages, Literature, and Religion of Nepal and Tibet*, by B. H. Hodgson (London, 1874).

[2] Hodgson, *Essays*, pp. 13, 49; and *infra*, p. 183.

so happened that about the same time when Mr. Hodgson's discoveries began to attract the attention of Oriental scholars at Calcutta, a Hungarian, of the name of Alexander Csoma de Körös, arrived there. He had made his way from Hungary to Tibet on foot, without any means of his own, and with the sole object of discovering somewhere in Central Asia the native home of the Hungarians. Arrived in Tibet, his enthusiasm found a new vent in acquiring a language which no European before his time had mastered, and in exploring the vast collection of the canonical books of the Buddhists, preserved in that language. Though he arrived at Calcutta almost without a penny, he met with a hearty welcome from the members of the Asiatic Society, and was enabled with their assistance to publish the results of his extraordinary researches. People have complained of the length of the sacred books of other nations, but there are none that approach in bulk to the sacred canon of the Tibetans. It consists of two collections, commonly called the Kanjur and Tanjur. The proper spelling of these names is Bkah-hgyur, pronounced Kan-gyur, and Bstan-hgyur, pronounced Tan-gyur. The Kanjur consists, in its different editions, of 100, 102, or 108 volumes folio. It comprises 1,083 distinct works.[1] The Tanjur consists of 225 volumes folio, each weighing from four to five pounds in the edition of Peking. The Kanjur—*i.e.* translation of the words (of Buddha)—is sometimes called Denotsum—*i.e.* 'the three great divisions,' evidently in imitation of the three baskets or Pitakas of the Southern Buddhists. The translation dates from the eighth century, and was finished during the ninth, though in its present

[1] Köppen, *Religion des Buddha*, ii. p. 279.

form the whole collection may not be older than the beginning of the last century.[1] It consists of seven parts:—

1. Dulva: that is, Vinaya or discipline.
2. Sher chin: that is, Pragñâ pâramitâ.
3. Phal chen: that is, association of Buddhas (?).
4. Kontsegs: that is, Ratnakûta.
5. Dode: that is, Sûtras.
6. Nyangde: that is, Nirvâna.
7. Jud: that is, Tantras.[2]

The Tanjur, corresponding to the *Atth*akathâs or commentaries of the Southern Buddhists, consists of miscellaneous works serving to illustrate the doctrines of Buddha. It consists of two divisions:—

1. Gyud, 2,640 works in 88 volumes.
2. Do, Sûtras, in 137 volumes, containing treatises on theology, philosophy, logic, grammar, rhetoric, poetry, prosody, medicine, ethics, &c. Even translations of such works as the Meghadûta and Amara Kosha were admitted into this collection.

Editions of the Kanjur were printed at Peking, Lhassa, and other places. The edition of the Kanjur published at Peking, by command of the Emperor Khian-Lung, sold for 630*l.* A copy of the Kanjur was bartered for 7000 oxen by the Buriates, and the same tribe paid 12,000 silver roubles for a complete copy of the Kanjur and Tanjur together.[3] The Tanjur is said to have been published for the first time in 1728 to 1746. Both the Kanjur and Tanjur

[1] Schlagintweit, *Buddhismus in Tibet*, p. 79.

[2] Köppen, *Religion des Buddha*, ii. p. 280.

[3] *Ibid.* ii. p. 282. Schlagintweit, *l.c.*, p. 81, mentions 2000*l.* as the sum paid by Buriates and Kalmuks for a copy of the Kanjur and Tanjur.

have been translated into Chinese, Mongolian, and Mandshurian.

Such a jungle of religious literature—the most excellent hiding-place, we should think, for Lamas and Dalai-Lamas—was too much even for a man who could travel on foot from Hungary to Tibet. The Hungarian enthusiast, however, though he did not translate the whole, gave a most valuable analysis of this immense bible, in the twentieth volume of the 'Asiatic Researches,' sufficient to establish the fact that the principal portion of it was a translation from the same Sanskrit originals which had been discovered in Nepal by Mr. Hodgson. Csoma de Körös died in 1842, soon after he had given to the world the first fruits of his labours—a victim to his heroic devotion to the study of ancient languages and religions.

It was another fortunate coincidence that, contemporaneously with the discoveries of Hodgson and Csoma de Körös, another scholar, Schmidt of St. Petersburg, had so far advanced in the study of the Mongolian language as to be able to translate portions of the Mongolian version of the Buddhist canon, and thus forward the elucidation of some of the problems connected with the religion of Buddha.

It never rains but it pours.' Whereas for years, nay, for centuries, not a single original document of the Buddhist religion had been accessible to the scholars of Europe, we witness in the small space of ten years, the recovery of four complete Buddhist literatures. In addition to the discoveries of Hodgson in Nepal, of Csoma de Körös in Tibet, and of Schmidt in Mongolia, the Honourable George Turnour suddenly presented to the world the Buddhist

literature of Ceylon, composed in the sacred language of that island, the ancient Pâli. The existence of that literature had been known before. Since 1826 Sir Alexander Johnston had been engaged in collecting authentic copies of the Mahâvansa, the Râgâvalî, and the Râgaratnâkarî. These copies were translated at his suggestion from Pâli into modern Singhalese and thence into English. The publication was entrusted to Mr. Edward Upham, and the work appeared in 1833, under the title of 'The Sacred and Historical Works of Ceylon,' dedicated to William IV. Unfortunately, whether through fraud or through misunderstanding, the priests who were to have procured an authentic copy of the Pâli originals and translated them into the vernacular language, appear to have formed a compilation of their own from various sources. The official translators by whom this mutilated Singhalese abridgment was to have been rendered into English, took still greater liberties; and the 'Sacred and Historical Books of Ceylon' had hardly been published before Burnouf, then a mere beginner in the study of Pâli, was able to prove the utter uselessness of that translation. Mr. Turnour, however, soon made up for this disappointment. He set to work in a more scholarlike spirit, and, after acquiring himself some knowledge of the Pâli language, he published several important essays on the Buddhist canon, as preserved in Ceylon. These were followed by an edition and translation of the Mahâvansa, or the history of Ceylon, written by Mahânâma in the fifth century after Christ, and giving an account of the island from the earliest times to the beginning of the fourth cen-

tury A.D.[1] Several continuations of that history are in existence, but Mr. Turnour was prevented by an early death from continuing his edition beyond the thirty-eighth chapter of that chronicle.[2] The exploration of the Ceylonese literature has since been taken up again by the Rev. D. J. Gogerly (died 1862), whose essays are unfortunately scattered about in Singhalese periodicals and little known in Europe; and by the Rev. Spence Hardy, for twenty years Wesleyan Missionary in Ceylon. His two works, 'Eastern Monachism' and 'Manual of Buddhism,' are full of interesting matter, but as they are chiefly derived from Singhalese, and even more modern, sources, they require to be used with caution.[3]

In the same manner as the Sanskrit originals of Nepal were translated by Buddhist missionaries into Tibetan, Mongolian, and, as we shall soon see, into Chinese and Mandshu,[4] the Pâli originals of Ceylon were carried to Burmah and Siam, and translated there into the languages of those countries. Hardly anything has as yet been done for exploring the language and literature of these two countries, which open a promising field for any one ambitious to follow in the footsteps of Hodgson, Csoma, and Turnour.

[1] The original text seems to have broken off with the death of Mahâsena in 302 A.D., or with the forty-eighth verse of the thirty-seventh chapter. Whether the end of that chapter, and the next, the thirty-eighth chapter, carrying on the history to 477 A.D., can be ascribed to Mahânâma is doubtful.

[2] From the thirty-seventh chapter the text has been edited with a Singhalese translation and glossary by H. Sumangala, High-priest of Adam's Peak, and Don Andris de Silva Batuwantudawa (Colombo, 1877, two vols.).

[3] The same author has lately published another valuable work, *The Legends and Theories of the Buddhists* (London, 1866). He died in 1868.

[4] *Mélanges Asiatiques*, vol. ii. p. 373.

A very important collection of Buddhist MSS. has lately been brought from Ceylon to Europe by M. Grimblot, and is now deposited in the Imperial Library at Paris. This collection, to judge from a report published in 1866 in the 'Journal des Savants' by M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, consists of no less than eighty-seven works; and, as some of them are represented by more than one copy, the total number of MSS. amounts to one hundred and twenty-one. They fill altogether 14,000 palm leaves, and are written partly in Singhalese, partly in Burmese characters. Next to Ceylon, Burmah and Siam would seem to be the two countries most likely to yield large collections of Pâli MSS., and the MSS. which now exist in Ceylon may, to a considerable extent, be traced back to these two countries. At the beginning of the sixteenth century, the Tamil conquerors of Ceylon are reported to have burnt every Buddhist book they could discover, in the hope of thus destroying the vitality of that detested religion. Buddhism, however, though persecuted—or, more probably, because persecuted—remained the national religion of the island, and in the eighteenth century it had recovered its former ascendency. Missions were then sent to Siam to procure authentic copies of the sacred documents; priests properly ordained were imported from Burmah; and several libraries, which contain both the canonical and the profane literature of Buddhism, were founded at Dadala, Ambagapitya, and other places.

The sacred canon of the Southern Buddhists is called the Tripiṭaka, *i.e.* the three baskets. The first basket contains all that has reference to mor-

ality, more particularly the duties of the priesthood, or Vinaya; the second contains the Suttas or Sûtras, *i.e.* the discourses of Buddha; the third includes all works treating of Abhidhamma or Abhidharma, dogmatic philosophy or metaphysics. The second and third baskets were originally comprehended under the general name of Dharma, or law; and before the title of Tripiṭaka was introduced the usual names for the doctrine of Buddha were Dhamma, Dhammavinaya, or Sutta and Vinaya.[1] The first and second piṭakas contain each five separate works; the third contains seven.

I. Vinayapiṭaka:

1. Pârâgikâ, sins involving expulsion,
2. Pâkittiyâ, sins involving penance, } Vibhaṅga.[2]
3. Mahâvagga, the large chapter,
4. Kûlavagga, the small chapter, } Khandhaka.[3]
5. Parivârapâṭha, the appendix or *résumé*.

II. Sutta-piṭaka:

1. Dîgha-nikâya, collection of long Suttas (34),[4]
2. Maggḥima-nikâya, collection of middle Suttas (152),
3. Samyutta-nikâya, collection of joined Suttas (7762),
4. Aṅguttara-nikâya, miscellaneous Suttas (9550 or 9557),
5. Khuddaka-nikâya, collection of short Suttas, consisting of—

(1) Khuddaka-pâṭha, the small text,[5]

[1] Mahâparinibbâna-sutta, ed. by Childers, *J.R.A.S.*, 1876, pp. 348, l. 21, 25; p. 229, l. 7. Feer, *Journ. Asiat.*, 1870, p. 359.

[2] See Oldenberg, Vinaya, i. p. xvi., who shows that it is an extended reading of Pâtimokkha. [3] Edited by Oldenberg.

[4] The Mahâparinibbâna-sutta, ed. by Childers, *J.R.A.S.*, 1875; translated by Rhys Davids, *S.B.E. Sept Suttas Palis*, par Grimblot, Paris, 1876.

[5] Published by Childers, *J.R.A.S.*, 1869.

(2) Dhammapada, Law-verses,[1]
(3) Udâna, praise (82),
(4) Itivuttaka, stories,
(5) Suttanipâta, 70 Suttas,[2]
(6) Vimânavatthu, stories of celestial palaces,
(7) Petavatthu, stories of departed spirits,
(8) Theragâthâ, stanzas of priests,
(9) Therîgâthâ, stanzas of nuns,
(10) *G*âtaka, former births (550 tales),[3]
(11) Niddesa, explanations by Sâriputta of thirty-three *s*lokas of the last two vaggas of the Suttanipâta—viz. Kâmasutta (iv. 1) and Khaggavisâ*n*a-sutta (i. 3).
(12) Patisambhidâ magga, the road of intuitive insight,
(13) Apadâna, legends,[4]
(14) Buddhava*m*sa,[4] story of the twenty-four preceding Buddhas and of Gotama,
(15) *K*ariyâpi*t*aka,[4] Buddha's meritorious actions.[5]

The first four Nikâyas are sometimes quoted together as the Four Nikâyas, the five as the Five Nikâyas. They represent the Dhamma as settled at the first and second Councils, described in the *K*ullavagga (Oldenberg, i. p. xi.).

III. Abhidhammapi*t*aka:

1. Dhammasa*ṅ*ga*n*i (or sa*ṅ*gaha), enumeration of conditions of life,[6]
2. Vibha*ṅ*ga, disquisitions,
3. Kathâvatthupakara*n*a, book of subjects for discussion (1000 suttas),

[1] Published by Fausböll; translated by M. M. in *S.B.E.*
[2] Thirty translated by Coomara Svamy; the whole by Fausböll.
[3] Published by Fausböll, translated by Rhys Davids.
[4] Buddhaghosha leaves it uncertain whether these were recited at the first Council.
[5] Partly translated by Gogerly, *J.A.S.*, Ceylon, 1852.
[6] Gogerly, *J.A.S.*, Ceylon, 1848, p. 7.

4. Puggalapaññati or paññati, declaration for followers of Buddha,
5. Dhâtukathâ, account of dhâtus or elements,
6. Yamaka, pairs, (ten divisions),
7. Patthânapakarana, book of causes.[1]

M. Grimblot has secured MSS. of nearly every one of these works, and he has likewise brought home copies of the famous commentaries of Buddhaghosha. These commentaries are of great importance; for although Buddhaghosha lived as late as 430 A.D., he is supposed to have been the translator of more ancient commentaries, brought in 241 (307) B.C. to Ceylon from Magadha by Mahinda, the son of Asoka, translated by him from Pâli into Singhalese, and retranslated by Buddhaghosha into Pâli, the original language both of the canonical books and of their commentaries. Whether historical criticism will allow to the commentaries of Buddhaghosha the authority due to documents of the third or even fourth century before Christ is a question that has

[1] Mr. Rhys Davids, though he does not wish to exaggerate the bulk of the Buddhist canon in Pâli, estimates it as twice as large as the Bible, adding that a translation of it would probably be four times as long (*Buddhism*, i. p. 20). Spence Hardy (*Eastern Monachism*, p. 172) states that the Pâli canon consists of 275,250 stanzas; its commentary of 361,550 stanzas: each stanza reckoned at thirty-two syllables. The Vinaya-pitaka is said to contain 42,250 stanzas; the Sutta-pitaka, 142,250 (or 150,750) stanzas; the Abhidhamma-pitaka, 96,250 stanzas. This would give a total of 280,750 or 289,250, and not, as according to the first estimate, 275,250 stanzas. The authorised commentary is said to comprise 361,550 stanzas. But the separate items—27,000 for Vinaya, 254,250 for Sutta, 30,000 for Abhidhamma—would only give in all 207,750 stanzas. Tournour's copy of the whole canon consisted of 4,500 leaves. Spence Hardy, *Eastern Monachism*, p. 167. In Siam the translation of the Tripitaka is said to consist of 3,683 volumes, forming 402 distinct works. (Léon de Rosny, *Variétés Orientales*, p. 127.)

yet to be settled. But even as a collector of earlier traditions and as a writer of the fifth century after Christ, his authority would be considerable with regard to the solution of some of the most important problems of Indian history and chronology. Some scholars who have written on the history of Buddhism have clearly shown too strong an inclination to treat the statements contained in the commentaries of Buddhaghosha as purely historical, forgetting the great interval of time by which he is separated from the events which he relates. No doubt if it could be proved that Buddhaghosha's works were literal translations of the so-called *Atth*akathâs or commentaries brought by Mahinda to Ceylon, and translated by him into Singhalese, this would considerably enhance their historical value. But the whole account of these translations rests on tradition,[1] and

[1] The precautions taken to secure a literal translation of the *Atth*akathâ by Buddhaghosha remind us somewhat of the legend connected with the work of the Seventy translators. 'Thereupon Buddhaghosha, paying reverential respect to the priesthood, thus petitioned: I am desirous of translating the *Atth*akathâ; give me access to all your books. The priesthood, for the purpose of testing his qualifications, gave only two gâthâs, saying: Hence prove thy qualification; having satisfied ourselves on this point, we will then let thee have all our books. From thence (taking these gâthâs for his text), and consulting the Pitakattaya, together with the *Atth*akathâ, and condensing them into an abridged form, he composed the commentary called the Visuddhimagga. Thereupon, having assembled the priesthood, who had acquired a thorough knowledge of the doctrines of Buddha, at the Bo tree, he commenced to read out (the work he had composed). The devatâs, in order that they might make his (Buddaghosha's) gifts of wisdom celebrated among men, rendered the book invisible. He, however, for a second and third time recomposed it. When he was in the act of producing his book for the third time, for the purpose of propounding it, the devatâs restored the other two copies also. The assembled priests then read out the three books simultaneously. In these three versions,'

if we consider the extraordinary precautions taken, according to tradition, by the LXX translators of the Old Testament, and then observe the discrepancies between the chronology of the Septuagint and that of the Hebrew text, we shall be better able to appreciate the risk of trusting to Oriental translations, even to those that pretend to be literal. The idea of a faithful literal translation seems altogether foreign to Oriental minds. Granted that Mahinda translated the original Pâli commentaries into Singhalese, there was nothing to restrain him from inserting anything that he thought likely to be useful to his new converts. Granted that Buddhaghosha translated these translations back into Pâli, why should he not have incorporated any facts that were then believed and had been handed down by tradition from generation to generation? Was he not at liberty—nay, would he not have felt it his duty, to explain apparent difficulties, to remove contradictions, and to correct palpable mistakes? In our time, when even the contemporaneous evidence of Herodotus, Thucydides, Livy, or Jornandes is sifted by the most uncompromising scepticism, we must not expect a more merciful treatment for the annals of Buddhism. Scholars engaged in special researches are too willing to acquiesce in evidence, particularly if that evidence has been discovered by their own efforts and comes before them with all the charms of novelty. But, in the broad daylight of historical criticism, the prestige

neither in signification, nor in a single misplacement by transposition, nay even in the thera controversies, and in the text (of the Pitakattaya), was there in the measure of a verse, or in the letter of a word, the slightest variation.

of such a witness as Buddhaghosha soon dwindles away, and his statements as to kings and councils, eight hundred years before his time, are in truth worth no more than the stories told of Arthur by Geoffrey of Monmouth, or the accounts we read in Livy of the early history of Rome.

One of the most important works of M. Grimblot's collection, and one that we hope will soon be published, is a history of Buddhism in Ceylon, called the Dîpava*m*sa.[1] The only work of the same character which has hitherto been known is the Mahâva*m*sa, published by George Turnour. But this is professedly based on the Dîpava*m*sa, and is probably of a later date. Mahânâma, the compiler of the Mahâva*m*sa, lived about 500 A.D. His work was continued by later chroniclers to the middle of the eighteenth century. Though Mahânâma wrote towards the end of the fifth century after Christ, his own share of the chronicle is supposed to have ended with the history of the year 302 A.D. The commentary on his chronicle breaks off likewise at that period. The exact date of the Dîpava*m*sa is not yet known; but as it also breaks off with the death of Mâhasena in 302 A.D., we cannot ascribe to it, for the present, any higher authority than could be commanded by a writer of the fourth century after Christ.[2]

We now return to Mr. Hodgson. His collections of Sanskrit MSS. had been sent, as we saw, to the Asiatic Society of Calcutta from 1824 to 1839, to

[1] The 'Dîpava*m*sa' has since been published by Dr. Oldenberg, with a translation (London, Williams and Norgate, 1879).

[2] The fact that both chronicles were founded on the traditions of the great Ceylonese monasteries, as shown by Dr. Oldenberg, gives greater historical value to these works than was formerly supposed.

the Royal Asiatic Society in London in 1835, and to the Société Asiatique of Paris in 1837. It is more difficult to determine which of these works should be treated as canonical, as the Northern Buddhists themselves do not distinguish with the same carefulness as the Southern Buddhists between canonical and apocryphal books. Nine books are often mentioned as the Nine Dharmas or the Nine Purâṇas; but there are other works of equal, if not of greater, authority, which cannot be excluded from the Northern canon. The Nine Dharmas are:—

1. Pragñâpâramitâ, in three editions, in 100,000, or 25,000, or 8,000 verses.
2. Gandavyûha, 12,000 slokas.
3. Dasabhûmîsvara, 2,000 slokas, on the ten degrees of perfection of a Buddha.
4. Samâdhirâga, 3,000 slokas, on different kinds of contemplation.
5. Laṅkâvatâra, 3,000 slokas, the good law as taught in Laṅkâ.
6. Suddharma-puṇḍarîka, on the three vehicles being really one. Translated by Burnouf.
7. Tathâgata-guhyaka, treatises on esoteric doctrines.
8. Lalita-vistara, 7,000 slokas; life of Buddha. Published by Râjendralal Mitra.
9. Suvarṇaprabhâsa, 1,500 slokas; two translations in Tibetan—one from Chinese, another from Sanskrit. Sanskrit text at Paris. See Burnouf's *Introduction*, p. 529 *seq.*

Another account of the recognised literature of the Mahâyana school is found in the Guṇa-kâraṇḍavyûha (MS. E.I.H. 22 E, p. 95, b). Here the sacred literature of the Northern Buddhists is arranged under twelve different heads:—(1) Sûtra, (2) Geya, (3)

Vyâkarana, (4) Gâthâ, (5) Udâna, (6) Nidâna, (7) Avadâna, (8) Itivrittaka, or Ityukta, (9) Gâtaka, (10) Vaipulya, (11) Adbhutadharma, (12) Upadesa.

This division according to subjects is all the more important because it corresponds in the main to the nine Aṅgas of the canon adopted by the Southern Buddhists, viz.:—

1. Sutta, comprehending the two Vibhaṅgas, Nidlesa, Khandhaka, Parivâra, Mangala, Ratana, Nâlaka, Tuvataka (these four from Suttanipâta), and all that is called Sutta.
2. Geyya, *i.e.* prose suttas mixed with verse—as, for instance, in the Samyuttaka the whole of the Sagâthaka vagga.
3. Veyyâkaraṇa, *i.e.* the whole Abhidhamma, except the gâthâ-suttas, and all that is not comprehended under the other eight divisions.
4. Gâthâ, *i.e.* Dhammapada, Theragâthâ, Therîgâthâ, all that is not called sutta in the Sutta-nipâta, and also single gâthâs. A gâthâ may contain gâyas, stanzas.
5. Udâna, *i.e.* 82 suttas, containing hymns of joy etc.
6. Itivuttaka, *i.e.* 110 suttas, beginning with an appeal to Buddha's words, saying: vuttam h' etam Bhagavatâ.
7. Gâtaka, 550 stories of the former births of Buddha.
8. Adbhutadhamma, miraculous stories.
9. Vedalla, suttas, such as Kûlavedalla, Mahâvedalla, Sammâditthi, Sakkapañha, Saṅkhâra-bhâganiya, Mahâpuññatâ, and others, bringing knowledge, happiness, etc.[1]

But though Mr. Hodgson sent these and many more books which he had discovered in Nepâl to Europe, his treasures remained dormant at Calcutta

[1] *Cf.* Spence Hardy, *Eastern Monachism*, p. 166 *seq.* S. Beal, *Wong Puh*, p. 45; Hodgson, *Essays*, p. 14. *Academy*, Aug. 28 1880.

and in London. At Paris, however, these Buddhist MSS. fell into the hands of Burnouf. Unappalled by their size and tediousness, he set to work, and was not long before he discovered their extreme importance. After seven years of careful study, Burnouf published, in 1844, his 'Introduction à l'Histoire du Buddhisme.' It is this work which laid the foundation for a systematic study of the religion of Buddha. Though acknowledging the great value of the researches made in the Buddhist literatures of Tibet, Mongolia, China, and Ceylon, Burnouf showed that Buddhism, being of Indian origin, ought to be studied first of all in the original Sanskrit documents, preserved in Nepal. Though he modestly called his work an Introduction to the History of Buddhism, there are few points of importance on which his industry has not brought together the most valuable evidence, and his genius shed a novel and brilliant light. The death of Burnouf in 1851 put an end to a work which, if finished according to the plan sketched out by the author in the preface, would have been the most perfect monument of Oriental scholarship. A volume published after his death, in 1852, contains a translation of one of the canonical books of Nepal, with notes and appendices, the latter full of the most valuable information on some of the more intricate questions of Buddhism. Though much remained to be done, and though a very small breach only had been made in the vast pile of Sanskrit MSS. presented by Mr. Hodgson to the Asiatic Societies of Paris and London, no one has been bold enough to continue what Burnouf left unfinished. The only important additions to our knowledge of Buddhism

since his death are an edition of the Lalita-Vistara, or the Life of Buddha, prepared by a native, the learned Babu Rajendralal Mitra; an edition of the Pâli original of the Dhammapada, by Dr. Fausböll, a Dane;[1] and last, not least, the excellent translation by M. Stanislas Julien, of the life and travels of Hiouen-Thsang. This Chinese pilgrim had visited India from 629 to 645 A.D. for the purpose of learning Sanskrit, and translating from Sanskrit into Chinese some important works on the religion and philosophy of the Buddhists; and his account of the geography, the social, religious, and political state of India at the beginning of the seventh century is invaluable for studying the practical working of that religion at a time when its influence began to decline, and when it was soon to be supplanted by modern Brahmanism and Mohammedanism.

It was no easy task for M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire to make himself acquainted with all these works. The study of Buddhism would almost seem to be beyond the power of any single individual, if it required a practical acquaintance with all the languages in which the doctrines of Buddha have been written down. Burnouf was probably the only man who, in addition to his knowledge of Sanskrit, did not shrink from acquiring a practical knowledge of Tibetan, Pâli, Singhalese, and Burmese, in order to prepare himself for such a task. The same scholar had shown, however, that though it was impossible

[1] In the *Annual Report of the Philological Society* for 1875 Mr. Rhys Davids has given a full account of the work accomplished to that date in the publication of Pâli texts, and of dictionaries or grammars of the Pâli language.

for a Tibetan, Mongolian, or Chinese scholar to arrive, without a knowledge of Sanskrit, at a correct understanding of the doctrines of Buddha, a knowledge of Sanskrit or Pâli was sufficient for entering into their spirit, for comprehending their origin and growth in India, and their modification in the different countries where they took root in later times. Assisted by his familiarity with Sanskrit, and bringing into the field, as a new and valuable auxiliary, his intimate acquaintance with nearly all the systems of philosophy and religion of both the ancient and modern worlds, M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire has succeeded in drawing a picture, both lively and correct, of the origin, the character, the strong as well as weak points, of the religion of Buddha. He has become the first historian of Buddhism. He has not been carried away by a temptation which must have been great for one who is able to read in the past the lessons for the present or the future. He has not used Buddhism either as a bugbear or as a *beau idéal*. He is satisfied with stating in his preface that many lessons might be learned by modern philosophers from a study of Buddhism, but in the body of the work he never perverts the chair of the historian into the pulpit of the preacher.

'This book may offer one other advantage,' he writes, 'and I regret to say that at present it may seem to come opportunely. It is the misfortune of our times that the same doctrines which form the foundation of Buddhism meet at the hands of some of our philosophers with a favour which they ill deserve. For some years we have seen systems arising in which metempsychosis and transmigration

are highly spoken of, and attempts are made to explain the world and man without either a God or a Providence, exactly as Buddha did. A future life is refused to the yearnings of mankind, and the immortality of the soul is replaced by the immortality of works. God is dethroned, and in His place they substitute man, the only being, we are told, in which the Infinite becomes conscious of itself. These theories are recommended to us sometimes in the name of science, or of history, or philosophy, or even of metaphysics; and though they are neither new nor very original, yet they can do much injury to feeble hearts. This is not the place to examine these theories, and their authors are both too learned and too sincere to deserve to be condemned summarily and without discussion. But it is well that they should know by the example, too little known, of Buddhism, what becomes of man if he depends on himself alone, and if his meditations, misled by a pride of which he is hardly conscious, bring him to the precipice where Buddha was lost. I am well aware of all the differences, and I am not going to insult our contemporary philosophers by confounding them indiscriminately with Buddha, although addressing to both the same reproof. I acknowledge willingly all their additional merits, which are considerable. But systems of philosophy must always be judged by the conclusions to which they lead, whatever road they may follow in reaching them; and their conclusions, though obtained by different means, are not therefore less objectionable. Buddha arrived at his conclusions 2,400 years ago. He proclaimed and practised them with

an energy which is not likely to be surpassed, even if it be equalled. He displayed a childlike intrepidity which no one can exceed, nor can it be supposed that any system in our days could again acquire so powerful an ascendency over the souls of men. It would be useful, however, if the authors of these modern systems would just cast a glance at the theories and destinies of Buddhism. It is not philosophy in the sense in which we understand this great name, nor is it religion in the sense of ancient paganism, of Christianity, or of Mohammedanism; but it contains elements of all worked up into a perfectly independent doctrine which acknowledges nothing in the universe but man, and obstinately refuses to recognise anything else, though confounding man with nature in the midst of which he lives. Hence all those aberrations of Buddhism which ought to be a warning to others. Unfortunately, if people rarely profit by their own faults, they profit yet more rarely by the faults of others.' (Introduction, p. vii.)

But though M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire does not write history merely for the sake of those masked batteries which French writers have used with so much skill at all times, but more particularly during the late years of Imperial sway, it is clear, from the remarks just quoted, that our author is not satisfied with simply chronicling the dry facts of Buddhism, or turning into French the tedious discourses of its founder. His work is an animated sketch, giving too little rather than too much. It is just the book which was wanted to dispel the erroneous notions about Buddhism which are still current among educated men, and to excite an interest which may lead

those who are naturally frightened by the appalling proportions of Buddhist literature, and the uncouth sounds of Buddhist terminology, to a study of the quartos of Burnouf, Turnour, and others. To those who may wish for more detailed information on Buddhism than could be given by M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire consistently with the plan of his work, we can strongly recommend the work of a German writer, 'Die Religion des Buddha,' von Köppen (Berlin, 1857). It is founded on the same materials as the French work, but being written by a scholar and for scholars, it enters on a more minute examination of all that has been said or written on Buddha and Buddhism. In a second volume the same learned and industrious student has lately published a history of Buddhism in Tibet.

M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire's work is divided into three portions. The first contains an account of the origin of Buddhism, a life of Buddha, and an examination of Buddhist ethics and metaphysics. In the second he describes the state of Buddhism in India in the seventh century of our era, from the materials supplied by the travels of Hiouen-Thsang. The third gives a description of Buddhism as actually existing in Ceylon, and as lately described by an eye-witness, the Rev. Spence Hardy. We shall confine ourselves chiefly to the first part, which treats of the life and teaching of Buddha.

M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, following the example of Burnouf, Lassen, and Wilson, accepts the date of the Ceylonese era 543 B.C. as the date of Buddha's death. Though we cannot enter here into long chronological discussions, we must remark,

that this date was clearly obtained by the Buddhists of Ceylon by calculation, not by historical tradition, and that it is easy to point out in that calculation a mistake of sixty-six years. The more plausible date of Buddha's death is 477 B.C. For the purposes, however, which M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire had in view, this difference is of small importance. We know so little of the history of India during the sixth and fifth centuries B.C., that the stage on which he represents Buddha as preaching and teaching would have had very much the same background, the same costume and accessories, for the sixth as for the fifth century B.C.

In the life of Buddha, which extends from p. 1 to p. 79, M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire follows almost exclusively the Lalita-Vistara. This is one of the most popular works of the Buddhists. It forms part of the Northern Buddhist canon; and as we know of a translation into Chinese, which M. Stanislas Julien ascribes to the year 76 A.D.,[1] we may safely refer its original composition to an ante-Christian date. It has been published in Sanskrit by Babu Rajendralal Mitra, and we owe to M. Foucaux an edition of the same work in its Tibetan translation, one of the first Tibetan texts printed in Europe. From

[1] The first translation of the Life of Buddha, ascribed to Kâśyapa Mâtanga and Kufalan, is lost, and we cannot tell, therefore, how far it was really a translation of our text of the Lalita-Vistara. The title, Fo-pen-King, Sutra of the acts of Buddha, seems to belong to Aśvaghosha's Buddhaḳarita, a work in verse, while Fang-teng means 'expanded copy,' or Vaipulya text. A Life of Buddha, as given in the Vinaya-Piṭaka, was translated into Chinese under the Sang dynasty, 420–470. The earliest translation of a Life of Buddha now known to exist is the Sian-hing-pen-k'i-king by two Shamans of the After-Han dynasty, about 190 A.D. (Beal).

specimens that we have seen, we should think it would be highly desirable to have an accurate translation of the Chinese text, such as M. Stanislas Julien alone is able to give us.[1] Few people, however, except scholars, would have the patience to read this work either in its English or French translation, as may be seen from the following specimen, containing the beginning of Babu Rajendralal Mitra's version[2]:—

'Om! Salutation to all Buddhas, Bodhisattvas, Âryas, Śrâvakas, and Pratyeka-Buddhas of all times, past, present, and future, who are adored throughout

[1] The advantage to be derived from these Chinese translations has been pointed out by M. Stanislas Julien. The analytical structure of that language imparts to Chinese translations the character almost of a gloss; and though we need not follow implicitly the interpretations of the Sanskrit originals adopted by the Chinese translators, still their antiquity would naturally impart to them a considerable value and interest. The following specimens were kindly communicated to me by M. Stanislas Julien:

'Je ne sais si je vous ai communiqué autrefois les curieux passages qui suivent: On lit dans le Lotus français, p. 271, l. 14, C'est que c'est une chose difficile à rencontrer que la naissance d'un bouddha, aussi difficile à rencontrer que la fleur de l'Udumbara, que l'introduction du col d'une tortue dans l'ouverture d'un joug formé par le grand océan.

'Il y a en chinois: un bouddha est difficile à rencontrer, comme les fleurs Udumbara et Palâça; et en outre comme si une tortue borgne voulait rencontrer un trou dans un bois flottant (litt. le trou d'un bois flottant).

'Lotus français, p. 39, l. 110: (les créatures) enchaînées par la concupiscence comme par la queue du Yak, perpétuellement aveuglées en ce monde par les désirs, elles ne cherchent pas le Buddha.

'Il y a en chinois: Profondément attachées aux cinq désirs—Elles les aiment comme le Yak aime sa queue. Par la concupiscence et l'amour, elles s'aveuglent elles-mêmes, etc.'

[2] This version is far from correct, but as the text itself requires critical treatment, I have left it unaltered, adding only a few notes, to prevent serious misapprehensions.

the farthest limits of the ten quarters of the globe. Thus hath it been heard by me, that once on a time Bhagavat sojourned in the garden of Anâthapi*n*dada, at *G*etavana, in *S*râvastî, accompanied by a venerable body of 12,000 Bhikshukas. There likewise accompanied him 32,000 Bodhisattvas, all linked together by unity of caste,[1] and perfect in the virtues of pâramitâ; who had made their command over Bodhisattva knowledge a pastime, were illumined with the light of Bodhisattva dhâra*n*îs, and were masters of the dhâra*n*îs themselves; who were profound in their meditations, all submissive to the lord of Bodhisattvas,[2] and possessed absolute control over samâdhi; great in self-command, refulgent in Bodhisattva forbearance, and replete with the Bodhisattva element of perfection.[3] Now then, Bhagavat, arriving in the great city of *S*râvastî, sojourned therein, respected, venerated, revered, and adored by the fourfold congregations, by kings, princes, their counsellers, prime ministers, and followers; by retinues of kshatriyas, brâhma*n*as, householders, and ministers; by citizens, foreigners, *s*râma*n*as, brâhma*n*as, recluses, and ascetics; and although regaled with all sorts of edibles and sauces, the best that could be prepared by purveyors, and supplied with cleanly mendicant apparel, begging pots, couches, and pain-assuaging medicaments, the benevolent lord, on whom had been showered the prime of gifts and applauses, remained unattached to them all, like water on a

[1] All restricted to one birth only.

[2] Having approached all the high knowledge (pratisa*m*vid) of Bodhisattvas.

[3] Having completed all the steps of a Bodhisattva.

lotus leaf; and the report of his greatness as the venerable, the absolute Buddha, the learned and well-behaved, the goḍ of happy exit, the great knower of worlds, the valiant,[1] the all-controlling charioteer,[2] the teacher of gods and men, the quinocular lord Buddha fully manifest spread far and wide in the world. And Bhagavat, having by his own power acquired all knowledge regarding this world and the next, comprising devas, mâras, brâhmyas (followers of Brahmâ), *s*râma*n*as, and brâhma*n*as, as subjects, that is both gods and men, sojourned here, imparting instructions in the true religion, and expounding the principles of a brahma*k*arya, full and complete in its nature, holy in its import, pure and immaculate in its character, auspicious in its beginning, auspicious its middle, auspicious its end.'

The whole work is written in a similar style, and where fact and legend, prose and poetry, sense and nonsense, are so mixed together, the plan adopted by M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, of making two lives out of one, the one containing all that seems possible, the other what seems impossible, would naturally recommend itself. It is not a safe process, however, to distil history out of legend by simply straining the legendary through the sieve of physical possibility. Many things are possible, and may yet be the mere inventions of later writers, and many things which sound impossible have been reclaimed as historical, after removing from them the thin film

[1] Anuttara*ḥ*, without a superior, unrivalled.

[2] Purushadamyasârathi=purisadammasârathi, leader or driver of men who have to be broken in or tamed. See Childers, *s.v.*

of mythological phraseology. We believe that the only use which the historian can safely make of the Lalita-Vistara is to employ it, not as evidence of facts which actually happened, but in illustration of the popular belief prevalent at the time when it was composed or committed to writing. Without, therefore, adopting the division of fact and fiction in the life of Buddha, as attempted by M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, we yet believe that in order to avoid a repetition of childish absurdities, we shall best consult the interest of our readers if we follow his example, and give a short and rational abstract of the life of Buddha as handed down by tradition, and probably committed to writing not later than the first century B.C.

Buddha, or more correctly, the Buddha—for Buddha is an appellative meaning Enlightened—was born at Kapilavastu, the capital of a kingdom of the same name, situated at the foot of the mountains of Nepal, north of the present Oude. His father, the king of Kapilavastu, was of the family of the Śâkyas, and belonged to the clan of the Gautamas. His mother was Mâyâdêvî, daughter of king Suprabuddha, and need we say that she was as beautiful as he was powerful and just? Buddha was therefore by birth of the Kshatriya, or warrior caste, and he took the name of Śâkya from his family, and that of Gautama from his clan, claiming a kind of spiritual relationship with the honoured race of Gautama. The name of Buddha, or the Buddha, dates from a later period of his life, and so probably does the name Siddhârtha (he whose objects have been accomplished), though we are told that it was given

him in his childhood. His mother died seven days after his birth, and the father confided the child to the care of his deceased wife's sister, who, however, had been his wife even before the mother's death. The child grew up a most beautiful and most accomplished boy, who soon knew more than his masters could teach him. He refused to take part in the games of his playmates, and never felt so happy as when he could sit alone, lost in meditation in the deep shadows of the forest. It was there that his father found him when he had thought him lost, and in order to prevent the young prince from becoming a dreamer, the king determined to marry him at once. When the subject was mentioned by the aged ministers to the future heir to the throne, he demanded seven days for reflection, and convinced at last that not even marriage could disturb the calm of his mind, he allowed the ministers to look out for a princess. The princess selected was the beautiful Gopâ, the daughter of Da*n*dapâ*n*i. Though her father objected at first to her marrying a young prince who was represented to him as deficient in manliness and intellect, he gladly gave his consent when he saw the royal suitor distancing all his rivals both in feats of arms and power of mind. Their marriage proved one of the happiest, but the prince remained, as he had been before, absorbed in meditation on the problems of life and death. 'Nothing is stable on earth,' he used to say, 'nothing is real. Life is like the spark produced by the friction of wood. It is lighted and is extinguished—we know not whence it came or whither it goes. It is like the sound of a lyre, and the wise man asks in

vain from whence it came and whither it goes. There must be some supreme intelligence where we could find rest. If I attained it, I could bring light to man; if I were free myself, I could deliver the world.' The king, who perceived the melancholy mood of the young prince, tried everything to divert him from his speculations: but all was in vain. Three of the most ordinary events that could happen to any man proved of the utmost importance in the career of Buddha. We quote the description of these occurrences from M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire:—

'One day when the prince with a large retinue was driving through the eastern gate of the city on the way to one of his parks, he met on the road an old man, broken and decrepit. One could see the veins and muscles over the whole of his body; his teeth chattered, he was covered with wrinkles, bald, and hardly able to utter hollow and unmelodious sounds. He was bent on his stick, and all his limbs and joints trembled. "Who is that man?" said the prince to his coachman. "He is small and weak, his flesh and his blood are dried up, his muscles stick to his skin, his head is white, his teeth chatter, his body is wasted away; leaning on his stick he is hardly able to walk, stumbling at every step. Is there something peculiar in his family, or is this the common lot of all created beings?"

'"Sir," replied the coachman, "that man is sinking under old age, his senses have become obtuse, suffering has destroyed his strength, and he is despised by his relations. He is without support and useless, and people have abandoned him like a dead tree in a forest. But this is not peculiar to his

family. In every creature youth is defeated by old age. Your father, your mother, all your relations, all your friends, will come to the same state; this is the appointed end of all creatures."

'"Alas!" replied the prince, "are creatures so ignorant, so weak and foolish, as to be proud of the youth by which they are intoxicated, not seeing the old age which awaits them! As for me, I go away. Coachman, turn my chariot quickly. What have I, the future prey of old age—what have I to do with pleasure?" And the young prince returned to the city without going to his park.

'Another time the prince was driving through the southern gate to his pleasure garden, when he perceived on the road a man suffering from illness, parched with fever, his body wasted, covered with mud, without a friend, without a home, hardly able to breathe, and frightened at the sight of himself and the approach of death. Having questioned his coachman, and received from him the answer which he expected, the young prince said, "Alas! health is but the sport of a dream, and the fear of suffering must take this frightful form. Where is the wise man who, after having seen what he is, could any longer think of joy and pleasure?" The prince turned his chariot and returned to the city.

'A third time he was driving to his pleasure garden through the western gate, when he saw a dead body on the road, lying on a bier, and covered with a cloth. The friends stood about crying, sobbing, tearing their hair, covering their heads with dust, striking their breasts and uttering wild cries. The prince, again, calling his coachman to witness this painful scene,

exclaimed, "Oh! woe to youth, which must be destroyed by old age! Woe to health, which must be destroyed by so many diseases! Woe to this life, where a man remains so short a time! If there were no old age, no disease, no death; if these could be made captive for ever!" Then, betraying for the first time his intentions, the young prince said, "Let us turn back: I must think how to accomplish deliverance."

'A last meeting put an end to his hesitation. He was driving through the northern gate on the way to his pleasure gardens, when he saw a mendicant who appeared outwardly calm, subdued, looking downwards, wearing with an air of dignity his religious vestment, and carrying an alms-bowl.

'"Who is this man?" asked the prince.

'"Sir," replied the coachman, "this man is one of those who are called bhikshus, or mendicants. He has renounced all pleasures, all desires, and leads a life of austerity. He tries to conquer himself. He has become a devotee. Without passion, without envy, he walks about asking for alms."

'"This is good and well said," replied the prince. "The life of a devotee has always been praised by the wise. It will be my refuge, and the refuge of other creatures; it will lead us to a real life, to happiness and immortality."

'With these words the young prince turned his chariot and returned to the city.'

After having declared to his father and his wife his intention of retiring from the world, Buddha, in spite of their remonstrances, left his palace one night when all the guards that were to have watched him

were asleep. After travelling the whole night, he gave his horse and his ornaments to his groom, and sent him back to Kapilavastu. 'A monument,' remarks the author of the Lalita-Vistara (p. 270), 'is still to be seen on the spot where the coachman turned back.' Hiouen-Thsang (ii. 330) saw the same monument at the edge of a large forest, on his road to Kusinâgara, a city now in ruins, and situated about fifty miles E.S.E. from Gorakpur.[1]

Buddha first went to Vaisâlî, and became the pupil of a famous Brahman, who had gathered round him 300 disciples. Having learnt all that the Brahman could teach him, Buddha went away disappointed. He had not found the road to salvation. He then tried another Brahman at Râgagriha, the capital of Magadha or Behar, who had 700 disciples, and there too he looked in vain for the means of deliverance. He left him, followed by five of his fellow-students, and for six years retired into solitude, near a village named Uruvilva, subjecting himself to the most severe penances, previous to his appearing in the world as a teacher. At the end of this period, however, he arrived at the conviction that asceticism, far from giving peace of mind and preparing the way to salvation, was a snare and a stumbling-block in the way of truth. He gave up his exercises, and was at once deserted as an apostate by his five disciples. Left to himself, he now began to elaborate his own system. He had learnt that neither the doctrines nor the

[1] The geography of India at the time of Buddha, and later at the time of Fahian and Hiouen-Thsang, has been admirably treated by M. L. Vivien de Saint-Martin, in his 'Mémoire Analytique sur la Carte de l'Asie Centrale et de l'Inde,' in the third volume of M. Stanislas Julien's *Pèlerins Bouddhistes*.

austerities of the Brahmans were of any avail for accomplishing the deliverance of man, and freeing him from the fear of old age, disease, and death. After long meditations, and ecstatic visions, he at last imagined that he had arrived at that true knowledge which discloses the cause, and thereby destroys the fear, of all the changes inherent in life. It was from the moment when he arrived at this knowledge, that he claimed the name of Buddha, the Enlightened. At that moment we may truly say that the fate of millions of millions of human beings trembled in the balance. Buddha hesitated for a time whether he should keep his knowledge to himself—remain, in fact, a Pratyeka-buddha—or communicate it to the world. Compassion for the sufferings of man prevailed, and the young prince became the founder of a religion which, after more than 2,000 years, is still professed by a larger number of human beings than any other religion.[1]

The further history of the new teacher is very simple. He proceeded to Benares, which at all times was the principal seat of learning in India, and the first converts he made were the five fellow-students who had left him when he threw off the yoke of the Brahmanical observances. Many others followed; but as the Lalita-Vistara breaks off at Buddha's arrival at Benares, we have no further consecutive account of the rapid progress of his doctrine. From what we can gather from scattered notices in the Buddhist canon, he was invited by the king of Magadha, Bimbisâra, to his capital, Râgagriha. Many of his lectures are represented as having been deli-

[1] See Note on the *Religious Statistics of Buddhism*, infra, p. 223.

vered at the monastery of Kalantaka, with which the king or some rich merchant had presented him; others on the Vulture Peak, one of the five hills that surrounded the ancient capital.

Three of his most famous disciples, Sâriputra, Kâtyâyana, and Maudgalyâyana, joined him during his stay in Magadha, where he enjoyed for many years the friendship of the king. That king was afterwards assassinated by his son, Agâtasatru, and then we hear of Buddha as settled for a time at Srâvastî, north of the Ganges, where Anâthapindada, a rich merchant, had offered him and his disciples a magnificent building for their residence. Most of Buddha's lectures or sermons were delivered at Srâvastî, the capital of Kosala; and the king of Kosala himself, Prasênagit, became a convert to his doctrine. After an absence of twelve years we are told that Buddha visited his father at Kapilavastu, on which occasion he is said to have performed several miracles, and converted all the Sâkyas to his faith. His own wife became one of his followers, and, with his aunt, offers the first instance of female Buddhist devotees in India. We have fuller particulars again of the last days of Buddha's life. He had attained the good age of three score and ten, and had been on a visit to Râgagriha, where the king, Agâtasatru, the former enemy of Buddha, and the assassin of his own father, had joined the congregation, after making a public confession of his crimes. On his return he was followed by a large number of disciples, and when on the point of crossing the Ganges, he stood on a square stone, and turning his eyes back towards Râgagriha, he said, full of emotion, 'This is the last time that I

see that city.' He likewise visited Vaisâlî, and after taking leave of it, he had nearly reached the city of Kusinâgara, when his vital strength began to fail. He halted in a forest, and while sitting under a sâl tree, he gave up the ghost, or, as a Buddhist would say, attained Nirvâna.

This is the simple story of Buddha's life. It reads much better in the eloquent pages of M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire than in the turgid language of the Buddhists. If a critical historian, with the materials we possess, entered at all on the process of separating truth from falsehood, he would probably cut off much of what our biographer has left. Professor Wilson, in his Essay on Buddha and Buddhism, considers it doubtful whether any such person as Buddha ever actually existed. He dwells on the fact that there are at least twenty different dates assigned to his birth, varying from 2420 to 453 B.C. He points out that the clan of the Śâkyas is never mentioned by early Hindu writers, and he lays much stress on the fact that most of the proper names of the persons connected with Buddha suggest an allegorical signification. The name of his father, Śuddhodana,[1] means,

[1] This name Śuddhodana is generally explained as meaning 'possessed of pure food or rice.' M. Senart, however, in his *Légende du Buddha*, p. 368, points out the incongruity of such a name, and proposes to explain Śuddhodana by śuddha and udana, udana standing for udayana, as suggested by M. Garrez, like astamana for astamayana. Thus Śuddhodana would mean 'the bright rising of the sun.' This would certainly be a far more appropriate name, though it must be admitted that udaya would perhaps be more in its place than udayana. It is curious, however, that the Chinese often translate Śuddhodana by 'pure and white' (Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 116), and that they sometimes render avadâna—which we translate by parable—by dawn (Beal, *l.c.* 85, 113). Now avadâna, if connected with avadâta, white, brilliant, may have meant the

he whose food is pure; that of his mother signifies illusion; his own secular appellation, Siddhârtha, he by whom the end is accomplished. Buddha itself means, the Enlightened, or, as Professor Wilson translates it less accurately, he by whom all is known. The same distinguished scholar goes even further, and maintaining that Kapilavastu, the birthplace of Buddha, has no place in the geography of the Hindus, suggests that it may be rendered, the substance of Kapila: intimating, in fact, the Sânkhya philosophy, the doctrine of Kapila Muni, upon which the fundamental elements of Buddhism, the eternity of matter, the principles of things, and the final extinction, are supposed to be planned. 'It seems not impossible,' he continues, 'that Śâkya Muni is an unreal being, and that all that is related of him is as much a fiction, as is that of his preceding migrations, and the miracles that attended his birth, his life, and his departure.'

This is going far beyond Niebuhr, far even beyond Strauss. If an allegorical name had been invented for the father of Buddha, one more appropriate than 'Clean-food' might surely have been found. His mother is not the only queen known by the name of Mâyâ, Mâyâdêvî, Mâyâvatî. Why, if these names were invented, should his wife have been allowed to keep the prosaic name of Gopâ (cowherdess), and his father-in-law, that of Daṇḍapâṇi, 'Stick-hand'? As to his own name, Siddhârtha, the Tibetans maintain that it was given him by his parent, whose wish

dawn, and Śuddhodana would then have signified originally the *Pure Dawn*. What seems strange, however, is that this meaning, unknown both in Sanskrit and Pâli, should have been familiar to Chinese translators and their assistants.

(artha) had been fulfilled (siddha), as we hear of Désirés and Dieu-donnés in French. One of the ministers of Dasaratha had the same name. It is possible also that Buddha himself assumed it in after life, as was the case with many of the Roman surnames. As to the name of Buddha, no one ever maintained that it was more than a title, the Enlightened, changed from an appellative into a proper name, just like the name of Christos, the Anointed, or Mohammed, the Expected.[1] Kapilavastu would be a most extraordinary compound to express 'the substance of the Sânkhya philosophy.' But all doubt on the subject is removed by the fact that both Fahian in the fifth and Hiouen-Thsang in the seventh centuries visited the real ruins of that city.

Making every possible allowance for the accumulation of fiction[2] which is sure to gather round the life of the founder of every great religion, we may be satisfied that Buddhism, which changed the aspect not only of India, but of nearly the whole of Asia, had a real founder; that he was not a Brahman by birth, but belonged to the second or royal caste; that being of a meditative turn of mind, and deeply impressed with the frailty of all created things, he became a recluse, and sought for light and comfort in the different systems of Brahman philosophy and theology. Dissatisfied with the artificial systems of their priests and philosophers; convinced of the uselessness, nay of the pernicious influence, of their ceremonial practices and bodily penances; shocked,

[1] See Sprenger, *Das Leben des Mohammed*, 1861, vol. i. p. 155.

[2] This subject has since been fully and carefully treated by M. Senart, in his *Essai sur la Légende du Buddha*, Paris, 1875.

too, by their worldliness and pharisaical conceit, which made the priesthood the exclusive property of one caste and rendered every pious act impossible without their intervention, Buddha must have produced at once a powerful impression on the people at large, when, breaking through all the established rules of caste, he assumed the privileges of a Brahman, and, throwing away the splendour of his royal position, travelled about as a beggar, not shrinking from the defiling contact of sinners and publicans. Though when we now speak of Buddhism we think chiefly of its doctrines, the reform of Buddha had originally much more of a social than of a religious character. Buddha swept away the web with which the Brahmans had encircled the whole of India. Beginning as the reformer of an old, he became the founder of a new religion. We can hardly understand how any nation could have lived under a system like that of the Brahmanic hierarchy, which coiled itself round every public and private act, and would have rendered life intolerable to any who had forfeited the favour of their priests. That system was attacked by Buddha. Buddha might have taught whatever philosophy he pleased, and we should hardly have heard his name. The people would not have minded him, and his system would only have been a drop in the ocean of philosophical speculation by which India was deluged at all times. But when a young prince assembled round him people of all castes, of all ranks; when he defeated the Brahmans in public disputations; when he declared the sacrifices by which they made their living not only useless but sinful; when instead of severe penance or excommunications

inflicted by the Brahmans sometimes for the most trifling offences, he only required public confession of sin and a promise to sin no more; when the charitable gifts hitherto monopolised by the Brahmans began to flow into new channels, supporting hundreds and thousands of Buddhist mendicants, more had been achieved than probably Buddha himself had ever dreamt of; and he whose meditations had been how to deliver the soul of man from misery and the fear of death, had delivered the people of India from a degrading thraldom and from priestly tyranny.

The most important element of the Buddhist reform has always been its social and moral code, not its metaphysical theories. That moral code, taken by itself, is one of the most perfect which the world has ever known. On this point all testimonies from hostile and from friendly quarters agree.

Let us begin with a Bishop of the Roman Catholic Church. Bishop Bigandet in his 'Life of Gaudama' (Rangoon, 1866) says (p. vii.) :—'Though based upon capital and revolting errors, Buddhism teaches a surprising number of the finest precepts and purest moral truths. From the abyss of its almost unfathomable darkness it sends forth rays of the brightest hue.' And again (p. 348), 'When Gaudama unfolds his precepts and maxims for guiding man in the acquisition of science, and the destruction of his passions, he elicits the admiration, nay the astonishment, of the reader, at the sight of the profound knowledge of human nature which he displays. But his feeling soon gives place to another of pity, sadness and horror, when one sees that he has been led to the brink of Neibban.' On p. 495, he writes:

'In reading the particulars of the life of the last Buddha Gaudama, it is impossible not to feel reminded of many circumstances relating to our Saviour's life, such as it has been sketched out by the Evangelists.' And on p. 494 we read what is perhaps the strongest testimony which a Christian bishop could give: 'It will not be deemed rash to assert that most of the moral truths prescribed by the Gospel are to be met with in the Buddhistic Scriptures.'

Spence Hardy, a Wesleyan Missionary, speaking of the Dhammapada, or the 'Footsteps of the Law,' admits that a collection might be made from the precepts of this work, which in the purity of its ethics could hardly be equalled from any other heathen author.

M. Laboulaye, one of the most distinguished members of the French Academy, remarks in the 'Débats' of April 4, 1853: 'It is difficult to comprehend how men, not assisted by revelation, could have soared so high, and approached so near to the truth.' 'Besides the five great commandments not to kill, not to steal, not to commit adultery, not to lie, not to get drunk, every shade of vice, hypocrisy, anger, pride, suspicion, greediness, gossiping, cruelty to animals, is guarded against by special precepts. Among the virtues recommended, we find not only reverence of parents, care for children, submission to authority, gratitude, moderation in time of prosperity, submission in time of trial, equanimity at all times, but virtues unknown in any heathen system of morality, such as the duty of forgiving insults and not rewarding evil with evil. All virtues, we are

told, spring from Maitrî, and this Maitrî can only be translated by charity and love.[1]

We add one more testimony from the work of M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire:—

'Je n'hésite pas à ajouter,' he writes, 'que, sauf le Christ tout seul, il n'est point, parmi les fondateurs de religion, de figure plus pure ni plus touchante que celle du Bouddha. Sa vie n'a point de tâche. Son constant héroisme égale sa conviction; et si la théorie qu'il préconise est fausse, les exemples personnels qu'il donne sont irréprochables. Il est le modèle achevé de toutes les vertus qu'il prêche; son abnégation, sa charité, son inaltérable douceur, ne se démentent point un seul instant; il abandonne à vingt-neuf ans la cour du roi son père pour se faire religieux et mendiant; il prépare silencieusement sa doctrine par six années de retraite et de méditation; il la propage par la seule puissance de la parole et de la persuasion, pendant plus d'un demi-siècle; et quand il meurt entre les bras de ses disciples, c'est avec la sérénité d'un sage qui a pratiqué le bien toute sa vie, et qui est assuré d'avoir trouvé le vrai' (p. v.).

There still remain, no doubt, some blurred and doubtful pages in the history of the prince of Kapilavastu; but we have only to look at the works on ancient philosophy and religion published some thirty years ago, in order to perceive the immense

[1] Burnouf, *Lotus de la bonne Loi*, p. 300. 'I do not hesitate,' says Burnouf, 'to translate by charity the word Maitrî; it does not express friendship or the feeling of particular affection which a man has for one or more of his fellow creatures, but that universal feeling which inspires us with good-will towards all men and constant willingness to help them.'

progress that has been made in establishing the true historical character of the founder of Buddhism. There was a time when Buddha was identified with Christ. The Manichæans were actually forced to abjure their belief that Buddha, Christ, and Mani were one and the same person.[1] But we are thinking rather of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries, when elaborate books were written in order to prove that Buddha had been in reality the Thoth of the Egyptians, that he was Mercury, or Wodan, or Zoroaster, or Pythagoras. Even Sir W. Jones, as we saw, identified Buddha, first with Odin, and afterwards with Shishak, 'who either in person or by a colony from Egypt imported into India the mild heresy of the ancient Bauddhas.' Now, we know

[1] Neander, *History of the Church*, vol. i. p. 817 : Τὸν Ζαραδὰν καὶ Βουδὰν καὶ τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ τὸν Μανιχαῖον ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι. As I found that some false theories had been built on this formula, I consulted my friend, the Rev. E. Hatch, on its probable age. I was informed by him that it was first printed by Goar, in his *Euchologium*, from a Barberini MS. It was next printed by Cotelerius, *Notæ ad Patr. Apost.* ed. 1672, p. 368, from a MS. in the Royal Library at Paris, and afterwards by Tollius, in *Insignia Itineraria Italici*, ed. 1696, p. 126, from a Vienna MS. (described in Lambeccius, *Bibliotheca Cæsar. Vindob.* ed. Kollarius, lib. v. p. 253). Cotelerius and Tollius agree in giving the clause as : Ἀναθεματίζω τοὺς τὸν Ζαραδὴν καὶ Βουδὰν καὶ τὸν Χριστὸν καὶ τὸν Μανιχαῖον καὶ τὸν ἥλιον ἕνα καὶ τὸν αὐτὸν εἶναι λέγοντας. But Goar's MS. has only : 'I anathematize Zarada and Budda and Scythianus, predecessors of Manichæus.' Goar also attributes it to Methodius of Constantinople (died *circa* 842) ; and Migne, *Patrol. Græc.* vol. c. p. 1322, following Goar, prints it among the works of Methodius. The formula seems to belong to the *later* Manichæan or Paulinian controversies which were in full vigour in the European part of the Eastern Empire about the middle of the ninth century. It is therefore of next to no value as to the early relations of either Manichæism or Christianity to Buddhism, unless further researches should enable us to trace it back to earlier times and to higher authorities in the Christian Church.

that neither Egypt nor the Walhalla of Germany, neither Greece nor Persia, could have produced either the man himself or his doctrine. He is the offspring of India in body and soul. His doctrine, by the very antagonism in which it stands to the old system of Brahmanism, shows that it could not have sprung up in any country except India. The ancient history of Brahmanism leads on to Buddhism, with the same necessity with which mediæval Romanism led to Protestantism. Though the date of Buddha is still liable to small chronological oscillations, his place in the intellectual annals of India is henceforth definitely marked. Buddhism became the state religion of India at the time of Asoka; and Asoka, the Buddhist Constantine, was the grandson of Kandragupta, and Kandragupta was the contemporary of Seleucus Nicator. The system of the Brahmans had run its course. Their ascendency, at first purely intellectual and religious, had gradually assumed a political character. By means of the system of caste this influence pervaded the whole social fabric, not as a vivifying leaven, but as a deadly poison. Their increasing power and self-confidence are clearly exhibited in the successive periods of their ancient literature. It begins with the simple hymns of the Veda. These are followed by the tracts known by the name of Brâhmanas, in which a complete system of theology is elaborated and claims advanced in favour of the Brahmans such as were seldom conceded to any hierarchy. The third period in the history of their ancient literature is marked by their Sûtras or Aphorisms, short and dry formularies, showing the Brahmans in secure

possession of all their claims. Such privileges as they then enjoyed are never enjoyed for any length of time. It was impossible for anybody to move or to assert his freedom of thought and action without finding himself impeded on all sides by the web of the Brahmanic law; nor was there anything in their religion to satisfy the natural yearnings of the human heart after spiritual comfort. What was felt by Buddha had been felt more or less intensely by thousands; and this was the secret of his success. That success, however, was probably accelerated by political events. Kandragupta had conquered the throne of Magadha, and acquired his supremacy in India in defiance of the Brahmanic law. He was of low orgin, a mere adventurer, and by his accession to the throne an important mesh had been broken in the intricate system of caste. Neither he nor his successors could count on the hearty support of the Brahmans, and it is but natural that his grandson, Asoka, should have been driven to seek support from the new sect founded by Buddha. Buddha, by giving up his royal station, had broken the law of caste as much as Kandragupta by usurping it. His school, though it had probably escaped open persecution until it rose to political importance, could never have been on friendly terms with the Brahmans of the old school. The *parvenu* on the throne saw his natural allies in the followers of Buddha, and the mendicants, who by their unostentatious behaviour had won golden opinions among the lower and middle classes, were suddenly raised to an importance little dreamt of by their founder. Those who see in Buddhism not a social but chiefly a religious and

philosophical reform, have been deceived by the later Buddhist literature, and particularly by the controversies between Buddhists and Brahmans, which in later times led to the total expulsion of the former from India, and to the political re-establishment of Brahmanism. These, no doubt, turn chiefly on philosophical problems, and are of the most abstruse and intricate character. But such was not the teaching of Buddha. If we may judge from 'the four verities,' which Buddha inculcated from the first day that he entered on his career as a teacher, his philosophy of life was very simple. He proclaims that there was nothing but sorrow in life; that sorrow is produced by our affections, that our affections must be destroyed in order to destroy the root of sorrow, and that he could teach mankind how to eradicate all the affections, all passions, all desires. Such doctrines were intelligible; and considering that Buddha received people of all castes, who after renouncing the world and assuming their yellow robes were sure of finding a livelihood from the charitable gifts of the people, it is not surprising that the number of his followers should have grown so rapidly. If Buddha really taught the metaphysical doctrines which are ascribed to him by subsequent writers—and this is a point which it is impossible as yet to settle—not one in a thousand among his followers would have been capable of appreciating those speculations. They must have been reserved for a few of his disciples, and they would never have formed the nucleus for a popular religion.

Nearly all who have written on Buddhism, and M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire among the rest, have

endeavoured to show that these metaphysical doctrines of Buddha were borrowed from the earlier systems of Brahmanic philosophy, and more particularly from the Sânkhya system. The reputed founder of that system is Kapila, and we saw before how Professor Wilson actually changed the name of Kapilavastu, the birthplace of Buddha, into a mere allegory, Kapilavastu meaning, according to him, the substance of Kapila or of the Sânkhya philosophy. This is not all. Mr. Spence Hardy (p. 132) quotes a legend in which it is said that Buddha was in a former existence an ascetic, called Kapila, that the Sâkya princes came to his hermitage, and that he pointed out to them the proper place for founding a new city, which city was named after him Kapilavastu.

But we have looked in vain for any definite similarities between the system of Kapila, as known to us in the Sânkhya-sûtras, and the Abhidharma, or the metaphysics of the Buddhists. Such similarities would be invaluable. They would probably enable us to decide whether Buddha borrowed from Kapila or Kapila from Buddha, and thus determine the real chronology of the philosophical literature of India, as either prior or subsequent to the Buddhist era. But as yet all that has been written on this subject is purely assertive. There are no doubt certain notions which Buddha shares in common, not only with Kapila, but with every Hindu philosopher. The idea of transmigration, the belief in the continuing effects of our good and bad actions, extending from our former to our present and from our present to our future lives, the sense that life is a dream or a burden, the admission of the uselessness of religious

observances after the attainment of the highest knowledge—all these belong, so to say, to the national philosophy of India. We meet with these ideas everywhere, in the poetry, the philosophy, the religion of the Hindus. They cannot be claimed as the exclusive property of any system in particular. But if we look for more special coincidences between Buddha's doctrines and those of Kapila or other Indian philosophers, we look in vain. At first it might seem as if the very first aphorism of Kapila—namely, 'the complete cessation of pain, which is of three kinds, is the highest aim of man'—was merely a philosophical paraphrase of the events which, as we saw, determined Buddha to renounce the world in search of the true road to salvation. But though the starting-point of Kapila and Buddha is the same, a keen sense of human misery and a yearning after a better state, their roads from the very first diverge so completely and their goals are so far apart, that it is difficult to understand how, almost by common consent, Buddha is supposed either to have followed in the footsteps of Kapila, or to have changed Kapila's philosophy into a religion. Some scholars imagine that there was a more simple and primitive philosophy which was taught by Kapila, and that the Sûtras which are now ascribed to him are of later date. It is as easy to make as it is impossible either to prove or to disprove such an assertion. At present we know Kapila's philosophy from his Sûtras only,[1] and these Sûtras seem to us posterior, not

[1] Of Kapila's Sûtras, together with the commentary of Vigñâna Bhikshu, a new edition was published in 1856, by Dr. Fitz-Edward Hall, in the *Bibliotheca Indica*. An excellent translation of the

anterior, to Buddha. Though the name of Buddha is not mentioned in the Sûtras, his doctrines, I believe, are clearly alluded to and controverted in several parts of them.

It has been said that Buddha and Kapila were both atheists, and that Buddha borrowed his atheism from Kapila. But atheism is an indefinite term, and may mean very different things. In one sense every Indian philosopher was an atheist, for they all perceived that the gods of the populace could not claim the attributes that belong to a Supreme Being. But all the important philosophical systems of the Brahmans admit, in some form or other, the existence of an Absolute and Supreme Being, the source of all that exists, or seems to exist. Kapila, when accused of atheism, is not accused of denying the existence of an Absolute Being. He is accused of denying the existence of an Îsvara, which in general means the Lord, but which, in the passage where it occurs, refers to the Îsvara of the Yogins, or mystic philosophers. These Yogins maintained that in an ecstatic state man possesses the power of seeing God face to face, and they wished to have this ecstatic intuition included under the head of sensuous perceptions. To this Kapila demurred. You have not proved the existence of your Lord, he says, and therefore I see no reason why I should alter my definition of sensuous perception in order to accommodate your ecstatic visions. The commentator narrates that this strong language was used by Kapila in order to silence the wild talk of the Mystics, and that, though he taunted

Aphorisms, with illustrative extracts from the commentaries, was printed for the use of the Benares College, by Dr. Ballantyne.

his adversaries with having failed to prove the existence of their Lord, he himself was far from denying the existence of a Supreme Being. Kapila, however, went further. He endeavoured to show that all the attributes which the Mystics ascribed to their Lord are inappropriate. He used arguments very similar to those which have lately been used with such ability by a distinguished Bampton Lecturer. The supreme Lord of the Mystics, Kapila argued, is either absolute and unconditioned (mukta), or he is bound and conditioned (baddha). If he is absolute and unconditioned, he cannot enter into the condition of a Creator; he would have no desires which could instigate him to create. If, on the contrary, he is represented as active, and entering on the work of creation, he would no longer be the absolute and unchangeable Being which we are asked to believe in. Kapila, like the preacher of our own days, was accused of paving the road to atheism, but his philosophy was nevertheless admitted as orthodox, because, in addition to sensuous perception and inductive reasoning, Kapila professed emphatically his belief in revelation—*i.e.* in the Veda—and allowed to it a place among the recognised instruments of knowledge. Buddha refused to allow to the Vedas any independent authority whatever, and this constituted the fundamental difference between the two philosophers.

Whether Kapila's philosophy was really in accordance with the spirit of the Veda, is quite a different question. No philosophy, at least nothing like a definite system, is to be found in the sacred hymns of the Brahmans; and though the Vedânta philo-

sophy does less violence than the Sânkhya to what it quotes from the Veda, the authors of the Veda would have been as much surprised at the consequences deduced from their words by the Vedântin as by the strange meaning attributed to them by Kapila. The Vedânta philosopher would deny the existence of a Creator in the usual sense of the word quite as much as the follower of the Sânkhya philosophy of Kapila. He explained the universe as an emanation from Brahman, which is all in all, not as the creation of a God. Kapila admitted two principles, an absolute Spirit and Nature, and he looked upon the universe as produced by a reflection of Nature thrown on the mirror of the absolute Spirit. Both systems seem to regard creation, or the created world, as an unfortunate accident. But they maintain that its effects can be neutralised, and that emancipation from the bonds of earthly existence is possible by means of philosophy. The Vedânta philosopher imagined that he was free when he had arrived at the knowledge that nothing exists but Brahman; that all phenomena are merely the result of ignorance; that after the destruction of that ignorance, and of its effects, all is merged again in Brahman, the true source of being, thought, and happiness. Kapila taught that the spirit became free from all mundane fetters as soon as it perceived that all phenomena were only passing reflections produced by nature upon the spirit, and as soon as it was able to shut its eyes to those illusory visions. Both systems, therefore—and the same applies to all the other philosophica systems of the Brahmans—admitted an absolute or self-existing Being, as the cause of all that exists or

seems to exist. And here lies the specific difference between Kapila and Buddha. Buddha, like Kapila, maintained that this world had no absolute reality, that it was a snare and an illusion. The words, 'All is perishable, all is miserable, all is void,' must frequently have passed his lips. But we cannot call things unreal unless we have a conception of something that is real. Where, then, did Buddha find a reality in comparison with which this world might be called unreal? What remedy did he propose as an emancipation from the sufferings of this life? Difficult as it seems to us to conceive it, Buddha admits of no real cause of this unreal world. He denies the existence not only of a Creator, but of any Absolute Being. According to the metaphysical tenets, if not of Buddha himself, at least of his sect, there is no reality anywhere, neither in the past nor in the future. True wisdom consists in perceiving the nothingness of all things, and in a desire to become nothing, to be blown out, to enter into the state of Nirvâna. Emancipation is obtained by total extinction, not by absorption in Brahman, or by a recovery of the soul's true estate. If to be is misery, not to be must be felicity; and this felicity is the highest reward which Buddha promised to his disciples. In reading the Aphorisms of Kapila, it is difficult not to see in his remarks on those who maintain that all is void, covered attacks on Buddha and his followers. In one place (I. 43) Kapila argues that if people believed in the reality of thought only, and denied the reality of external objects, they would soon be driven to admit that nothing at all exists, because we perceive our thoughts in the same manner as we perceive external objects. This naturally leads

him to an examination of that extreme doctrine according to which all that we perceive is void, and all is supposed to perish, because it is the nature of things that they should perish. Kapila remarks in reference to this view (I. 45), that it is a mere assertion of persons who are 'not enlightened'—in Sanskrit a-buddha, a sarcastic expression in which it is difficult not to see an allusion to Buddha, or to those who claimed for him the title of the Enlightened.[1] Kapila then proceeds to give the best answer that could be given to those who taught that complete annihilation must be the highest aim of man, as the only means of a complete cessation of suffering. 'It is not so,' he says, 'for if people wish to be free from suffering, it is they themselves who wish to be free, just as in this life it is they themselves who wish to enjoy happiness. There must be a permanent soul in order to satisfy the yearnings of the human heart, and if you deny that soul, you have no right to speak of the highest aim of man.'

Whether the belief in this kind of Nirvâna—*i.e.* in a total extinction of being, personality, and consciousness—was at any time shared by the large masses of the people, is difficult either to assert or deny. We know nothing in ancient times of the religious convictions of the millions. We only know what a few leading spirits believed, or professed to believe. That certain people in modern and ancient times have spoken and written of total extinction as the highest aim of man cannot be denied. Job cursed the day on which he was born, and Solomon praised the 'dead which are already dead, more than the living

[1] For a similar play on the word Buddha, see Mahâbhâr., xv. 567.

which are yet alive.' 'Yea, better is he than both they,' he said, 'which hath not yet been, who hath not seen the evil work that is done under the sun.' Voltaire said in his own flippant way, 'On aime la vie, mais le néant ne laisse pas d'avoir du bon;' and a modern German philosopher, who has found much favour with those who profess to despise Kant, Schelling, and Hegel, writes, 'Considered in its objective value, it is more than doubtful that life is preferable to the Nothing. I should say even, that if experience and reflection could lift up their voices they would recommend to us the Nothing. We are what ought not to be, and we shall therefore cease to be.' Under peculiar circumstances, in the agonies of despair, or under the gathering clouds of madness, such language is intelligible: but to believe, as we are asked to believe, that one half of mankind had yearned for total annihilation would be tantamount to a belief that there is a difference in kind between man and man. Buddhist philosophers, no doubt, held this doctrine, and it cannot be denied that it found a place in the Buddhist canon. But even among the different schools of Buddhist philosophers, very different views are adopted as to the true meaning of Nirvâna, and with the modern Buddhists of Burmah, for instance, Nigban, as they call it, is defined simply as freedom from old age, disease, and death. We do not find fault with M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire for having so emphatically pressed the charge of nihilism against Buddha himself. In one portion of the Buddhist canon the most extreme views of nihilism are put into his mouth. All we can say is that that canon is later than Buddha, and that in the canonical books of

the Northern Buddhists, such as the 'Lotus of the Good Law,'[1] the founder of Buddhism, after having entered into Nirvâna, is still spoken of as living, nay, as showing himself to those who believe in him. Buddha, who denied the existence, or at least the divine nature, of the gods worshipped by the Brahmans, was raised himself to the rank of a deity by some of his followers[2] (the Aisvarikas), and we need not wonder, therefore, if his Nirvâna too was gradually changed into an Elysian field.

And finally, if we may argue from human nature, such as we find it at all times and in all countries, we confess that we cannot bring ourselves to believe that the reformer of India, the teacher of so perfect a code of morality, the young prince who gave up all he had in order to help those whom he saw afflicted in mind, body, or estate, should have cared much about speculations which he knew would either be misunderstood, or not understood at all, by those whom he wished to

[1] This statement has been fiercely attacked by Mr. D'Alwis, in his *Buddhist Nirvâna*, p. 50. '"But," says Max Müller, "in the legends Buddha appears to his disciples even after his death." We confess we are utterly ignorant of the legend here referred to; but we are not a little surprised that a writer, who insists upon the Buddhist Canon alone as being our true guide in all matters, should refer to, or derive aid from, legendary tales in favour of this new doctrine of nihilism.' My answer is that in one of the canonical books of the Northern Buddhists, the Saddharma-pundarîka, we read: 'When I (Bhagavat) shall have entered into complete Nirvâna, I shall send numerous miracles;' and again, 'I shall then show my luminous form,' etc. See *Lotus de la bonne Loi*, p. 144.

[2] How early this took place, we see from Clemens of Alexandria, *Strom.* i. p. 305, A.B. (ed. Colon. 1688); *Megasthenis Indica*, ed. Schwanbeck, p. 139, εἰσὶ δὲ τῶν Ἰνδῶν οἱ τοῖς Βουττα (*sive* Βουτα) πειθόμενοι παραγγέλμασιν, ὃν δι' ὑπερβολὴν σεμνότητος ὡς θεὸν τετιμήκασι.

benefit; that he should have thrown away one of the most powerful weapons in the hands of every religious teacher, the belief in a future life, and should not have seen that, if this life was sooner or later to end in nothing, it was hardly worth the trouble which he took himself, or the sacrifices which he imposed on his disciples.

NOTES.

Religious Statistics of Buddhism.

It would, no doubt, be a great mistake to imagine that the truth or value of any religion could be settled by majorities. In the present state of the world the contrary is more likely to be true. Nevertheless, attempts have not been wanting to prove the excellency of certain religions on the ground of the number of their adherents. It was long the custom to say that Christianity counted more believers than any other faith. Even so late as 1870, a distinguished scholar did not hesitate to say 'that the earth contained 700 millions of human beings, one half of them being Christians.'[1] In the present state of statistical science the one statement is as valueless as the other. The earth now counts at least 1,400 millions of inhabitants, and the number of Christians has never been proved to be more than 390 millions, though in no religion are there greater opportunities for ascertaining the exact number of its adherents than in Christianity.

Religious statistics are always extremely vague, yet their very vagueness seems to prove attractive. When entering upon them we should always remember the honest confession of Malte Brun, '*Si l'on veut être de bonne foi, il faut avouer, que l'on n'a pas plus de raison pour donner à*

[1] Petermann's *Mittheilungen*, vol. viii. p. 4.

l'Asie 500 *millions, que pour lui en donner* 250.' Even in a country like England, where every man, woman, and child has been numbered, we know how uncertain all denominational returns have proved. What can we expect, then, from countries in which the exact number of the population varies, in different accounts, not by hundreds and thousands, but by millions! No doubt statistical science has made of late immense progress, but it is sure to make greater progress still. In 1812 China was credited with 362,000,000, in 1842 with 414,700,000 inhabitants, while in the last century 50,000,000 only were assigned to the Celestial Empire.[1] The Jews, not long ago estimated at 3,600,000, now claim between 6,000,000 and 7,000,000, the same as in the days of David.[2] In the estimates of 1861 the population of India was given as 135,500,000, by the census of 1871 at 191,000,000 for British India alone, and we may trust to Dr. Hunter's perseverance that the census of 1881 will again considerably modify the figures now quoted in all statistical hand-books.

What distinguishes modern statistics is a greater readiness to confess our ignorance, instead of fixing on some average number which, if once thrown out, is repeated by everybody. Thus the religious census given by Berghaus in his 'Physical Atlas,' has been repeated again and again. —I myself have often quoted it—though at present it is certainly antiquated. He gave the following table:—

1. Buddhists. .	31·2 per cent.	4. Brahmanists .	13·4 per cent.
2. Christians .	30·7 „	5. Heathen . .	8·7 „
3. Mohammedans	15·7 „	6. Jews	0·3 „

According to this calculation, it was assumed that the Buddhists could claim a majority above all the other religions of the world. But though this is perfectly true, it cannot certainly be proved by Berghaus's figures. Berghaus does not distinguish the Buddhists in China from the followers of Confucius and Lao-tse in that country, and

[1] Petermann's *Mittheilungen*, vol. viii. p. 8.

[2] See *Times*, September 13, 1879.

their numbers are so considerable as entirely to vitiate his calculations. It is very difficult, no doubt, to find out in China to what religion a man belongs, because the same person may profess two or even three religions. The Emperor of China himself, after sacrificing according to the ritual of Confucius, visits a Tao-tse shrine, and afterwards bows before an image of Fo in a Buddhist temple.[1] But, for all that, it would be impossible to claim the whole population of China for Buddhism. Dr. Gutzlaff ('Journal of Royal Asiatic Society,' xvi. p. 89) thought that the Buddhist religious establishments in China might be estimated at two-thirds of the whole of the religious edifices throughout China; while Professor Schott ('Buddhaismus,' 1844) considered the Buddhists as only forming a minority in China. However that may be, it is quite clear that, if we deduct from the sum total of the inhabitants of China—all of whom Berghaus puts down as Buddhists—those who are decidedly not Buddhists, but followers of Confucius or Lao-tse, the balance between Buddhism and Christianity would be considerably altered, and instead of occupying the second place with 30·7 per cent., as against Buddhism with 31·2 per cent., Christianity would no doubt have a right to claim the first place, always supposing that Berghaus's numbers are still to be depended on. This, however, is no longer the case, as we shall see presently.

As a specimen of what a religious census ought to be—though its authors would be the last to claim any perfection or finality for it—I subjoin here that of British India, taken in 1871, with several important corrections and improvements which I have been enabled to make, thanks to the valuable assistance of Dr. W. W. Hunter.

It should be borne in mind, however, that this census dealt with 191 millions of British India only, and necessarily leaves out of account the 50 millions or so in the

[1] See Wassiliew, in *Mélanges Asiatiques de St. Pétersbourg*, vol. ii. p. 374.

Population of British India, classified according to Religious Denomination, as presented to Parliament in 1880, *but based on the Census of* 1871–1872.

Provinces	Hindus	Sikhs	Mohammedans	Buddhists and Jains	Christians	Others, and Religion not known	Total
Bengal	38,975,418	—	19,553,831	84,974	90,763	2,033,231	60,738,217
Assam	2,679,507	—	1,104,601	1,521	1,947	337,396	4,124,972
N.-W. Prov.	26,568,071	1,003	4,189,348	—	22,196	586	30,781,204
Ajmere	348,248	—	47,310	—	1,273	58	396,889
Oudh	10,003,323	4,752	1,197,704	—	7,761	10,555	11,224,095
Punjab	6,125,460	1,144,090	9,337,685	36,190	22,154	945,919	17,611,498
Centr. Prov.	5,879,772	178	233,247	36,569	10,477	2,013,581	8,173,824
Berar	1,912,155	406	154,951	—	903	159,239	2,227,654
Mysore	4,807,425	—	208,991	13,263	25,676	57	5,055,412
Coorg	154,476	—	11,304	112	2,410	10	168,312
British Burmah	36,658	—	99,846	2,447,831	52,299	452,268	3,088,902
Madras	28,863,978	—	1,857,857	21,254	533,760	108,971	31,385,820
Bombay	12,989,329	24,007	2,870,450	191,137	126,063	148,220	16,349,206
Andam. & Nicob. Isles	8,901	—	3,332	134	492	12,185	25,044
Total	139,352,721	1,174,436	40,870,457	2,832,985	898,174	6,222,276	191,351,049
	72·33 p. c.	·61	21·36 p. c.	1·43 p. c.	0·47 p. c.	3·25 p. c.	

The whole 250 millions of India, under British and native sway, has been roughly classified by G. Smith ('Fifty Years of Foreign Missions of the Free Church of Scotland,' Edinburgh, 1879, p. 32):—Demon-worshippers (Non-Aryan), 28½ millions; Hindus (Aryans), Parsis and Buddhists, 170 millions; Mohammedans, 50 millions; Christians (of every tribe), 1½ million.

N.B. Owing to difficulties connected with taking a denominational census, the returns obtained of the different religions do not in all cases exactly tally with the total population of the province as ascertained by actual enumeration. These errors have been adjusted by means of column VII., 'Others, and Religion not known.'

feudatory states. Thus the Christian population is given at 898,174, but to these must be added about 700,000 native Christians in native territory. Dr. W. W. Hunter, the Director-General of Statistics, gives the number in two feudatory states alone, Cochin and Travancore, at 609,935 in 1875, and he states that the Roman Catholic Missions claim about 1¼ million of souls. There is besides a large balance of Protestant Christians in India.

The number of Buddhists, including Jains—who ought to have been separated—is not very large in India, and it would dwindle away to almost nothing but for the two and a half millions in British Burmah.

The question then is, how are we to fix the sum total of Buddhists in the world? It is easy to say, as Bishop Bigandet does,[1] that nearly one-fourth of the human race is under the sway of Buddhism. This teaches us no more than when Sprenger tells us that the Mohammedans form one-tenth of the whole of humanity.

The first question that has to be answered is, What is the number of humanity?

According to the latest and most trustworthy figures, published by the 'Geographical Institute of Justus Perthes,'[2] the sum total of human beings, now ascertained, is—

Europe	312,398,480
Asia	831,000,000
Africa	205,219,500
Australia and Polynesia . . .	4,411,300
America	86,116,000
Total	1,439,145,280

Out of that number one of the latest writers on Buddhism—Mr. Rhys Davids—claims 500,000,000, or more

[1] *Life of Gaudama*, p. vii.

[2] *Mittheilungen aus Justus Perthes' Geographischer Anstalt*, von Dr. Petermann, Gotha, 1878: 'Die Bevölkerung der Erde,' von Behm und Wagner.

than one-third, for Buddhism, which may be right; while he assigns to Christianity only 327,000,000, which is too low a figure. Taking the latest statements with regard to the number of followers of each religion, we get the following table :—

1. Buddhists	500,000,000
2. Christians	390,000,000
3. Mohammedans	170,000,000
4. Hindus (in British India)	139,350,000
„ (in Native States)	20,000,000
5. Sikhs	1,200,000
6. Jews	7,000,000
7. Parsees (in India)	150,000
„ (in Yezd, Kirman, etc.)	8,000
8. Nondescript	100,000,000
Total	1,327,708,000

But when we ask how the number of 500,000,000 for the religion of Buddha has been arrived at, we shall see at once how uncertain the ground is on which we stand. Mr. Rhys Davids has been at great pains to compute this number, and I shall give his list in order to show how, while I differ from him on several important points, we still arrive on the whole at the same result.

SOUTHERN BUDDHISTS.

In Ceylon	1,520,575	(Number of inhabitants 2,405,287, including 500,000 Mohammedans.)
„ British Burmah	2,447,831	(Ind. Cens. 1871)
„ Burmah	3,000,000	(Conjectured on military returns.)
„ Siam	10,000,000	(ditto)
„ Annam	12,000,000	(ditto)
„ Jains	485,020	(Ind. Cens. 1871).[1]
Total	29,453,426	

[1] The census for British India gives 2,832,851 Buddhists and Jains. If we deduct 2,447,831 for British Burmah there remain only 385,020, not 485,020. There is, however, a considerable Buddhistic, Jain, or Semi-Buddhistic population in the native territories and along the frontier Himalayan States.

NORTHERN BUDDHISTS.

Dutch Possessions and Bali	50,000	(Friedrich 'J.R.A.S.' 1876, p. 196)
British Possessions, chiefly in Spiti, Assam, Further India, Hong Kong	500,000	
Russian Possessions, Kirgis, Kalmuks on Volga, Buriates in South Siberia	600,000	(Schlagintweit, 'Buddh. in Tibet,' p. 12)
Lieu cheu Islands	1,000,000	(Schlagintweit, *l.c.*, gives 1½ million)
Korea	8,000,000	
Bhutan and Sikhim	1,000,000	(Schlagintweit, *l.c.*, 1½ million)
Kashmir (Ladak)	200,000	
Tibet	6,000,000	
Mongolia	2,000,000	
Mandshuria	3,000,000	
Japan	32,794,897	
Nepal	500,000	
China proper (18 provinces)	414,686,994	
Total	470,331,891	
Southern and Northern Buddhists together	29,453,426 470,331,891	
Total	499,785,317	

Testing these figures by a reference to the latest statistics published by the 'Geographical Institute of Gotha,' I find that, beginning with Ceylon, its population is now (v. 43) given as 2,459,542, instead of 2,405,287. It is safer, however, to leave the number of Buddhists in Ceylon as given in the census of 1872.

Ceylon	1,520,575	inhabitants,	1,520,575
	now contains		instead of
British Burmah (iv. 35)	2,747,148	„	2,447,831
Burmah (ii. 44)	4,000,000	„	3,000,000
Siam (iii. 106)	5,750,000	„	10,000,000
Annam (iv. 49)	21,000,000	„	12,000,000
Buddhists or Jains in India	385,020	„	485,020
Total	35,402,743	„	29,453,426

From the above sum of inhabitants must be deducted, of course, in all countries except Ceylon, the unknown quantity of people who are not Buddhists; and here we are often left entirely in the dark. There ought to be added the Buddhist inhabitants that may be found in South Assam (130,000), French Cochinchina (1,600,000), and Cambodja (890,000).

NORTHERN BUDDHISTS.

The number of Buddhists in the *Dutch Possessions and Bali* is fixed by Friedrich as 50,000. This seems a small number, considering the number of inhabitants.

The *British Possessions* are explained to mean Spiti, Assam, Further India, and Hong Kong. Here the number of Buddhists can be conjectural only.

The *Russian Possessions* are said to include about 200,000 Kirghis or Kalmuk Tatars on the lower bank of the Volga in Europe, and an increasing number of Buriates and others in Southern Siberia, as computed by Schlagintweit ('Buddhism in Tibet,' p. 12). Schlagintweit, however ('Buddhism in Tibet,' p. 121) says that the Russian Empire contains some 400,000 Buddhists—viz., 82,000 Kirghises, 119,162 Kalmuks, and about 190,000 Buriates, which would give a total of 391,162.

The *Lieu cheu* islands, according to the census of 1874, contained only 167,073 inhabitants. Sometimes, however, other islands are included under that name.

Korea now returns 8,500,000 inhabitants (v. 32).

Bhutan and Sikhim.—Bhutan, according to Hughes (Schlagintweit, *l.c.*), counts 1½ million of inhabitants. Schlagintweit gives only 145,200 as Buddhists in Bhutan, and in the 'Mittheilungen' (iv. 48) the sum total of inhabitants is 200,000. The population of Sikhim, with the Buddhists of Nepal, Schlagintweit estimates as between 500,000 and 550,000.

Kashmir has but few Buddhist inhabitants. Ladak, now a province of Kashmir, having 178,000 inhabitants, is mostly Buddhist.

Tibet (v. 32) has now 6,000,000 inhabitants, mostly Buddhists.

Mongolia (v. 32) has 2,000,000 inhabitants.

Mandshuria (v. 32) has 12,000,000 inhabitants.

Japan (v. 32) has 33,623,373 inhabitants, including, however, the Lieu cheu islands.

Nepal (iv. 48) has 3,000,000 inhabitants, the majority being Hindus.

China (ii. 40) has 405,000,000. The number comprises the three religions, and, for reasons pointed out before, cannot possibly be assigned to Buddhism alone.

As matter for consideration the student of Buddhism may be reminded that the countries supposed to be tributary to China—some of which have been comprehended in the above list—are now credited with a number of 29,580,000 inhabitants, viz. (v. 32) :—

Eastern Turkestan	580,000
Dsungaria	500,000
Mongolia	2,000,000
Mandshuria	12,000,000
Korea	8,500,000
Neutral country between Mandshuria and Korea	——
Tibet	6,000,000
	29,580,000

Though the number of Buddhists in British India is very small, some addition will probably have to be made to it from the Independent States, which are set down (v. 37) with 48,110,200 inhabitants. Of the Himalayan States, Nepal and Bhutan only have contributed their quota to the Buddhist census. A few more Buddhists would probably come from Manipur (126,000 inhabitants) and from the tribes north and south of Assam (iv. 48).

Taking it therefore all in all, I doubt whether, even

after deducting the many millions which ought to be deducted from the number of Buddhists returned in China, the sum total of the followers of the Buddhist religion, or of those who belong to that religion rather than to any other, should be placed below 500,000,000. This would give us about one-third of the whole human race as more or less under the sway of the teaching of one man—Buddha Śâkya-muni.

A new issue of Behm and Wagner's 'Die Bevölkerung der Erde' has just been published, of which the *Times* (Sept. 21, 1880) gives a short abstract from an early copy. The population of the whole earth is now given as —

Europe	315,929,000
Asia	834,707,000
Africa	205,679,000
America	95,495,500
Australia and Polynesia	4,031,000
Polar Regions	82,000
Total	1455,923,500

showing an increase since the last publication, nineteen months ago, of 16,778,200.

Other changes which are of interest, but could not be inserted in the foregoing tables, are, that China with all its dependencies now claims 434,626,500 inhabitants; Ceylon, 2,755,557. The Indo-Chinese Peninsula is tabulated :—

British Burmah	2,747,148
Manipur	126,000
Tribes East and South of Assam	200,000
Independent Burmah	4,000,000
Siam	5,750,000
Annam	21,000,000
French Cochin China	1,600,000
Cambodia	890,000
Independent Malacca	300,000
Strait Settlements	350,000
Total	36,963,148

XVI.

BUDDHIST PILGRIMS.[1]

M. STANISLAS JULIEN has commenced the publication of a work entitled, 'Voyages des Pèlerins Bouddhistes.' The first volume, published in the year 1853, contains the biography of Hiouen-thsang, who, in the middle of the seventh century A.D., travelled from China through Central Asia to India. The second, which has just reached us, gives us the first portion of Hiouen-thsang's own diary.

There are not many books of travel which can be compared to these volumes. Hiouen-thsang passed through countries which few had visited before him. He describes parts of the world which no one has explored since, and where even our modern maps contain hardly more than the ingenious conjectures of Alexander von Humboldt. His observations are minute; his geographical, statistical, and historical remarks most accurate and trustworthy. The chief object of his travels was to study the religion of Buddha, the

[1] *Voyages des Pèlerins Bouddhistes.* Vol. I. Histoire de la Vie de Hiouen-thsang, et de ses Voyages dans l'Inde, depuis l'an 629 jusqu'en 645, par Hoeili et Yen-thsong; traduite du Chinois par Stanislas Julien.

Vol. II. Mémoires sur les Contrées Occidentales, traduits du Sanscrit en Chinois, en l'an 648, par Hiouen-thsang, et du Chinois en Français, par Stanislas Julien. Paris, 1853–1857: B. Duprat. London and Edinburgh: Williams and Norgate.

great reformer of India. Some Chinese pilgrims visited India before, several after, his time. Hiouen-thsang, however, is considered by the Chinese themselves as the most distinguished of these pilgrims, and M. Stanislas Julien has rightly assigned to him the first place in his collection.

In order to understand what Hiouen-thsang was, and to appreciate his life and his labours, we must first cast a glance at the history of a religion which, however unattractive and even mischievous it may appear to ourselves, inspired her votary with the true spirit of devotion and self-sacrifice. That religion has now existed for 2,400 years. To millions and millions of human beings it has been the only preparation for a higher life placed within their reach. And even at the present day it counts in Asia a more numerous array of believers than any other faith, not excluding Mohammedanism or Christianity. The religion of Buddha took its origin in India about the middle of the sixth century B.C., but it did not assume its political importance till about the time of Alexander's invasion. We know little, therefore, of its first origin and spreading, because the canonical works on which we must chiefly rely for information belong to a later period, and are strongly tinged with a legendary character. The very existence of such a being as Buddha, the son of Suddhodana, king of Kapilavastu, has been doubted. But what can never be doubted is this, that Buddhism, such as we find it in Russia[1] and Sweden[2] on the very threshold

[1] See W. Spottiswoode's *Tarantasse Journey*, p. 220, Visit to the Buddhist Temple.

[2] The only trace of the influence of Buddhism among the Kudic

of European civilisation, in the north of Asia, in Mongolia, Tatary, China, Tibet, Nepal, Siam, Burmah, and Ceylon, had its origin in India.[1] Doctrines similar to those of Buddha existed in that country long before his time. We can trace them like meandering roots below the surface long before we reach the point where the roots strike up into a stem, and the stem branches off again into fruit-bearing branches. What was original and new in Buddha was his changing a philosophical system into a practical doctrine; his taking the wisdom of the few, and coining as much of it as he thought genuine for the benefit of the many; his breaking with the traditional formalities of the past, and proclaiming for the first time, in spite of castes and creeds, the equality of the rich and the poor, the foolish and the wise, the 'twice-born' and the outcast. Buddhism, as a religion and as a political event, was a reaction against

races, the Fins, Laps, &c., is found in the name of their priests and sorcerers, the Shamans. Shaman, whatever has been said to the contrary, is a corruption of *Sramana*, a name applied to Buddha, and to Buddhist priests in general. The ancient mythological religion of the *K*udic races has nothing in common with Buddhism. See Castrèn's *Lectures on Finnish Mythology*, 1853. Finland was ceded by Sweden to Russia in 1809. See the Author's *Survey of Languages*, second edition, p. 116. Shamanism found its way from India to Siberia *viâ* Tibet, China, and Mongolia. Rules on the formation of magic figures, on the treatment of diseases by charms, on the worship of evil spirits, on the acquisition of supernatural powers, on charms, incantations, and other branches of Shaman witchcraft, are found in the Stan-gyour, or the second part of the Tibetan canon, and in some of the late Tantras of the Nepalese collection.

[1] The area of Buddhism includes vast territories, from Ceylon and the Indian Archipelago in the south to the Baikal Lake in Central Asia, and from the Caucasus eastward to Japan (Schlagintweit, *Buddhism in Tibet*, p. 10).

Brahmanism, though it retained much of that more primitive form of faith and worship. Buddhism, in its historical growth, presupposes Brahmanism, and, however hostile the mutual relation of these two religions may have been at different periods of Indian history, it can be shown, without much difficulty, that the latter was but a natural consequence of the former.

The ancient religion of the Aryan inhabitants of India had started, like the religion of the Greeks, the Romans, the Germans, Slaves, and Celts, with a simple and intelligible mythological phraseology. In the Veda—for there is but one real Veda—the names of all the so-called gods or Devas betray their original physical character and meaning without disguise. The fire was praised and invoked by the name of Agni (ignis); the earth by the name of *Pri*thvî (the broad); the sky by the name of Dyu (Jupiter), and afterwards of Indra; the firmament and the waters by the name of Varu*na* or O*ὐρανός*. The sun was invoked by many names, such as Sûrya, Sa*vitri*, Vish*nu* or Mitra; and the dawn rejoiced in such titles as Ushas, Urvasî, Ahanâ, and Sûryâ. Nor was the moon forgotten. For though it is mentioned but rarely under its usual name of Kandra, it is alluded to under the more sacred appellation of Soma; and each of its four phases had received its own denomination. There is hardly any part of nature, if it could impress the human mind in any way with the ideas of a higher power, of order, eternity, or beneficence—whether the winds, or the rivers, or the trees, or the mountains—without a name and representative in the early Hindu Pantheon. No doubt

there existed in the human mind, from the very beginning, something, whether we call it a suspicion, an innate idea, an intuition, or a sense of the Divine. What distinguishes man from the rest of the animal creation is chiefly that ineradicable feeling of dependence and reliance upon some higher power, a consciousness of bondage from which the very name of 'religion' was derived. 'It is He that hath made us, and not we ourselves.' The presence of that power was felt everywhere, and nowhere more clearly and strongly than in the rising and setting of the sun, in the change of day and night, of spring and winter, of birth and death. But, although the Divine presence was felt everywhere, it was impossible in that early period of thought, and with a language incapable as yet of expressing anything but material objects, to conceive the idea of God in its purity and fullness, or to assign to it an adequate and worthy expression. Children cannot think the thoughts of men, and the poets of the Veda could not speak the language of Aristotle. It was by a slow process that the human mind elaborated the idea of one absolute and supreme Godhead; and by a still slower process that the human language matured a word to express that idea. A period of growth was inevitable, and those who, from a mere guess of their own, do not hesitate to speak authoritatively of a primeval revelation which imparted to the Pagan world the idea of the Godhead in all its purity, forget that, however pure and sublime and spiritual that revelation might have been, there was no language capable as yet of expressing the high and immaterial conceptions of that Heaven-sent message. The real

history of religion, during the earliest mythological period, represents to us a slow process of fermentation in thought and language, with its various interruptions, its overflowings, its coolings, its deposits, and its gradual clearing from all extraneous and foreign admixture. This is not only the case among the Indo-European or Aryan races in India, in Greece, and in Germany. In Peru, and wherever the primitive formations of the intellectual world crop out, the process is exactly the same. 'The religion of the sun,' as it has been boldly said by the author of the 'Spanish Conquest in America,' 'was inevitable.' It was like a deep furrow which that heavenly luminary drew, in its silent procession from east to west, over the virgin mind of the gazing multitude; and in the impression left there by the first rising and setting of the sun there lay the dark seed of a faith in a more than human being, the first intimation of a life without beginning, of a world without end. Manifold seed fell afterwards into the soil once broken. Something divine was discovered in everything that moved and lived. Names were stammered forth in anxious haste, and no single name could fully express what lay hidden in the human mind and wanted expression —the idea of an absolute, and perfect, and supreme, and immortal Being. Thus a countless host of nominal gods was called into existence, and for a time seemed to satisfy the wants of a thoughtless multitude. But there were thoughtful men at all times, and their reason protested against the contradictions of a mythological phraseology, though it had been hallowed by sacred customs and traditions. That rebellious reason had been at work from the very

first, always ready to break the yoke of names and formulas which no longer expressed what they were intended to express. The idea which had yearned for utterance was the idea of a supreme and absolute Power, and that yearning was not satisfied by such names as Kronos, Zeus, and Apollon. The very sound of such a word as 'God' used in the plural jarred on the ear, as if we were to speak of two universes, or of a single twin. There are many words, as Greek and Latin grammarians tell us, which if used in the plural, have a different meaning from what they have in the singular. The Latin *ædes* means a temple; if used in the plural it means a house. *Deus* and Θεός ought to be added to the same class of words. The idea of supreme perfection excluded limitation, and the idea of God excluded the possibility of many gods. This may seem language too abstract and metaphysical for the early times of which we are speaking. But the ancient poets of the Vedic hymns have expressed the same thought with perfect clearness and simplicity. In the Rig-Veda I. 164, 46, we read:—

'That which is one the sages speak of in many ways—they call it Agni, Yama, Mâtarisvan.'

Besides the plurality of gods, which was sure to lead to their destruction, there was a taint of mortality which they could not throw off. They all derived their being from the life of nature. The god who represented the sun was liable, in the mythological language of antiquity, to all the accidents which threatened the solar luminary. Though he might rise in immortal youth in the morning, he was conquered by the shadows of the night, and the powers of winter

seemed to overthrow his heavenly throne. There is nothing in nature free from change, and the gods of nature fell under the thraldom of nature's laws. The sun must set, and the solar gods and heroes must die. There must be one God, there must be one unchanging Deity; this was the silent conviction of the human mind. There are many gods, liable to all the vicissitudes of life; this was everywhere the answer of mythological religion.

It is curious to observe in how various ways these two opposite principles were kept for a time from open conflict, and how long the heathen temples resisted the enemy which was slowly and imperceptibly undermining their very foundations. In Greece this mortal element, inherent in all gods, was eliminated to a great extent by the conception of heroes. Whatever was too human in the ancient legends told of Zeus and Apollon was transferred to so-called half-gods or heroes, who were represented as the sons or favourites of the gods, and who bore their fate under a slightly altered name. The twofold character of Herakles as a god and as a hero is acknowledged even by Herodotus, and some of his epithets would have been sufficient to indicate his solar and originally divine character. But, in order to make some of the legends told of the solar deity possible or conceivable, it was necessary to represent Herakles as a more human being, and to make him rise to the seat of the Immortals only after he had endured toils and sufferings incompatible with the dignity of an Olympian god. We find the same idea in Peru, only that there it led to different results. A thinking—or, as he was called, a free-thinking—

Inca[1] remarked that this perpetual travelling of the sun was a sign of servitude,[2] and he threw doubts upon the divine nature of such an unquiet thing as that great luminary appeared to him to be. And this misgiving led to a tradition which, even should it be unfounded in history, had some truth in itself, that there was in Peru an earlier worship, that of an invisible Deity, the Creator of the world, Pachacamac. In Greece, also, there are signs of a similar craving after the 'Unknown God.' A supreme God was wanted, and Zeus, the stripling of Creta, was raised to that rank. He became God above all gods—*ἁπάντων κύριος*, as Pindar calls him. Yet more was wanted than a mere Zeus; and thus a supreme Fate or Spell was imagined before which all the gods, and even Zeus, had to bow. And even this Fate was not allowed to remain supreme, and there was something in the destinies of man which was called *ὑπέρμορον* or 'beyond Fate.' The most awful solution, however, of the problem belongs to Teutonic mythology. Here, also, some heroes were introduced; but their death was only the beginning of the final catastrophe. 'All gods must die.' Such is the last word of that religion which had grown up in the forests of Germany, and found a last refuge among the glaciers and volcanoes of Iceland. The death of Sigurd, the descendant of Odin, could not avert the death of Balder, the son of Odin; and the death of Balder was soon to be followed by the death of Odin himself, and of all the immortal gods.

[1] Helps, *The Spanish Conquest*, vol. iii. p. 503: 'Que cosa tam inquieta non le parescia ser Dios.'

[2] On the servitude of the gods, see the Essay on Comparative Mythology, *Oxford Essays*, 1856, p. 69.

All this was inevitable, and Prometheus, the man of forethought, could safely predict the fall of Zeus. The struggles by which reason and faith overthrow tradition and superstition vary in different countries and at different times; but the final victory is always on their side. In India the same antagonism manifested itself, but what there seemed a victory of reason threatened to become the destruction of all religious faith. At first there was hardly a struggle. On the primitive mythological stratum of thought two new formations arose—the Brahmanical philosophy and the Brahmanical ceremonial; the one opening the widest avenues of philosophical thought, the other fencing all religious feeling within the narrowest barriers. Both derived their authority from the same source. Both professed to carry out the meaning and purpose of the Veda. Thus we see on the one side, the growth of a numerous and powerful priesthood, and the establishment of a ceremonial which embraced every moment of a man's life from his birth to his death. There was no event which might have moved the heart to a spontaneous outpouring of praise or thanksgiving which was not regulated by priestly formulas. Every prayer was prescribed, every sacrifice determined. Every god had his share, and the claims of each deity on the adoration of the faithful were set down with such punctiliousness, the danger of offending their pride was represented in such vivid colours, that no one would venture to approach their presence without the assistance of a well-paid staff of masters of divine ceremonies. It was impossible to avoid sin without the help of the Brahmans. They alone

knew the food that might properly be eaten, the air which might properly be breathed, the dress which might properly be worn. They alone could tell what god should be invoked, what sacrifice be offered; and the slightest mistake of pronunciation, the slightest neglect about clarified butter, or the length of the ladle in which it was to be offered, might bring destruction upon the head of the unassisted worshipper. No nation was ever so completely priestridden as the Hindus were under the sway of the Brahmanic law. Yet, on the other side, the same people were allowed to indulge in the most unrestrained freedom of thought, and in the schools of their philosophy the very names of their gods were never mentioned. Their existence was neither denied nor asserted; they were of no greater importance in the system of the world of thought than trees or mountains, men or animals; and to offer sacrifices to them with a hope of rewards, so far from being meritorious, was considered as an impediment in the attainment of that emancipation to which a clear perception of philosophical truth was to lead the patient student. There was one system which taught that there existed but one Being, without a second; that everything else which seemed to exist was but a dream and illusion, and that this illusion might be removed by a true knowledge of the one Being. There was another system which admitted two principles—one a subjective and self-existent mind, the other matter, endowed with qualities. Here the world, with its joys and sorrows, was explained as the result of the subjective Self, reflecting itself in the mirror of matter; and final

emancipation was obtained by turning away the eyes from the play of nature, and being absorbed in the knowledge of the true and absolute Self. A third system started with the admission of atoms, and explained every effect, including the elements and the mind, animals, men, and gods, from the concurrence of these atoms. In fact, as M. Cousin remarked many years ago, the history of the philosophy of India is 'un abrégé de l'histoire de la philosophie.' The germs of all these systems are traced back to the Vedas, Brâhmanas, and the Upanishads, and the man who believed in any of them was considered as orthodox as the devout worshipper of the gods—the one was saved by knowledge and faith, the other by works and faith.

Such was the state of the Hindu mind when Buddhism arose; or, rather, such was the state of the Hindu mind which gave rise to Buddhism. Buddha himself went through the school of the Brahmans. He performed their penances, he studied their philosophy, and he at last claimed the name of the Buddha, or the Enlightened, when he threw away the whole ceremonial, with its sacrifices, superstitions, penances, and castes, as worthless, and changed the complicated systems of philosophy into a short doctrine of salvation. This doctrine of salvation has been called pure Atheism and Nihilism, and it no doubt was liable to both charges in its metaphysical character, and in that form in which we chiefly know it. It was atheistic, not because it denied the existence of such gods as Indra and Brahma. Buddha did not even condescend to deny their existence. But it was called atheistic, like the Sânkhya philosophy, which

admitted but one subjective Self, and considered creation as an illusion of that Self, imagining itself for a while in the mirror of nature. As there was no reality in creation, there could be no real Creator. All that seemed to exist was the result of ignorance. To remove that ignorance was to remove the cause of all that seemed to exist. How a religion which taught the annihilation of all existence, of all thought, of all individuality and personality, as the highest object of all endeavours, could have laid hold of the minds of millions of human beings, and how at the same time, by enforcing the duties of morality, justice, kindness, and self-sacrifice, it could have exercised a decidedly beneficial influence, not only on the natives of India, but on the lowest barbarians of Central Asia, is a riddle which no one has as yet been able to solve.

We must distinguish, it seems, between Buddhism as a religion and Buddhism as a philosophy. The former addressed itself to millions, the latter to a few isolated thinkers. It is from these isolated thinkers, however, and from their literary compositions, that we are apt to form our notions of what Buddhism was, while, as a matter of fact, not one in a thousand would have been capable of following these metaphysical speculations. To the people at large Buddhism was a moral and religious, not a philosophical reform. Yet even its morality has a metaphysical tinge. The morality which it teaches is not a morality of expediency and rewards. Virtue is not enjoined because it necessarily leads to happiness. No; virtue is to be practised, but happiness is to be shunned, and the only reward for virtue is that it subdues the passions, and thus prepares the human

mind for that knowledge which is to end in complete annihilation. There are ten commandments which Buddha imposes on his disciples.[1] They are—

1. Not to kill.
2. Not to steal.
3. Not to commit adultery.
4. Not to lie.
5. Not to get intoxicated.
6. To abstain from unseasonable meals.
7. To abstain from public spectacles.
8. To abstain from expensive dresses.
9. Not to have a large bed.
10. Not to receive silver or gold.

The duties of those who embraced a religious life were more severe. They were not allowed to wear any dress except rags collected in cemeteries, and these rags they had to sew together with their own hands. A yellow cloak was to be thrown over these rags. Their food was to be extremely simple, and they were not to possess anything except what they could get by collecting alms from door to door in their wooden bowls. They had but one meal in the morning, and were not allowed to touch any food after midday. They were to live in forests, not in cities, and their only shelter was to be the shadow of a tree. There they were to sit, to spread their carpet, but not to lie down, even during sleep. They were allowed to enter the nearest city or village in order to beg, but they had to return to their forest before night, and the only change which was allowed, or

[1] See Burnouf, *Lotus de la bonne Loi*, p. 444. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, *Du Bouddhisme*, p. 132. Ch. F. Neumann, *Catechism of the Shamans*.

rather prescribed, was when they had to spend some nights in the cemeteries, there to meditate on the vanity of all things. And what was the object of all this asceticism? Simply to guide each individual towards that path which would finally bring him to Nirvâna, it may be, to utter extinction or annihilation. The very definition of virtue was that it helped man to cross over to the other shore, and that other shore was not death, but cessation of all being. Thus charity was considered a virtue; modesty, patience, courage, contemplation, and science, all were virtues, but they were practised only as a means of arriving at deliverance. Buddha himself exhibited the perfection of all these virtues. His charity knew no bounds. When he saw a tigress starved, and unable to feed her cubs, he is said to have made a charitable oblation of his body to be devoured by them. Hiouen-thsang visited the place on the banks of the Indus where this miracle was supposed to have happened, and he remarks that the soil is still red there from the blood of Buddha, and that the trees and flowers have the same colour.[1] As to the modesty of Buddha, nothing could exceed it. One day, king Prasenagit, the protector of Buddha, called on him to perform miracles, in order to silence his adversaries, the Brahmans. Buddha consented. He performed the required miracles, but he exclaimed: 'Great king, I do not teach the law to my pupils, telling them, Go, ye saints, and before the eyes of the Brahmans and householders perform, by means of your supernatural powers, miracles greater than any man can perform. I tell them, when I teach

[1] Vol. i. p. 89, vol. ii. p. 167.

them the law, Live, ye saints, hiding your good works and showing your sins.' And yet, all this self-sacrificing charity, all this self-sacrificing humility, by which the life of Buddha was distinguished throughout, and which he preached to the multitudes that came to listen to him, had, we are told, but one object, and that object was final annihilation. It is impossible almost to believe it, and yet when we turn away our eyes from the pleasing picture of that high morality which Buddha preached for the first time to all classes of men, and look into the dark pages of his code of religious metaphysics, we can hardly find another explanation. Fortunately, the millions who embraced the doctrines of Buddha, and were saved by it from the depths of barbarism, brutality, and selfishness, were unable to fathom the meaning of his metaphysical doctrines. With them the Nirvâna to which they aspired, became only a relative deliverance from the miseries of human life; nay, it soon took the bright colours of a paradise to be regained by the pious worshipper of Buddha. But was this the meaning of Buddha himself? In his 'Four Verities' he does not, indeed, define Nirvâna, except by cessation of all pain; but when he traces the cause of pain, and teaches the means of destroying, not only pain itself, but the cause of pain, we shall see that his Nirvâna assumes a very different meaning. His 'Four Verities' are very simple. The first asserts the existence of pain; the second asserts that the cause of pain lies in sin; the third asserts that pain may cease by Nirvâna; the fourth shows the way that leads to Nirvâna. This way to Nirvâna consists in eight things—right faith (orthodoxy), right judgment

(logic), right language (veracity), right purpose (honesty), right practice (religious life), right obedience (lawful life), right remembrance, and right meditation. All these precepts might be understood as part of a simply moral code, closing with a kind of mystic meditation on the highest object of thought, and with a yearning after deliverance from all worldly ties. Similar systems have prevailed in many parts of the world, without a denial of the existence of an absolute Being, or of a something towards which the human mind tends, in which it is absorbed or even annihilated. Awful as such a mysticism may appear, yet it leaves still something that exists, it acknowledges a feeling of dependence in man. It knows of a first cause, though it may have nothing to predicate of it except that it is τὸ κινοῦν ἀκινητόν. A return is possible from that desert. The first cause may be called to life again. It may take the names of Creator, Preserver, Ruler; and when the simplicity and helplessness of the child have re-entered the heart of man, the name of father will come back to the lips which had uttered in vain all the names of a philosophical despair. But from the Nirvâna of the Buddhist metaphysician there is no return. He starts from the idea that the highest object is to escape pain. Life in his eyes is nothing but misery; birth the cause of all evil, from which even death cannot deliver him, because he believes in an eternal cycle of existence, or in transmigration. There is no deliverance from evil, except by breaking through the prison walls, not only of life, but of existence, and by extirpating the last cause of existence. What, then, is the cause of existence? The cause of existence, says the Bud-

dhist metaphysician, is attachment—an inclination towards something; and this attachment arises from thirst or desire. Desire presupposes perception of the object desired; perception presupposes contact; contact, at least a sentient contact, presupposes the senses; and, as the senses can only perceive what has form and name, or what is distinct, distinction is the real cause of all the effects which end in existence, birth, and pain. Now, this distinction is itself the result of conceptions or ideas; but these ideas, so far from being, as in Greek philosophy, the true and everlasting forms of the Absolute, are here represented as mere illusions, the effects of ignorance (avidyâ). Ignorance, therefore, is really the primary cause of all that seems to exist. To know that ignorance, as the root of all evil, is the same as to destroy it, and with it all effects that flowed from it. In order to see how this doctrine affects the individual, let us watch the last moments of Buddha as described by his disciples. He enters into the first stage of meditation when he feels freedom from sin, acquires a knowledge of the nature of all things, and has no desire except that of Nirvâna. But he still feels pleasure; he even uses his reasoning and discriminating powers. The use of these powers ceases in the second stage of meditation, when nothing remains but a desire after Nirvâna, and a general feeling of satisfaction, arising from his intellectual perfection. That satisfaction, also, is extinguished in the third stage. Indifference succeeds; yet there is still self-consciousness, and a certain amount of physical pleasure. These last remnants are destroyed in the fourth stage; memory fades away, all pleasure and pain are gone, and the

doors of Nirvâna now open before him. After having passed these four stages once, Buddha went through them a second time, but he died before he attained again to the fourth stage. We must soar still higher, and though we may feel giddy and disgusted, we must sit out the tragedy till the curtain falls. After the four stages of meditation[1] are passed, the Buddha (and every being is to become a Buddha) enters into the infinity of space; then into the infinity of intelligence; and thence he passes into the region of nothing. But even here there is no rest. There is still something left—the idea of the nothing in which he rejoices. That also must be destroyed, and it is destroyed in the fourth and last region, where there is not even the idea of a nothing left, and where there is complete rest, undisturbed by nothing, or what is not *nothing*.[2] There are few persons who will take the trouble of reasoning out such hallucinations; least of all, persons who are accustomed to the sober language of Greek philosophy; and it is the more interesting to hear the opinion which one of the best Aristotelian scholars of the present day, after a patient examination of the authentic documents of Buddhism, has formed of its system of metaphysics. M. Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire, in a review on Buddhism, published in the 'Journal des Savants,' says:—

'Buddhism has no God; it has not even the confused and vague notion of a Universal Spirit in which

[1] These 'four stages' are described in the same manner in the canonical books of Ceylon and Nepal, and may therefore safely be ascribed to that original form of Buddhism from which the Southern and Northern schools branched off at a later period. See Burnouf, *Lotus de la bonne Loi*, p. 800.

[2] See Burnouf, *ibid.*, p. 814.

the human soul, according to the orthodox doctrine of Brahmanism, and the Sânkhya philosophy, may be absorbed. Nor does it admit nature, in the proper sense of the word, and it ignores that profound division between spirit and matter which forms the system and the glory of Kapila. It confounds man with all that surrounds him, all the while preaching to him the laws of virtue. Buddhism, therefore, cannot unite the human soul, which it does not even mention, with a God, whom it ignores; nor with nature, which it does not know better. Nothing remained but to annihilate the soul; and in order to be quite sure that the soul may not re-appear under some new form in this world, which has been cursed as the abode of illusion and misery, Buddhism destroys its very elements, and never gets tired of glorying in this achievement. What more is wanted? If this is not the absolute nothing, what is Nirvâna?'

Such religion, we should say, was made for a madhouse. But Buddhism was an advance, if compared with Brahmanism; it has stood its ground for centuries, and if truth could be decided by majorities, the show of hands, even at the present day, would be in favour of Buddha. The metaphysics of Buddhism, like the metaphysics of most religions, not excluding our own Gnosticism and Mysticism, were beyond the reach of all except a few hardened philosophers or ecstatic dreamers. Human nature could not be changed. Out of the very nothing it made a new paradise; and he who had left no place in the whole universe for a Divine Being, was deified himself by the multitudes who wanted a person whom they

could worship, a king whose help they might invoke, a friend before whom they could pour out their most secret griefs. And there remained the code of a pure morality, proclaimed by Buddha. There remained the spirit of charity, kindness, and universal pity with which he had inspired his disciples.[1] There remained the simplicity of the ceremonial he had taught, the equality of all men which he had declared, the religious toleration which he had preached from the beginning. There remained much, therefore, to account for the rapid strides which his doctrine made from the mountain peaks of Ceylon to the Tundras of the Samoyedes, and we shall see in the simple story of the life of Hiouen-thsang that Buddhism, with all its defects, has had its heroes, its martyrs, and its saints.

Hiouen-thsang, born in China more than a thousand years after the death of Buddha, was a believer in Buddhism. He dedicated his whole life to the study of that religion; travelling from his native country to India, visiting every place mentioned in Buddhist history or tradition, acquiring the ancient language in which the canonical books of the Buddhists were written, studying commentaries, discussing points of difficulty, and defending the orthodox faith

[1] See the 'Dhammapada,' a Pâli work on Buddhist ethics lately edited by V. Fausböll, a distinguished pupil of Professor Westergaard, at Copenhagen. The Rev. Spence Hardy (*Eastern Monachism*, p. 169) writes: 'A collection might be made from the precepts of this work, that in the purity of its ethics could scarcely be equalled from any other heathen author.' Mr. Knighton, when speaking of the same work in his *History of Ceylon* (p. 77), remarks: 'In it we have exemplified a code of morality, and a list of precepts, which, for pureness, excellence, and wisdom, is only second to that of the Divine Lawgiver himself.'

at public councils against disbelievers and schismatics. Buddhism had grown and changed since the death of its founder, but it had lost nothing of its vitality. At a very early period a proselytising spirit awoke among the disciples of the Indian reformer, an element entirely new in the history of ancient religions. No Jew, no Greek, no Roman, no Brahman ever thought of converting people to his own national form of worship. Religion was looked upon as private or national property. It was to be guarded against strangers. The most sacred names of the gods, the prayers by which their favour could be gained, were kept secret. No religion, however, was more exclusive than that of the Brahmans. A Brahman was born, nay, twice-born. He could not be made. Not even the lowest caste—that of the Śûdras—would open its ranks to a stranger. Here lay the secret of Buddha's success. He addressed himself to castes and outcasts. He promised salvation to all; and he commanded his disciples to preach his doctrine in all places and to all men. A sense of duty, extending from the narrow limits of the house, the village, and the country to the widest circle of mankind, a feeling of sympathy and brotherhood towards all men—the idea, in fact, of humanity—was in India first pronounced by Buddha. In the third Buddhist Council, the acts of which have been preserved to us in the 'Mahavansa,'[1] we hear of missionaries being sent to the chief countries beyond India. This Council, we are told, took place 235 years after the death of Buddha, in the 17th year of the reign of the famous king Asoka, 242/308 B.C. whose edicts have been pre-

[1] *Mahavansa*, ed. G. Turnour, Ceylon, 1837, p. 71.

served to us on rock inscriptions in various parts of India. There are sentences in these inscriptions of Asoka which might be read with advantage by our own missionaries, though they are now more than 2000 years old. Thus it is written on the rocks of Girnar, Dhauli, and Kapurdigiri[1]—

'Piyadasi, the king beloved of the gods, desires that the ascetics of all creeds might reside in all places. All these ascetics profess alike the command which people should exercise over themselves, and the purity of the soul. But people have different opinions, and different inclinations.'

And again[2]:—

'Now, intrinsic worth can grow greater in many ways, but the foundation thereof, in all its compass, is discretion in speaking, so that no man may praise his own sect, or contemn another sect, or despise it on unsuitable occasions. On all occasions let respect be shown. Whatever of good, indeed, a man, from any motive, confers on any one of a different persuasion, tends to the advantage of his own sect and to the benefit of a different persuasion. By acting in an opposite manner, a man injures his own sect and offends a different sect. . . . . Therefore, concord is best, so that all may know and willingly listen to each other's religion.'

Those who have no time to read the voluminous works of the late E. Burnouf on Buddhism, his 'Intro-

[1] Burgess, *Archæological Survey of Western India*, 1874–75, p. 110, tablet vii. Cunningham, *Corpus Inscriptionum Indicarum*, 1877, p. 121. Burnouf, *Lotus*, Appendice, p. 755.

[2] Twelfth Tablet, Burgess, *l.c.* p. 122; Cuningham, *l.c.* p. 124. Translation by Kern.

duction à l'Histoire du Buddhisme,' and his translation of 'Le Lotus de la bonne Loi,' will find a very interesting and lucid account of these councils, and edicts and missions, and the history of Buddhism in general, in a work lately published by Mrs. Speir, 'Life in Ancient India.'[1] Buddhism spread in the south to Ceylon, in the north to Kashmir, the Himalayan countries, Tibet, and China. One Buddhist missionary is supposed to be mentioned in the Chinese annals as early as 217 B.C.;[2] and about the 120 B.C. a Chinese general, after defeating the barbarous tribes north of the Desert of Gobi, brought back as a trophy a golden statue, the statue of Buddha.[3] It was not, however, till the year 65 A.D. that Buddhism was officially recognised by the Emperor Ming-ti[4] as a third state-religion in China. Ever since it has shared equal honours in the Celestial Empire, with the doctrines of Confucius and Lao-tse, and it is but lately that these three established religions have had to fear the encroachments of a new rival in the creed of the 'Chief of the Rebels.'

After Buddhism had been introduced into China, the first care of its teachers was to translate the sacred works from Sanskrit, in which they were originally written, into Chinese. We read of the Emperor Ming-ti, of the dynasty of Han, sending Tsaï-in and other high officials to India, in order to study there the doctrine of Buddha. They engaged the services of two learned Buddhists, Matânga and

[1] Also in a volume published by the Society for Promoting Christian Knowledge, *Buddhism*, by T. W. Rhys Davids, 1878.

[2] See *Foe Koue Ki*, p. 41, and xxxviii, preface.

[3] See *ibid.*, p. 41.

[4] *Lalita-Vistara*, ed. Foucaux, p. xvii, note.

Chu-fa-lan, and some of the most important Buddhist works were translated by them into Chinese. 'The Life of Buddha,' the 'Lalita-Vistara,'[1] a Sanskrit work which, on account of its style and language, had been referred by Oriental scholars to a much more modern period of Indian literature, can now safely be ascribed to an ante-Christian era, if, as we are told by Chinese scholars, it was translated from Sanskrit into Chinese, as one of the canonical books of Buddhism, as early as the year 76 A.D.[2] The same work was translated also into Tibetan; and an edition of it, published in Paris by M. E. Foucaux, reflects high credit on that distinguished scholar, and on the Government which supports these studies in the most liberal and enlightened spirit. The intellectual intercourse between the Indian Peninsula and the northern continent of Asia remained uninterrupted for many centuries. Missions were sent from China to India, to report on the political and geographical state of the country, but the chief object of interest which attracted public embassies and private pilgrims across the Himalayan mountains was the religion of Buddha. About three hundred years after the public recognition of Buddhism by the Emperor Ming-ti, the great stream of Buddhist pilgrims began to flow from China to India. The first account which we possess of these pilgrimages refers to the travels of Fa-hian, who visited India towards the end of the

[1] This Sanskrit text has been published in the *Bibliotheca Indica*.

[2] This no longer holds good. Some Life of Buddha may have been translated at that early time, but there is no proof that it was the Lalita-Vistara, as we now possess it in Sanskrit.

fourth century. His travels have been translated by Rémusat, and M. Julien promises a new and more correct translation. After Fa-Hian, we have the travels of Hoei-seng and Sung-yun,[1] who were sent to India, in 518, by command of the Empress, with a view of collecting sacred books and relics. Of Hiouen-thsang, who follows next in time, we possess, at present, eight out of twelve books; and there is reason to hope that the last four books of his Journal will soon follow in M. Julien's translation.[2] After Hiouen-thsang, the chief works of Chinese pilgrims are the 'Itineraries' of the fifty-six monks, published in 730, and the travels of Khi-nie, who visited India in 964, at the head of three hundred pilgrims. India was for a time the Holy Land of China. There lay the scene of the life and death of the great teacher; there were the monuments commemorating the chief events of his life; there the shrines where his relics might be worshipped; there the monasteries where tradition had preserved his sayings and his doings; there the books where his doctrine might be studied in its original purity; there the schools where the tenets of different sects which had sprung up in the course of time might best be acquired.

Some of the pilgrims and envoys have left us accounts of their travels, and, in the absence of anything like an historical literature in India itself, these Chinese works are of the utmost importance for gaining an insight into the social, political, and religious history of that country from the beginning of our

[1] The Rev. S. Beal has published an English translation of Fah-Hian and Sung-yun, 1869.

[2] They have since been published.

era to the time of the Mohammedan conquest. The importance of Mohammedan writers, so far as they treat on the history of India during the Middle Ages, was soon recognised, and in a memoir lately published by the most eminent Arabic scholar of France, M. Reinaud, new and valuable historical materials have been collected—materials doubly valuable in India, where no native historian has ever noted down the passing events of the day. But, although the existence of similar documents in Chinese was known, and although men of the highest literary eminence—such as Humboldt, Biot, and others—had repeatedly urged the necessity of having a translation of the early travels of the Chinese Pilgrims, it seemed almost as if our curiosity was never to be satisfied. France has been the only country where Chinese scholarship has ever flourished, and it was a French scholar, Abel Rémusat, who undertook at last the translation of one of the Chinese Pilgrims. Rémusat died before his work was published, and his translation of the travels of Fahian, edited by M. Landresse, remained for a long time without being followed up by any other. Nor did the work of that eminent scholar answer all expectations. Most of the proper names, the names of countries, towns, mountains, and rivers, the titles of books, and the whole Buddhistic phraseology, were so disguised in their Chinese dress that it was frequently impossible to discover their original form.

The Chinese alphabet was never intended to represent the sound of words. It was in its origin a hieroglyphic system, each word having its own graphic representative. Nor would it have been possible to write Chinese in any other way. Chinese

is a monosyllabic language. No word is allowed more than one consonant and one vowel—the vowels including diphthongs and nasal vowels. Hence the possible number of words is extremely small, and the number of significative sounds in the Chinese language is said to be no more than 450. No language, however, could be satisfied with so small a vocabulary, and in Chinese, as in other monosyllabic dialects, each word, as it was pronounced with various accents and intonations, was made to convey a large number of meanings; so that the total number of words, or rather of ideas, expressed in Chinese, is said to amount to 43,496. Hence a graphic representation of the mere sound of words would have been perfectly useless, and it was absolutely necessary to resort to hieroglyphical writing, enlarged by the introduction of determinative signs. Nearly the whole immense dictionary of Chinese—at least twenty-nine thirtieths—consists of combined signs, one part indicating the general sound, the other determining its special meaning. With such a system of writing it was possible to represent Chinese, but impossible to convey either the sound or the meaning of any other language. Besides, some of the most common sounds—such as *r*, *b*, *d*, and the short *a*—are unknown in Chinese.

How, then, were the translators to render Sanskrit names in Chinese? The most rational plan would have been to select as many Chinese signs as there were Sanskrit letters, and to express one and the same letter in Sanskrit always by one and the same sign in Chinese; or, if the conception of a consonant without a vowel, and of a vowel without a consonant, was too much for a Chinese understanding, to express at least

the same syllabic sound in Sanskrit by one and the same syllabic sign in Chinese. A similar system is adopted at the present day, when the Chinese find themselves under the necessity of writing the names of Lord Palmerston or Sir John Bowring; but, instead of adopting any definite system of transcribing, each translator seems to have chosen his own signs for rendering the sounds of Sanskrit words, and to have chosen them at random. The result is that every Sanskrit word, as transcribed by the Chinese Buddhists, is a riddle which no ingenuity is able to solve. Who could have guessed that 'Fo-to,' or more frequently 'Fo,' was meant for Buddha? 'Ko-lo-keou-lo' for Râhula, the son of Buddha? 'Po-lo-naï' for Benares? 'Heng-ho' for Ganges? 'Niepan' for Nirvâna? 'Chamen' for Sramana? 'Feïto' for Veda? 'Tcha-li' for Kshattriya? 'Siu-to-lo' for Sûdra? 'Fan' or 'Fan-lon-mo' for Brahma? Sometimes, it is true, the Chinese endeavoured to give, besides the sounds, a translation of the meaning of the Sanskrit words. But the translation of proper names is always very precarious, and it required an intimate knowledge of Sanskrit and Buddhist literature to recognise from these awkward translations the exact form of the proper names for which they were intended. If, in a Chinese translation of Thukydides, we read of a person called 'Leader of the people,' we might guess his name to have been Demagogos, or Laegos, as well as Agesilaos. And when the name of the town of Sravastî was written Che-wei, which means in Chinese 'where one hears,' it required no ordinary power of combination to find that the name of Sravastî was derived from a Sanskrit noun, *sravas*

(Greek κλέος, Lat. *cluo*), which means 'hearing' or 'fame,' and that the etymological meaning of the name of Śravastî was intended by the Chinese 'Che-wei.' Besides these names of places and rivers, of kings and saints, there was the whole strange phraseology of Buddhism, of which no dictionary gives any satisfactory explanation. How was even the best Chinese scholar to know that the words which usually mean 'dark shadow' must be taken in the technical sense of Nirvâna, or becoming absorbed in the Absolute, that 'return-purity' had the same sense, and that a third synonymous expression was to be recognised in a phrase which, in ordinary Chinese, would have the sense of 'transport-figure-crossing-age?' A monastery is called 'origin-door,' instead of 'black-door.' The voice of Buddha is called 'the voice of the dragon;' and his doctrine goes by the name of 'the door of expedients.'

Tedious as these details may seem, it was almost a duty to state them, in order to give an idea of the difficulties which M. Stanislas Julien had to grapple with. Oriental scholars labour under great disadvantages. Few people take an interest in their works, or, if they do, they simply accept the results, but they are unable to appreciate the difficulty with which these results were obtained. Many persons who have read the translation of the cuneiform inscriptions are glad, no doubt, to have the authentic and contemporaneous records of Darius and Xerxes. But if they followed the process by which scholars such as Grotefend, Burnouf, Lassen, and Rawlinson arrived at their results, they would see that the discovery of the alphabet, the language, the grammar,

and the meaning of the inscriptions of the Achæmenian dynasty deserves to be classed with the discoveries of a Kepler, a Newton, or a Faraday. In a similar manner, the mere translation of a Chinese work into French seems a very ordinary performance; but M. Stanislas Julien, who has long been acknowledged as the first Chinese scholar in Europe, had to spend twenty years of incessant labour in order to prepare himself for the task of translating the 'Travels of Hiouen-thsang.' He had to learn Sanskrit, no very easy language; he had to study the Buddhist literature written in Sanskrit, Pâli, Tibetan, Mongolian and Chinese. He had to make vast indices of every proper name connected with Buddhism. Thus only could he shape his own tools, and accomplish what at last he did accomplish. Most persons will remember the interest with which the travels of MM. Huc and Gabet were read a few years ago, though these two adventurous missionaries were obliged to renounce their original intention of entering India by way of China and Tibet, and were not allowed to proceed beyond the famous capital of Lhassa. If, then, it be considered that there was a traveller who had made a similar journey twelve hundred years earlier; who had succeeded in crossing the deserts and mountain passes which separate China from India; who had visited the principal cities of the Indian Peninsula, at a time of which we have no information, from native or foreign sources, as to the state of that country; who had learned Sanskrit, and made a large collection of Buddhist works; who had carried on public disputations with the most eminent philosophers and theologians of the day; who had

translated the most important works on Buddhism from Sanskrit into Chinese, and left an account of his travels, which still existed in the libraries of China—nay, which had been actually printed and published—we may well imagine the impatience with which all scholars interested in the ancient history of India, and in the subject of Buddhism, looked forward to the publication of so important a work. Hiouen-thsang's name had first been mentioned in Europe by Abel Rémusat and Klaproth. They had discovered some fragments of his travels in a Chinese work on foreign countries and foreign nations. Rémusat wrote to China to procure, if possible, a complete copy of Hiouen-thsang's works. He was informed by Morrison that they were out of print. Still, the few specimens which he had given at the end of his translation of the 'Foe Koue Ki' had whetted the appetite of Oriental scholars. M. Stanislas Julien succeeded in procuring a copy of Hiouen-thsang in 1838; and after nearly twenty years spent in preparing a translation of the Chinese traveller, his version is now before us. If there are but few who know the difficulty of a work like that of M. Stanislas Julien, it becomes their duty to speak out, though, after all, perhaps the most intelligible eulogium would be that, in a branch of study where there are no monopolies and no patents, M. Stanislas Julien is acknowledged to be the only man in Europe who could produce the article which he has produced in the work before us.

We shall devote the rest of our space to a short account of the life and travels of Hiouen-thsang. Hiouen-thsang was born in a provincial town of China,

at a time when the empire was in a chronic state of revolution. His father had left the public service, and had given most of his time to the education of his four children. Two of them distinguished themselves at a very early age—one of them was Hiouen-thsang, the future traveller and theologian. The boy was sent to school at a Buddhist monastery, and, after receiving there the necessary instruction, partly from his elder brother, he was himself admitted as a monk at the early age of thirteen. During the next seven years, the young monk travelled about with his brother from place to place, in order to follow the lectures of some of the most distinguished professors. The horrors of war frequently broke in upon his quiet studies, and forced him to seek refuge in the more distant provinces of the empire. At the age of twenty he took priest's orders, and had then already become famous by his vast knowledge. He had studied the chief canonical books of the Buddhist faith, the records of Buddha's life and teaching, the system of ethics and metaphysics; and he was versed in the works of Confucius and Lao-tse. But still his own mind was agitated by doubts. Six years he continued his studies in the chief places of learning in China, and where he came to learn he was frequently asked to teach. At last, when he saw that none, even the most eminent theologians, were able to give him the information he wanted, he formed his resolve of travelling to India. The works of earlier pilgrims, such as Fahian and others, were known to him. He knew that in India he should find the originals of the works which in their Chinese translation left so many things doubtful in his mind; and

though he knew from the same sources the dangers of his journey, yet 'the glory,' as he says, 'of recovering the Law, which was to be a guide to all men and the means of their salvation, seemed to him worthy of imitation.' In common with several other priests, he addressed a memorial to the Emperor to ask leave for their journey. Leave was refused, and the courage of his companions failed. Not that of Hiouen-thsang. His own mother had told him that, soon before she gave birth to him, she had seen her child travelling to the Far West in search of the Law. He was himself haunted by similar visions, and having long surrendered worldly desires, he resolved to brave all dangers and to risk his life for the only object for which he thought it worth while to live. He proceeded to the Yellow River, the Hoang-ho, and to the place where the caravans bound for India used to meet, and though the Governor had sent strict orders not to allow anyone to cross the frontier, the young priest, with the assistance of his co-religionists, succeeded in escaping the vigilance of the Chinese 'douaniers.' Spies were sent after him. But so frank was his avowal, and so firm his resolution, which he expressed in the presence of the authorities, that the Governor himself tore his hue-and-cry to pieces, and allowed him to proceed. Hitherto he had been accompanied by two friends. They now left him, and Hiouen-thsang found himself alone, without a friend and without a guide. He sought for strength in fervent prayer. The next morning a person presented himself, offering his services as a guide. This guide conducted him safely for some distance, but left him when they approached the desert. There were still

five watch-towers to be passed, and there was nothing to indicate the road through the desert, except the hoof-marks of horses, and skeletons. The traveller followed this melancholy track, and, though misled by the 'mirage' of the desert, he reached the first tower. Here the arrows of the watchmen would have put an end to his existence and his cherished expedition. But the officer in command, himself a zealous Buddhist, allowed the courageous pilgrim to proceed, and gave him letters of recommendation to the officers of the next towers. The last tower, however, was guarded by men inaccessible to bribes, and deaf to reasoning. In order to escape their notice, Hiouen-thsang had to make a long *détour*. He passed through another desert, and lost his way. The bag in which he carried his water burst, and then even the courage of Hiouen-thsang failed. He began to retrace his steps. But suddenly he stopped. 'I took an oath,' he said, 'never to make a step backward till I had reached India. Why, then, have I come here? It is better I should die proceeding to the West than return to the East and live.' Four nights and five days he travelled through the desert without a drop of water. He had nothing to refresh himself except his prayers—and what were they? Texts from a work which taught that there was no god, no Creator, no creation—nothing but mind, minding itself. It is incredible in how exhausted an atmosphere the divine spark within us will glimmer on, and even warm the dark chambers of the human heart. Comforted by his prayers, Hiouen-thsang proceeded, and arrived after some time at a large lake. He was in the country of the Oïgour Tatars.

They received him well, nay, too well. One of the Tatar Khans, himself a Buddhist, sent for the Buddhist pilgrim, and insisted on his staying with him to instruct his people. Remonstrances proved of no avail. But Hiouen-thsang was not to be conquered. 'I know,' he said, 'that the king, in spite of his power, has no power over my mind and my will;' and he refused all nourishment in order to put an end to his life. *Θανοῦμαι καὶ ἐλευθερήσομαι.* Three days he persevered, and at last the Khan, afraid of the consequences, was obliged to yield to the poor monk. He made him promise to visit him on his return to China, and then to stay three years with him. At last, after a delay of one month, during which the Khan and his Court came daily to hear the lessons of their pious guest, the traveller continued his journey with a numerous escort, and with letters of introduction from the Khan to twenty-four Princes whose territories the little caravan had to pass. Their way lay through what is now called Dsungaria, across the Musur-dabaghan mountains, the northern portion of the Belur-tag, the Yaxartes valley, Bactria, and Kabulistân. We cannot follow them through all the places they passed, though the accounts which he gives of their adventures are most interesting, and the description of the people most important. Here is a description of the Musur-dabaghan mountains:—

'The top of the mountain rises to the sky. Since the beginning of the world the snow has been accumulating, and is now transformed into vast masses of ice, which never melt, either in spring or summer. Hard and brilliant sheets of snow are spread out till

they are lost in the infinite, and mingle with the clouds. If one looks at them, the eyes are dazzled by the splendour. Frozen peaks hang down over both sides of the road, some hundred feet high, and twenty feet or thirty feet thick. It is not without difficulty and danger that the traveller can clear them or climb over them. Besides, there are squalls of wind and tornadoes of snow which attack the pilgrims. Even with double shoes, and in thick furs, one cannot help trembling and shivering.'

During the seven days that Hiouen-thsang was crossing these Alpine passes he lost fourteen of his companions.

What is most important, however, in this early portion of the Chinese traveller is the account which he gives of the high degree of civilisation among the tribes of Central Asia. We had gradually accustomed ourselves to believe in an early civilisation of Egypt, of Babylon, of China, of India; but now that we find the hordes of Tatary possessing in the seventh century the chief arts and institutions of an advanced society, we shall soon have to drop the name of barbarians altogether. The theory of M. Oppert, who ascribes the original invention of the cuneiform letters and a civilisation anterior to that of Babylon and Nineveh to a Turanian or Scythian race, will lose much of its apparent improbability; for no new wave of civilisation had reached these countries between the cuneiform period of their literature and history and the time of Hiouen-thsang's visit. In the kingdom of Okini, on the western frontier of China, Hiouen-thsang found an active commerce, gold, silver, and copper coinage; monasteries, where the chief

works of Buddhism were studied, and an alphabet, derived from Sanskrit. As he travelled on he met with mines, with agriculture, including pears, plums, peaches, almonds, grapes, pomegranates, rice, and wheat. The inhabitants were dressed in silk and woollen materials. There were musicians in the chief cities who played on the flute and the guitar. Buddhism was the prevailing religion, but there were traces of an earlier worship, the Bactrian fire-worship. The country was everywhere studded with halls, monasteries, monuments, and statues. Samarkand formed at that early time a kind of Athens, and its manners were copied by all the tribes in the neighbourhood. Balkh, the old capital of Bactria, was still an important place on the Oxus, well fortified, and full of sacred buildings. And the details which our traveller gives of the exact circumference of the cities, the number of their inhabitants, the products of the soil, the articles of trade, can leave no doubt in our minds that he relates what he had seen and heard himself. A new page in the history of the world is here opened, and new ruins pointed out, which would reward the pickaxe of a Layard.

But we must not linger. Our traveller, as we said, had entered India by way of Kabul. Shortly before he arrived at Pou-lou-cha-pou-lo, *i.e.* the Sanskrit Purushapura, the modern Peshawer, Hiouen-thsang heard of an extraordinary cave where Buddha had formerly converted a dragon, and had promised his new pupil to leave him his shadow, in order that, whenever the evil passions of his dragon-nature should revive, the aspect of his master's shadowy features might remind him of his former vows. This

promise was fulfilled, and the dragon-cave became a famous place of pilgrimage. Our traveller was told that the roads leading to the cave were extremely dangerous, and infested by robbers—that for three years none of the pilgrims had ever returned from the cave. But he replied, 'It would be difficult during a hundred thousand Kalpas to meet one single time with the true shadow of Buddha; how could I, having come so near, pass on without going to adore it?' He left his companions behind, and after asking in vain for a guide, he met at last with a boy who showed him to a farm belonging to a convent. Here he found an old man who undertook to act as his guide. They had hardly proceeded a few miles when they were attacked by five robbers. The monk took off his cap and displayed his ecclesiastical robes. 'Master,' said one of the robbers, 'where are you going?' Hiouen-thsang replied, 'I desire to adore the shadow of Buddha.' 'Master,' said the robber, 'have you not heard that these roads are full of bandits?' 'Robbers are men,' Hiouen-thsang exclaimed, 'and at present, when I am going to adore the shadow of Buddha, even though the roads were full of wild beasts, I should walk on without fear. Surely, then, I ought not to fear you, as you are men whose heart is possessed of pity.' The robbers were moved by these words, and opened their hearts to the true faith. After this little incident, Hiouen-thsang proceeded with his guide. He passed a stream rushing down between two precipitous walls of rock. In the rock itself there was a door which opened. All was dark. But Hiouen-thsang entered, advanced towards the east, then moved fifty steps backwards,

and began his devotions. He made one hundred salutations, but he saw nothing. He reproached himself bitterly with his former sins, he cried, and abandoned himself to utter despair, because the shadow of Buddha would not appear before him. At last, after many prayers and invocations, he saw on the eastern wall a dim light, of the size of a saucepan, such as the Buddhist monks carry in their hands. But it disappeared. He continued praying full of joy and pain, and again he saw a light, which vanished like lightning. Then he vowed, full of devotion and love, that he would never leave the place till he had seen the shadow of the 'Venerable of the age.' After two hundred prayers, the cave was suddenly bathed in light, and the shadow of Buddha, of a brilliant white colour, rose majestically on the wall, as when the clouds suddenly open and all at once display the marvellous image of the 'Mountain of Light.' A dazzling splendour lighted up the features of the divine countenance. Hiouen-thsang was lost in contemplation and wonder, and would not turn his eyes away from the sublime and incomparable object. . . . After he awoke from his trance, he called in six men, and commanded them to light a fire in the cave, in order to burn incense; but, as the approach of the light made the shadow of Buddha disappear, the fire was extinguished. Then five of the men saw the shadow, but the sixth saw nothing. The old man who had acted as guide was astounded when Hiouen-thsang told him the vision. 'Master,' he said, 'without the sincerity of your faith, and the energy of your vows, you could not have seen such a miracle.'

This is the account given by Hiouen-thsang's

biographers. But we must say, to the credit of Hiouen-thsang himself, that in the 'Si-yu-ki,' which contains his own diary, the story is told in a different way. The cave is described with almost the same words. But afterwards the writer continues: 'Formerly, the shadow of Buddha was seen in the cave, bright like his natural appearance, and with all the marks of his divine beauty. One might have said it was Buddha himself. For some centuries, however, it can no longer be seen completely. Though one does see something, it is only a feeble and doubtful resemblance. If a man prays with sincere faith, and if he has received from above a hidden impression, he sees the shadow clearly, but he cannot enjoy the sight for any length of time.'

From Peshawer, the scene of this extraordinary miracle, Hiouen-thsang proceeded to Kashmir, visited the chief towns of Central India, and arrived at last in Magadha, the Holy Land of the Buddhists. Here he remained five years, devoting all his time to the study of Sanskrit and Buddhist literature, and inspecting every place hallowed by the recollections of the past. He then passed through Bengal, and proceeded to the south, with a view of visiting Ceylon, the chief seat of Buddhism. Baffled in that wish, he crossed the peninsula from east to west, ascended the Malabar coast, reached the Indus, and after numerous excursions to the chief places of North-Western India, returned to Magadha, to spend there, with his old friends, some of the happiest years of his life. The route of his journeyings is laid down in a map drawn with exquisite skill by M. Vivien de Saint-Martin. At last Hiouen-thsang was obliged to return

to China, and, passing through the Penjab, Kabulistân, and Bactria, he reached the Oxus, followed its course nearly to its sources on the plateau of Pamir, and, after staying some time in the three chief towns of Turkistan, Khasgar, Yarkand, and Khoten, he found himself again, after sixteen years of travels, dangers, and studies, in his own native country. His fame had spread far and wide, and the poor pilgrim, who had once been hunted by imperial spies and armed policemen, was now received with public honours by the Emperor himself. His entry into the capital was like a triumph. The streets were covered with carpets, flowers were scattered, and banners flying. Soldiers were drawn up, the magistrates went out to meet him, and all the monks of the neighbourhood marched along in solemn procession. The trophies that adorned this triumph, carried by a large number of horses, were of a peculiar kind. First, 150 grains of the dust of Buddha; secondly, a golden statue of the the great Teacher; thirdly, a similar statue of sandal-wood; fourthly, a statue of sandal-wood, representing Buddha as descending from heaven; fifthly, a statue of silver; sixthly, a golden statue of Buddha conquering the dragons; seventhly, a statue of sandal-wood, representing Buddha as a preacher; lastly, a collection of 657 works in 520 volumes. The Emperor received the traveller in the Phœnix Palace, and, full of admiration for his talents and wisdom, invited him to accept a high office in the Government. This Hiouenthsang declined. 'The soul of the administration,' he said, 'is still the doctrine of Confucius;' and he would dedicate the rest of his life to the Law of Buddha. The Emperor thereupon asked him to

write an account of his travels, and assigned him a monastery where he might employ his leisure in translating the works he had brought back from India. His travels were soon written and published, but the translation of the Sanskrit MSS. occupied all the remaining years of his life. It is said that the number of works translated by him, with the assistance of a large staff of monks, amounted to 740, in 1,335 volumes. Frequently he might be seen meditating on a difficult passage, when suddenly it seemed as if a higher spirit had enlightened his mind. His soul was cheered, as when a man walking in darkness sees all at once the sun piercing the clouds and shining in its full brightness; and, unwilling to trust to his own understanding, he used to attribute his knowledge to a secret inspiration of Buddha and the Bodhisattvas. When he found that the hour of death approached, he had all his property divided among the poor. He invited his friends to come and see him, and to take a cheerful leave of that impure body of Hiouen-thsang. 'I desire,' he said, 'that whatever rewards I may have merited by good works may fall upon other people. May I be born again with them in the heaven of the blessed, be admitted to the family of Mi-le, and serve the Buddha of the future, who is full of kindness and affection. When I descend again upon earth to pass through other forms of existence, I desire at every new birth to fulfil my duties towards Buddha, and arrive at the last at the highest and most perfect intelligence.' He died in the year 664—about the same time that Mohammedanism was pursuing its bloody conquests in the East, and Christianity began to shed its pure light over the dark forests of Germany.

It is impossible to do justice to the character of so extraordinary a man as Hiouen-thsang in so short a sketch as we have been able to give. If we knew only his own account of his life and travels—the volume which has just been published at Paris—we should be ignorant of the motives which guided him and of the sufferings which he underwent. Happily, two of his friends and pupils have left an account of their teacher, and M. Stanislas Julien has acted wisely in beginning his collection of the Buddhist Pilgrims with the translation of that biography. There we learn something of the man himself and of that silent enthusiasm which supported him in his arduous work. There we see him braving the dangers of the desert, scrambling along glaciers, crossing over torrents, and quietly submitting to the brutal violence of Indian Thugs. There we see him rejecting the tempting invitations of Khans, Kings, and Emperors, and quietly pursuing among strangers, within the bleak walls of the cell of a Buddhist college, the study of a foreign language, the key to the sacred literature of his faith. There we see him rising to eminence, acknowledged as an equal by his former teachers, as a superior by the most distinguished scholars of India; the champion of the orthodox faith, an arbiter at councils, the favourite of Indian kings. In his own work there is hardly a word about all this. We do not wish to disguise his weaknesses, such as they appear in the same biography. He was a credulous man, easily imposed upon by crafty priests, still more easily carried away by his own superstitions; but he deserved to have lived in better times, and we almost grudge so high and noble a

character to a country not our own, and to a religion unworthy of such a man. Of selfishness we find no trace in him. His whole life belonged to the faith in which he was born, and the object of his labour was not so much to perfect himself as to benefit others. He was an honest man. And strange, and stiff, and absurd, and outlandish as his outward appearance may seem, there is something in the face of that poor Chinese monk, with his yellow skin and his small oblique eyes, that appeals to our sympathy—something in his life, and the work of his life, that places him by right among the heroes of Greece, the martyrs of Rome, the knights of the crusades, the explorers of the Arctic regions—something that makes us feel it a duty to inscribe his name on the roll of the 'forgotten worthies' of the human race. There is a higher consanguinity than that of the blood which runs through our veins—that of the blood which makes our hearts beat with the same indignation and the same joy. And there is a higher nationality than that of being governed by the same imperial dynasty—that of our common allegiance to the Father and Ruler of all mankind.

It is but right to state that we owe the publication, at least of the second volume of M. Julien's work, to the liberality of the Court of Directors of the East-India Company. We have had several opportunities of pointing out the creditable manner in which that body has patronised literary and scientific works connected with the East, and we congratulate the Chairman, Colonel Sykes, and the President of the Board of Control, Mr. Vernon Smith, on the excellent choice

they have made in this instance. Nothing can be more satisfactory than that nearly the whole edition of a work which would have remained unpublished without their liberal assistance, has been sold in little more than a month.

XVII.

THE MEANING OF NIRVAṆA.

To the Editor of The Times.

Sir,—Mr. Francis Barham, of Bath, has protested in a letter, printed in the *Times* of April 24, against my interpretations of Nirvâṇa, or the *summum bonum* of the Buddhists. He maintains that the Nirvâṇa in which the Buddhists believe, and which they represent as the highest goal of their religion and philosophy, means union and communion with God, or absorption of the individual soul by the divine essence, and not, as I tried to show in my articles on the 'Buddhist Pilgrims,' utter annihilation.

I must not take up much more of your space with so abstruse a subject as Buddhist metaphysics; but at the same time I cannot allow Mr. Barham's protest to pass unnoticed. The authorities which he brings forward against my account of Buddhism, and particularly against my interpretation of Nirvâṇa, seem formidable enough. There are Neander, the great Church historian, Creuzer, the famous scholar, and Huc, the well-known traveller and missionary—all interpreting, as Mr. Barham says, the Nirvâṇa of the Buddhists in the sense of an apotheosis of the human soul, as it was taught in the Vedânta philosophy of

the Brahmans, the Sufiism of the Persians, and the Christian mysticism of Eckhart and Tauler, and not in the sense of absolute annihilation.

Now, with regard to Neander and Creuzer, I must observe that their works were written before the canonical books of the Buddhists composed in Sanskrit had been discovered, or at least before they had been sent to Europe and been analysed by European scholars. Besides, neither Neander nor Creuzer was an Oriental scholar, and their knowledge of the subject could only be second-hand. It was in 1824 that Mr. Brian Houghton Hodgson, then resident at the Court of Nepal, gave the first intimation of the existence of a large religious literature written in Sanskrit, and preserved by the Buddhists of Nepal as the canonical books of their faith. It was in 1830 and 1835 that the same eminent scholar and naturalist presented the first set of these books to the Royal Asiatic Society in London. In 1837 he made a similar gift to the Société Asiatique of Paris, and some of the most important works were transmitted by him to the Bodleian Library at Oxford. It was in 1844 that the late Eugène Burnouf published, after a careful study of these documents, his classical work, 'Introduction à l'Histoire du Buddhisme Indien,' and it is from this book that our knowledge of Buddhism may be said to date. Several works have since been published, which have added considerably to the stock of authentic information on the doctrine of the great Indian reformer. There is Burnouf's translation of 'Le Lotus de la bonne Loi,' published after the death of that lamented scholar, together with numerous essays, in 1852. There are two in-

teresting works by the Rev. Spence Hardy—'Eastern Monachism,' London, 1850, and 'A Manual of Buddhism,' London, 1853; and there are the publications of M. Stanislas Julien, E. Foucaux, the Honourable George Turnour, Professor H. H. Wilson, and others, alluded to in my article on the 'Buddhist Pilgrims.' It is from these works alone that we can derive correct and authentic information on Buddhism, and not from Neander's 'History of the Christian Church' or from Creuzer's 'Symbolik.'

If anyone will consult these works, he will find that the discussions on the true meaning of Nirvâ*n*a are not of modern date, and that at a very early period different philosophical schools among the Buddhists of India, and different teachers who spread the doctrine of Buddhism abroad, propounded every conceivable opinion as to the orthodox explanation of this term. Even in one and the same school we find different parties maintaining different views on the meaning of Nirvâ*n*a. There is the school of the Svâbhâvikas, which still exists in Nepal. The Svâbhâvikas maintain that nothing exists but nature, or rather substance, and that this substance exists by itself (svabhâvât), without a Creator or a Ruler. It exists, however, under two forms: in the state of Pravr*i*tti, as active, or in the state of Nirvr*i*tti, as passive. Human beings, who, like everything else, exist svabhâvât, 'by themselves,' are supposed to be capable of arriving at Nirvr*i*tti, or passiveness, which is nearly synonymous with Nirvâ*n*a. But here the Svâbhâvikas branch off into two sects. Some believe that Nirvr*i*tti is repose, others that it is annihilation; and the former add, 'were it even annihilation

(sûnyatâ), it would still be good, man being otherwise doomed to an eternal migration through all the forms of nature; the more desirable of which are little to be wished for; and the less so, at any price to be shunned.'[1]

What was the original meaning of Nirvâna may perhaps best be seen from the etymology of this technical term. Every Sanskrit scholar knows that Nirvâṇa means originally the blowing out, the extinction of light, and not absorption. The human soul, when it arrives at its perfection, is blown out,[2] if we use the phraseology of the Buddhists, like a lamp; it is not absorbed, as the Brahmans say, like a drop in the ocean. Neither in the system of Buddhist philosophy, nor in the philosophy from which Buddha is supposed to have borrowed, was there any place left for a Divine Being; and if there is no Divine Being, into what can the human soul be absorbed? Sânkhya philosophy, in its original form, claims the name of an-îsvara, 'lordless' or 'atheistic,' as its distinctive title. Its final object is not absorption in God, whether personal or impersonal, but Moksha, deliverance of the soul from all pain and illusion, and recovery by the soul of its true nature—possibly, a return to the true self. It is doubtful whether the term Nirvâṇa was coined by Buddha. It occurs in the literature of the Brahmans as a synonym of Moksha, deliverance; Nirvṛitti, cessation; Apavarga, release; Niḥsreyas, *summum bonum*. It is used in this

[1] See Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 441; Hodgson, *Asiatic Researches*, vol. xvi.

[2] 'Calm,' 'without wind,' as Nirvâṇa is sometimes explained, is expressed in Sanskrit by Nirvâta. See Amara-Kosha, *sub voce*.

sense in the Mahâbhârata, and it is explained in the Amara-Kosha as having the meaning of 'blowing out, applied to a fire and to a sage.' [1] Unless, however, we succeed in tracing this term in works which can be proved to be anterior to Buddha, we may admit that it was invented by him in order to express that meaning of the *summum bonum* which he was the first to preach, and which some of his disciples explained in the sense of absolute annihilation.

The earliest authority to which we can go back, if we want to know the original character of Buddhism, is the Buddhist Canon, as settled after the death of Buddha at the first Council. It is called Tripiṭaka, or the Three Baskets, the first containing the Sûtras, or the discourses of Buddha; the second, the Vinaya, or his code of morality; the third, the Abhidharma, or the system of metaphysics. The first was compiled by Ânanda, the second by Upâli, the third by Kâśyapa—all of them the pupils and friends of Buddha. It may be that these collections, as we now possess them, were finally arranged, not at the first, but at the third Council. Yet, even then, we have no earlier, no more authentic, documents from which we could form an opinion as to the original teaching of Buddha; and the Nirvâṇa, as taught both in the metaphysics of Kâśyapa and in the Pragnâ-pâramitâ of the Northern Buddhists, is annihilation, not absorption. Buddhism, therefore, if tested by its own canonical books, cannot be freed from the charge of Nihilism, whatever may have been its

[1] Different views of the Nirvâṇa, as conceived by the Tîrthakas, or the Brahmans, may be seen in an extract from the Lankâvâtara, translated by Burnouf, p. 514.

character in the mind of its founder, and whatever changes it may have undergone in later times, and among races less inured to metaphysical discussions than the Hindus.

The ineradicable feeling of dependence on something else, which is the life-spring of all religion, was completely numbed in the early Buddhist metaphysicians, and it was only after several generations had passed away, and after Buddhism had become the creed of millions, that this feeling returned with increased warmth, changing, as I said in my article, the very Nothing into a paradise, and deifying the very Buddha who had denied the existence of a Deity. That this has been the case in China we know from the interesting works of the Abbé Ḥuc, and from other sources, such as the 'Catechism of the Shamans, or the Laws and Regulations of the Priesthood of Buddha in China,' translated by Ch. F. Neumann, London, 1831. In India, also, Buddhism, as soon as it became a popular religion, had to speak a more human language than that of metaphysical Pyrrhonism. But, if it did so, it was because it was shamed into it. This we may see from the very nicknames which the Brahmans apply to their opponents, the Bauddhas. They call them Nâstikas —those who maintain that there is nothing; Śûnyavadins—those who maintain that there is a univeral void.

The only ground, therefore, on which we may stand, if we wish to defend the founder of Buddhism against the charges of Nihilism and Atheism, is this, that, as some of the Buddhists admit, the 'Basket of Metaphysics' was rather the work of his pupils,

not of Buddha himself.[1] This distinction between the authentic words of Buddha and the canonical books in general is mentioned more than once. The priesthood of Ceylon, when the manifest errors with which their canonical commentaries abound were brought to their notice, retreated from their former position, and now assert that it is only the express words of Buddha that they receive as undoubted truth.[2] There is a passage in a Buddhist work which reminds us somewhat of the last page of Dean Milman's 'History of Christianity,' and where we read:—

'The words of the priesthood are good; those of the Rahats (saints) are better; but those of the All-knowing are the best of all.'

This is an argument which Mr. Francis Barham might have used with more success, and by which he might have justified, if not the first disciples, at least the original founder of Buddhism. Nay, there is a saying of Buddha's which tends to show that all metaphysical discussion was regarded by him as vain and useless. It is a saying mentioned in one of the MSS. belonging to the Bodleian Library. As it has never been published before, I may be allowed to quote it in the original: Sadasad vikâram na sahate —'The ideas of being and not being do not admit of discussion'—a tenet which, if we consider that it was enunciated before the time of the Eleatic philosophers of Greece, and long before Hegel's Logic,

[1] See Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 41. Abuddhoktam abhidharma-sâstram. *Ibid.* p. 454. According to the Tibetan Buddhists, however, Buddha propounded the Abhidharma when he was fifty-one years old. *Asiatic Researches*, vol. xx. p. 339.

[2] *Eastern Monachism*, p. 171.

might certainly have saved us many an intricate and indigestible argument.

A few passages from the Buddhist writings of Nepal and Ceylon will best show that the *horror nihili* was not felt by the metaphysicians of former ages in the same degree as it is felt by ourselves. The famous hymn which resounds in heaven when the luminous rays of the smile of Buddha penetrate through the clouds, is 'All is transitory, all is misery, all is void, all is without substance.' Again, it is said in the Pra*gnâ*-pâramitâ[1] that Buddha began to think that he ought to conduct all creatures to perfect Nirvâ*na*. But he reflected that there are really no creatures which ought to be conducted, nor creatures that conduct; and, nevertheless, he did conduct all creatures to perfect Nirvâ*na*. Then, continues the text, why is it said that there are neither creatures which arrive at complete Nirvâ*na*, nor creatures which conduct there? Because it is illusion which makes creatures what they are. It is as if a clever juggler, or his pupil, made an immense number of people to appear on the high road, and after having made them to appear, made them to disappear again. Would there be anybody who had killed, or murdered, or annihilated, or caused them to vanish? No. And it is the same with Buddha. He conducts an immense, innumerable, infinite number of creatures to complete Nirvâ*na*, and yet there are neither creatures which are conducted, nor creatures that conduct. If a Bodhisattva, on hearing this explanation of the Law, is not frightened, then it may be said that he has put on the great armour.[2]

[1] Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 462.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 478.

Soon after, we read: 'The name of Buddha is nothing but a word. The name of Bodhisattva is nothing but a word. The name of Perfect Wisdom (Pragnâ-pâramitâ) is nothing but a word. The name is indefinite, as if one says "I," for "I" is something indefinite, because it has no limits.'

Burnouf gives the gist of the whole Pragnâ-pâramitâ in the following words: 'The highest Wisdom, or what is to be known, has no more real existence than he who has to know, or the Bodhisattva; no more than he who does know, or the Buddha.' But Burnouf remarks that nothing of this kind is to be found in the Sûtras, and that Gautama Sâkya-muni, the son of Suddhodana, would never have become the founder of a popular religion if he had started with similar absurdities. In the Sûtras the reality of the objective world is denied; the reality of form is denied; the reality of the individual, or the 'I,' is equally denied. But the existence of a subject, of something like the Purusha, the thinking substance of the Sânkhya philosophy, is spared. Something at least exists with respect to which everything else may be said not to exist. The germs of the ideas, developed in the Pragnâ-pâramitâ, may indeed be discovered here and there in the Sûtras also.[1] But they had not yet ripened into that poisonous plant which soon became an indispensable narcotic in the schools of the later Buddhists. Buddha himself, however, though, perhaps, not a Nihilist, was certainly an Atheist. He does not deny distinctly either the existence of gods, or that of God; but he ignores the former, and he is ignorant of the latter.

[1] Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 520.

Therefore, if Nirvâṇa in his mind was not yet complete annihilation, still less could it have been absorption into a Divine essence. It was nothing but self-ness, in the metaphysical sense of the word—a relapse into that being which is nothing but itself. This is the most charitable view which we can take of the Nirvâṇa, even as conceived by Buddha himself, and it is this view which Burnouf derived from the canonical books of the Northern Buddhists. Mr. Spence Hardy, who in his works follows exclusively the authority of the Southern Buddhists, the Pâli and Singhalese works of Ceylon, arrives at the same result. We read in his work: 'The Rahat (Arhat), who has reached Nirvâṇa, but is not yet a Pratyeka-buddha, or a Supreme Budda, says: "I await the appointed time for the cessation of existence. I have no wish to live; I have no wish to die. Desire is extinct."'

In a very interesting dialogue between Milinda and Nâgasena, communicated by Mr. Spence Hardy, Nirvâṇa is represented as something which has no antecedent cause, no qualities, no locality. It is something of which the utmost we may assert is, that it is.

Nâgasena. Can a man, by his natural strength, go from the city of Sâgal to the forest of Himâla?

Milinda. Yes.

Nâgasena. But could any man, by his natural strength, bring the forest of Himâla to this city of Sâgal?

Milinda. No.

Nágasena. In like manner, though the fruition of the paths may cause the accomplishment of Nirvâna, no cause by which Nirvâna is produced can be declared. The path that leads to Nirvâna may be pointed out, but not any cause for its production. Why? because that which constitutes Nirvâna is beyond all computation—a mystery, not to be understood. . . . It cannot be said that it is produced, nor that it is not produced; that it is past or future or present. Nor can it be said that it is the seeing of the eye, or the hearing of the ear, or the smelling of the nose, or the tasting of the tongue, or the feeling of the body.

Milinda. Then you speak of a thing that is not; you merely say that Nirvâna is Nirvâna;—therefore there is no Nirvâna.

Nágasena. Great king, Nirvâna is.

Another question also, whether Nirvâna is something different from the beings that enter into it, has been asked by the Buddhists themselves:—

Milinda. Does the being who acquires it, attain something that has previously existed?—or is it his own product, a formation peculiar to himself?

Nágasena. Nirvâna does not exist previously to its reception; nor is it that which was brought into existence. Still to the being who attains it, there is Nirvâna.

In opposition, therefore, to the more advanced views of the Nihilistic philosophers of the North, Nâgasena maintains the existence of Nirvâna, and of the being that has entered Nirvâna. He does not

say that Buddha is a mere word. When asked by king Milinda, whether the all-wise Buddha exists, he replies:—

Nâgasena. He who is the most meritorious (Bhagavat) does exist.

Milinda. Then can you point out to me the place in which he exists?

Nâgasena. Our Bhagavat has attained Nirvâṇa, where there is no repetition of birth. We cannot say that he is here or that he is there. When a fire is extinguished, can it be said that it is here or that it is there? Even so our Buddha has attained extinction (Nirvâṇa). He is like the sun that has set behind the Astagiri mountain. It cannot be said that he is here or that he is there: but we can point him out by the discourses he delivered. In them he lives.

At the present moment, the great majority of Buddhists would probably be quite incapable of understanding the abstract speculation of their ancient masters, and the view taken of Nirvâṇa in China, Mongolia, and Tatary may hardly be less gross than that which most of the Mohammedans form of their paradise. But in the history of religion, the historian must go back to the earliest and most original documents that are to be obtained. Thus only may he hope to understand the later developments which, whether for good or evil, every form of faith has had to undergo.

XVIII.

LECTURE

ON

BUDDHIST NIHILISM,

Delivered before the General Meeting of the Association of German Philologists, at Kiel, the 28th of September, 1869.

I MAY be mistaken, but my belief is that the subject which I have chosen for my discourse cannot be regarded as alien to the general interests of this assembly.

Buddhism, in its numerous varieties, still continues the religion of the majority of mankind, and will therefore always occupy a very prominent place in a comparative study of the religions of the world. And comparative theology, although the youngest branch on the tree of human knowledge, will, for an accurate and fruitful study of antiquity, soon become as indispensable as comparative philology. For how can we truly understand and properly appreciate a people, its literature, art, politics, morals and philosophy, its entire conception of life, without having comprehended its religion, not only in its outer aspect, but in its innermost being, in its deepest far-reaching roots?

What our great poet once said almost propheti-

cally of languages, may also be said of religions—'*He who knows only one, knows none.*' As the true knowledge of a language requires a knowledge of languages, a true knowledge of religion requires a knowledge of religions. And though the assertion that all the languages of mankind are Oriental may sound too bold, true it is that all religions, like the sun, have risen from the East.

Here, therefore, in treating religions scientifically (those of the Aryan as well as those of the Semitic races) the Oriental scholar lawfully enters into what you call the 'plenum' of philology, if philology still is, as our President told us yesterday, what it once intended and wished to be, viz. the true Humanitas, which, like an Emperor of yore, could say of itself, 'humani nihil a me alienum puto.'

Now, it has been the peculiar fate of the religion of Buddha that among all the so-called false or heathenish religions, it almost alone has been praised by all and everybody for its elevated, pure, and humanising character. One hardly trusts one's eyes on seeing Catholic and Protestant missionaries vie with each other in their praises of the Buddha; and even the attention of those who are indifferent to all that concerns religion must be arrested for a moment when they learn from statistical accounts that no religion, not even the Christian, has exercised so powerful an influence on the diminution of crime as the old simple doctrine of the Ascetic of Kapilavastu. Indeed, no better authority can be brought forward in this respect than that of a still living Bishop of the Roman Catholic Church. In his interesting work on the life of Buddha, the author, the Bishop

of Ramatha, the Vicar Apostolic of Ava and Pegu, speaks with so much candour of the merits of the Buddhist religion that we are often at a loss which most to admire, his courage or his learning. Thus he says in one place (page 494) :—'There are many moral precepts equally commanded and enforced in common by both creeds. It will not be deemed rash to assert that most of the moral truths prescribed by the Gospel, are to be met with in the Buddhistic scriptures.' In another place Bishop Bigandet says (p. 495) :—'In reading the particulars of the life of the last Budha Gaudama, it is impossible not to feel reminded of many circumstances relating to our Saviour's life, such as it has been sketched out by the Evangelists.'

I might produce many even stronger testimonies in honour of Buddha and Buddhism, but the above suffice for my purpose.

But then, on the other hand, it seems as if people had only permitted themselves to be so liberal in their praises of Buddha and Buddhism because they could, in the end, condemn a religion which, in spite of all its merits, culminated in Atheism and Nihilism. Thus we are told by Bishop Bigandet (p. viii.) :—'It may be said in favour of Buddhism that no philosophico-religious system has ever upheld, to an equal degree, the notions of a saviour and deliverer, and the necessity of his mission for procuring the salvation of man, in a Buddhist sense. The *rôle* of Buddha, from beginning to end, is that of a deliverer, who preaches a law designed to secure to man the deliverance from all the miseries he is labouring under. But by an inexplicable and deplorable eccen-

tricity, the pretended saviour, after having taught man the way to deliver himself from the tyranny of his passions, leads him, after all, into the bottomless gulf of a total annihilation.'

This language may have a slightly episcopal tinge, yet we find the same judgment, in almost identical words, pronounced by the most eminent scholars who have written on Buddhism. The warm discussions on this subject which have recently taken place at the *Académie des Inscriptions et Belles-Lettres* of Paris are probably known to many of those who are here present; but better still, the work of the man whose place has not yet been filled, either in the French Academy, or at the Council Board of German Science—the work of Eugène Burnouf, the true founder of a scientific study of Buddhism. Burnouf, too, in his researches arrives at the same result, viz.:—that Buddhism, as known to us from its canonical books, in spite of its great qualities, ends in Atheism and Nihilism.

Now, as to Atheism, it cannot be denied that, if we call the old gods of the Veda—Indra, and Agni, and Yama—gods, Buddha was an Atheist. He does not believe in the divinity of these deities. What is noteworthy is that he does not by any means deny their bare existence, just as little as St. Augustine and other fathers of the Church endeavoured to sublimise or entirely to explain away the existence of the Olympian deities. The founder of Buddhism treats the old gods as superhuman beings, and promises the believers that they shall after death be reborn into the world of the gods, and shall enjoy divine bliss with the blessed gods. Similarly he threatens

the wicked that after death they shall meet with their punishment in the subterranean abodes and hells, where the Asuras, Sarpas, Nâgas, and other evil spirits dwell, beings whose existence was more firmly rooted in the popular belief and language than that even the founder of a new religion could have dared to reason them away. But, although Buddha assigned to these mediatised gods and devils, palaces, gardens, and a court, not second to their former ones, he yet deprived them of all their sovereign rights. Although, according to Buddha, the worlds of the gods last for millions of years, they must perish, at the end of every kalpa, with the gods and with the spirits who in the circle of births have raised themselves to the world of the gods. Indeed, the reorganisation of the spirit-world goes further still. Already, before Buddha, the Brahmans had surmounted the low standpoint of mythological polytheism, and supplanted it by the idea of the Brahman, as the absolute divine or super-divine power. What, then, does Buddha decree? To this Brahman also he assigns a place in his universe. Over and above the world of the gods with its six paradises he heaps up sixteen Brahma-worlds, not to be attained through virtue and piety only, but through inner contemplation, through knowledge and enlightenment. The dwellers in these worlds are already purely spiritualised beings, without body, without weight, without desire, far above men and gods. Indeed, the Buddhist architect rises to a still more towering height, heaping upon the Brahma-world four still higher worlds, which he calls the world of the formless. All these worlds are open to

man, and the beings ascend and descend in the circle of time, according to the works they have performed, according to the truths they have recognised. But in all these worlds the law of change obtains; in none is there exemption from birth, age, and death. The world of the gods will perish like that of men, even the world of the formless will not last for ever; but the Buddha, the Enlightened and truly Free, stands higher, and will not be affected or disturbed by the collapse of the Universe: 'Si fractus illabatur orbis, impavidum ferient ruinæ.'

Now, however, we meet with a vein of irony, which one would hardly have expected in Buddha. Gods and devils he had located; to all mythological and philosophical acquisitions of the past he had done justice as far as possible. Even fabulous beings, such as Nâgas, Gandharvas, and Garudas, had escaped the process of dissolution which was to reach them later only at the hands of comparative mythology. There is only *one* idea, the idea of a personal creator, in regard to which Buddha is relentless.

It is not only denied, but even its origin, like that of an ancient myth, is carefully explained in its minutest details. This is done in the Brahmagâla-sûtra. Let us bear in mind that a destruction of the worlds occurs at the end of every kalpa, a destruction which not only annihilates earth and hell, but also all the worlds of the gods, and even the three lowest of the Brahma-worlds. A description of the duration of a kalpa can only be given in the language of Buddhism. Take a rock forming a cube of about fourteen miles, touch it once in a hundred years with

a piece of fine cloth, and the rock will sooner be reduced to dust than a kalpa will have attained its end. It is said that at the end of the kalpa, after all the lower stories of the universe had been destroyed and a new world had again been slowly formed, the spirits dwelling in the higher Brahma-worlds had remained inviolate. Then one of these Spirits, a being without body, without weight, omnipresent and blessed within himself, descended, when his time had arrived, from the higher Brahma-world to the new-formed nether Brahma-world. There he first dwelt alone; but, by-and-by, the desire arose in him not to remain alone any longer. At the moment of the awakening of this desire within him, a second being accidentally descended from the higher into the lower Brahma-world. Then and there the thought originated in the first being, 'I am the Brahma, the great Brahma, the Highest, the Unconquerable, the Omniscient, the Lord and King of All. I am the Creator of all things, the Father of All. *This* being has also been created by me; for as soon as I desired not to remain alone, my desire brought forth this second being.' The other beings as they gradually descended from the higher words likewise believed that the first comer had been their Creator, for was he not older and mightier and handsomer than they?

But this is not all; for although it would explain how one spirit could consider himself the creator of other spirits, it would leave unexplained the circumstances of men on earth believing in such a creator. This is explained in the following manner: 'In the course of time one of these higher beings sank lower

and lower, and was finally born as a man on earth. There, by penances and deep meditations, he attained a state of inner enlightenment, which gives to man the faculty of remembering his former existences. He remembered the above-narrated occurrences in the newly-originated Brahma-world, and announced to mankind that there was a Creator, a Brahman, who had been prior to all other beings; that this Creator was eternal and immutable, while all beings created by him were mutable and mortal.

There is in this explanation, I believe, an unmistakeable note of animosity, otherwise so alien to the character of Buddha, and the question naturally arises whether this can have been the doctrine of the founder of Buddhism himself. And herewith we at once approach our principal problem—'*Is it possible to distinguish between Buddhism and the personal teaching of Buddha?*' We possess the Buddhist canon and have a right to consider all that we find in this canon as orthodox Buddhist doctrine. But as there has been no lack of efforts in Christian theology to distinguish between the doctrine of the founder of our religion and that of the writers of the Gospels, to go beyond the canon of the New Testament, and to make the λόγια of the Master the only valid rule of our faith, so a similar want was felt at a very early period among the followers of Buddha. King Asoka, the Indian Constantine, had to remind the assembled priests at the great Council which had to settle the Buddhist canon, *that what had been said by Buddha, that alone was well said.*[1] Works attributed to Buddha, but declared as apocry-

[1] See *Selected Essays*, vol. i. p. 17.

phal, or even as heterodox, already existed at that time.

Thus we are not by any means without an authority for distinguishing between Buddhism and the teaching of Buddha; the question is only whether such a separation is still practicable for us?

My belief is that all honest enquirers must oppose a No to this question. Burnouf never ventured to cast a glance beyond the boundaries of the Buddhist canon. What he finds in the canonical books, in the so-called 'Three Baskets,' is to him the doctrine of Buddha, similarly as we must accept, as the doctrine of Christ, what is contained in the four Gospels.

Still the question ought to be asked again and again, whether, at least with regard to certain doctrines or facts, it may not be possible to make a step further in advance, even with the conviction that it cannot lead us to results of apodictic certainty. For if, as happens frequently, we find in the different parts of the canon, views, not only differing from, but even contradictory to each other, it follows, I think, that one only of them can belong to Buddha personally, and I believe that in such a case we have the right to choose, and the liberty to accept *that* view as the original one, the one peculiar to Buddha, which *least* harmonises with the later system of orthodox Buddhism.

As regards the denial of a Creator, or Atheism in the ordinary acceptation of the term, I do not think that any one passage from the books of the canon known to us can be quoted which contradicts it, or which in any way presupposes the belief in a personal God or a Creator. All that may be urged are the

words said to have been spoken by Buddha at the moment when he became the Enlightened, the Buddha. They are as follows :—'Looking for the maker of this tabernacle, I shall have to run through a course of many births, as long as I do not find (him);—and painful is birth again and again. But now, maker of the tabernacle, thou hast been seen; thou shalt not make up this tabernacle again. All thy rafters are broken, thy ridge-pole is sundered; the mind, approaching the Eternal (Nirvâna), has attained to the extinction of all desires.'[1]

Here in the maker of the tabernacle—*i.e.* of the body—one might be tempted to see a creator. But he who is acquainted with the general direction of thought in Buddhism, soon finds that this architect of the house is only a poetical expression, and that whatever meaning may underlie it, it evidently signifies a force subordinated to the Buddha, the Enlightened. Buddha had conquered Mâra, the representative of worldly temptations, the father of all worldly desires; and as desire is indirectly the cause of birth, the destruction of desire and the conquest of Mâra are nearly the same thing.

But whilst we have no ground for exonerating the Buddha personally from the accusation of Atheism, the matter stands very differently as regards the charge of Nihilism. Buddhist Nihilism has always been much more incomprehensible than mere Atheism. A kind of religion is still conceivable, when there is something firm somewhere, when a something, eternal and self-dependent, is recognised, if not *without* and *above* man, at least *within* him.

[1] Dhammapada, *v.* 153.

But if, as Buddhism teaches, the soul after having passed through all the phases of existence, through all the worlds of the gods and of the higher spirits, attains finally Nirvâna as its highest aim and last reward, *i.e.* becomes quite extinct, then religion is not any more what it ought to be—a bridge from the finite to the infinite, but a trap-bridge hurling man into the abyss at the very moment when he thought he had arrived at the stronghold of the Eternal. According to the metaphysical doctrine of Buddhism, the soul cannot dissolve itself in a higher being, or be absorbed in an absolute substance, as was taught by the Brahmans and other mystics of ancient and modern times. For Buddhism knew not the Divine, the Eternal, the Absolute, and the soul, even as the I, or as the mere Self, the Âtman, as called by the Brahmans, was represented in the orthodox metaphysics of Buddhism as transient, as futile, as a mere phantom.

No person who reads with attention the metaphysical speculations on the Nirvâna contained in the Buddhist canon, can arrive at any conviction different from that expressed by Burnouf, viz.: That Nirvâna, the highest aim, the *summum bonum* of Buddhism, is the absolute nothing.

Burnouf adds, however, that this doctrine, in its crude form, appears only in the third part of the canon, the so-called Abhidharma, but not in the first and second parts, in the Sûtras, the sermons, and the Vinaya, the ethics, which together bear the name of Dharma or Law. He next points out that, according to some ancient authorities, this entire part of the canon was designated as 'not pronounced by

Buddha.'[1] These are, at once, two important limitations. I add a third, and maintain that sayings of the Buddha occur in the first and second parts of the canon, which are in open contradiction to this metaphysical Nihilism.

Now, as regards the soul, or the self, the existence of which, according to the orthodox metaphysics, is purely phenomenal, a sentence attributed to the Buddha says (Dhammapada, *v.* 160), 'Self is the Lord of Self; who else could be the Lord?' And again (*ibid. v.* 323), 'A man who controls himself enters the untrodden land through his own self-controlled self.' And this untrodden land is the Nirvâ*n*a.

Nirvâ*n*a certainly means extinction, whatever its later arbitrary interpretations may have been, and seems, therefore, to imply, even etymologically, a real blowing out or passing away. But Nîrvâ*n*a occurs also in the Brahmanic writings, as synonymous with Moksha, Nirv*r*itti, and other words, all designating the highest stage of spiritual liberty and bliss, but not annihilation. Nirvâ*n*a may mean the extinction of many things—of selfishness, desire, and sin, without going so far as the extinction of being and self-consciousness. Further, if we consider that Buddha himself, after he had already seen Nirvâ*n*a, still remains on earth until his body falls a prey to death; that Buddha appears, in the legends, to his disciples even after his death,[2] it seems to me that all these circumstances are hardly reconcileable with the orthodox metaphysical doctrine of Nirvâ*n*a.

What does it mean when Buddha (Dhammapada,

[1] M. M.'s *Selected Essays*, *supra*, p. 286. The later origin of the Abhidharma was denied by D'Alwis in his Essay on Nirvâ*n*a, and defended by Oldenberg, *Vinaya*, vol. i. p. xi.

[2] See *supra*, p. 222, note.

v. 21) calls earnestness the path of immortality, and thoughtlessness the path of death? Buddhaghosha, a learned man of the fifth century, here explains immortality by Nirvâ*n*a, and that this was also Buddha's thought is clearly established by a passage following immediately after (*ibid.* *v.* 23): 'These wise people, meditative, steady, always possessed of strong powers, attain to Nirvâ*n*a, the highest happiness.' Can this be annihilation? and would such expressions have been used by the founder of this new religion, if what he called immortality had, in his own idea, been annihilation?

I could quote many more such passages did I not fear to tire you. Nirvâ*n*a occurs even in the purely moral sense of quietness and absence of passion. 'When a man can bear everything without uttering a sound,' says Buddha (*ibid.* *v.* 134), 'he has attained Nirvâ*n*a.' Quiet long-suffering he calls the highest Nirvâ*n*a (*v.* 184); he who has conquered passion and hatred is said to enter into Nirvâ*n*a (*v.* 369).

In other passages, Nirvâ*n*a is described as the result of just knowledge. Thus we read (*v.* 203): 'Hunger or desire is the worst of diseases, the body the greatest of pains; if one knows this truly, that is Nirvâ*n*a, the highest happiness.'

When it is said in one passage that rest (*S*ânti) is the highest bliss (*v.* 285), it is said in another that Nirvâ*n*a is the highest bliss.

Buddha says (*v.* 225):—'The sages who injure nobody, and who always control their body, they will go to the unchangeable place (Nirvâ*n*a), where, if they have gone, they will suffer no more."

Nirvâna is called the quiet place (*vv.* 368, 381), the immortal place (*v.* 114), even simply that which is immortal (*v.* 374); and the expression occurs (*v.* 411), that the wise dive into this immortal. As, according to Buddha, everything that was made, everything that was put together, passes away again, and resolves itself into its component parts, he calls in contradistinction that which is not made, *i.e.*, the uncreated and eternal, Nirvâna (*ibid.* *v.* 97). He says (*v.* 383):—'When you have understood the destruction of all that was made, you will understand that which was not made.' Whence it appears that even for him a certain something exists, which is not made, which is eternal and imperishable.

On considering such sayings, to which many more might be added, one recognises in them a conception of Nirvâna, altogether irreconcileable with the Nihilism of the third part of the Buddhist Canon. The question in such matters is not a more or less, but an *aut-aut*. If these sayings have maintained themselves, in spite of their contradiction to orthodox metaphysics, the only explanation, in my opinion, is, that they were too firmly fixed in the tradition which went back to Buddha and his disciples. What Bishop Bigandet and others represent as the popular view of the Nirvâna, in contradistinction to that of the Buddhist divines, was, if I am not mistaken, the conception of Buddha and his disciples. It represented the entrance of the soul into rest, a subduing of all wishes and desires, indifference to joy and pain, to good and evil, an absorption of the soul in itself, and a freedom from the circle of existences from birth to death, and from

death to a new birth. This is still the meaning which educated people attach to it, whilst to the minds of the larger masses [1] Nirvâna suggests rather the idea of a Mohammedan paradise or of blissful Elysian fields.

Only in the hands of the philosophers, to whom Buddhism owes its metaphysics, the Nirvâna, through constant negations, carried to an indefinite degree, through the excluding and abstracting of all that is not Nirvâna, at last became an empty Nothing, a philosophical myth. There is no lack of such philosophical myths either in the East or in the West. What has been fabled by philosophers of a Nothing, and of the terrors of a Nothing, is as much a myth as the myth of Eos and Tithonus. There is no more a Nothing than there is an Eos or a Chaos. All these are sickly, dying, or dead words, which, like shadows and ghosts, continue to haunt language, and succeed in deceiving for a while even the healthiest understanding.

Even modern philosophy is not afraid to say that there is a Nothing. We find passages in the German mystics, such as Eckhart and Tauler, where the abyss of the Nothing is spoken of quite in a Buddhist style.[2] If Buddha had said, like St. Paul, 'that what

[1] Bigandet.—*The Life or Legend of Gaudama, the Buddha of the Burmese*, with Annotations. The Ways to Neibban, and Notice on the Phongyies, or Burmese Monks. Pp. xi. 538. Bastian, *Die Völker des östlichen Asien*, vol. iii. p. 353.

[2] About the same time when this deeply religious Nihilism found expression in Germany in the works of Eckhart and Tauler, it shows itself in Wales also. In a letter which I received from the author of the *Literature of the Kymry*, Mr. Thomas Stephens sends me the following specimen, taken from the *Myvyrian Archæology*, vol. iii. p. 34 :—

no eye hath seen, nor ear heard, neither has it entered into the heart of man,' was prepared in the Nirvâna for those who had advanced to the highest degree of spiritual perfection, such expressions would have been quite sufficient to serve as a proof to the philosophers by profession that this Nirvâna, which could not become an object of perception by the senses, nor of conception by the categories of the understanding, the anâkhâta, the ineffable, as Buddha calls it (*v.* 218), could be nothing more or less than the Nothing. Could we dare with Hegel to distinguish between a Nothing (*Nichts*) and a Not (*Nicht*), we might say that the Nirvâna had, through a false dialectical process, become from a relative Nothing an absolute Not. This was the work of the theologians and of the orthodox philosophers. But a religion has never been founded by such teaching, and a man like

No Secret but No-thing,
No-thing but the Infinite,
No Infinite but God,
No God but No-thing,
No-thing but (the) Secret,
No Secret but God.

The thought evidently is, that all *things* are perishable, but that the Infinite, Eternal, and Imperishable is No-thing. The negation of the Welsh poets was not atheism, not annihilation, not a denial of being, but simply a denial of all accidental and perishable attributes or qualities. Catwg or Cadog, the Wise, is made to say:—

No Living but God,
No Good but God,
No Wise but God,
No Knowing but God,
No Power but God,
No Love but God,
No Just but God,
No Omniscient but God,
No Strong but God,
No Endless but God,
No Judgment but God,
No Lord but God,
No Eternal but God,
No Infinite but God,
No Whole but God,
No Enough but God
No-thing but God

Buddha, who knew mankind, must have known that he could not with such weapons overturn the tyranny of the Brahmans. Either we must bring ourselves to believe that Buddha taught his disciples two diametrically opposed doctrines on Nirvâna, say an exoteric and esoteric one, or we must allow *that* view of Nirvâna to have been the original view of the founder of this marvellous religion, which corresponds best with the simple, clear, and practical character of Buddha.

I have now said all that can be said in vindication of Buddha within the brief time allowed to these discourses. But I should be sorry if you carried away the impression that Buddhism contained nothing but empty, useless speculations; permit me, therefore, to read to you, in conclusion, a short Buddhist Parable, which will show you Buddhism in a more human form. It is borrowed from a work which will soon appear, and which contains the translation of the Parables used by the Buddhists to obtain acceptance for their doctrines amongst the people. I shall only omit some technical expressions and minor details which are of no importance.[1]

[1] This parable was given at the time, September 1869, from a Burmese text, translated by Captain H. T. Rogers, and printed in 1870, in '*Buddhaghosha's Parables*, translated from the Burmese by Captain H. T. Rogers, R.E.; with an Introduction containing Buddha's Dhammapada, or the Path of Virtue, translated from Pâli by F. Max Müller.' The Pâli text was at that time not accessible, but it has lately been published by Dr. J. H. Thiessen (*Die Legende von Kisâ Gosamî*, Kiel, 1880), from a MS. in the Royal Library of Copenhagen. It forms part of Buddhagosa's commentary on the Dhammapada, and occurs twice—once in illustration of verse 114, where it is given complete, and again in illustration of verse 287. Fausböll had omitted it in his extracts from Buddhaghosa, in his edition of Dhammapada, Copenhagen, 1855.

KISÂ GOTAMÎ.

A Buddhist Parable, translated from Pâli.

WHEN Kisâ Gotamî had been married one year she gave birth to a son, but when he had just begun to walk, he died. The young mother, who had never seen anyone die before, sent away the men who came to burn the dead body.

'I shall ask for medicine for my boy,' she cried, and, taking the dead child in her arms, she went from house to house, asking the people, 'Do you not know any medicine for my boy?'

Then the people answered: 'Surely, thou art mad to go about asking for medicine for a dead child.'

But she said: 'I shall surely find some one who will tell me what I can do for my boy.'

Now, there was a wise man who saw her and thought, 'It may be that the poor girl has had her first child. She does not know what death is. I ought to comfort her.' And he said to her: 'My daughter, I myself know of no medicine; but I know one who knows the right medicine for thee.'

'O father,' she said, 'who is he?'

'The Master,' he replied. 'Go and ask him.'

'I shall go, father,' she said. And she went to the Master, and bowed down before him, and, standing by his side, she said: 'Master, do you indeed know some medicine for my son?'

'Daughter, I do,' he replied.

'What should I get for him?' she said.

'Get only a few mustard seeds,' he replied.

'I shall get them, Master,' she said; 'but in whose house shall I get them?'

'In any house,' he replied, 'where neither a son, nor a daughter, nor anyone else has yet died.'

'Well, Master,' she said, and bowed before him, and took her dead child in her arms, and went to the nearest village.

Standing at the door of the first house, she cried: 'Have you, perhaps, in your house a few mustard seeds? I want them as medicine for my boy.'

'We have,' the people answered.

'Then give them to me,' she said.

And when they had brought the mustard seeds and given them to her, she asked: 'Friends, surely no son, or daughter, or anyone else has yet died in this house?'

They answered: 'Friend, what dost thou say? The living are few, the dead are many.'

'Then take your mustard-seeds,' she said, and threw them down; 'they will not do as medicine for my boy.'

And walking away from the first house she went on in the same manner, asking at every door. But when she could not get the mustard seeds at any house, and evening was now drawing near, she thought: 'This is a heavy task; I know now, my boy is dead. In every village the dead are more than the living.'

While she was thinking thus, her heart, which had been breaking for love to her child, grew strong. She took the child to the forest, and left him there.

Then she went back to the Master, bowed down before him, and stood silent by his side. And the

Master spake to her, saying: 'Hast thou got the few mustard seeds?'

'No, Master,' she said: 'in every village the dead are more than the living.'

Then the Master said to her: 'Thou thoughtest that thy son alone had died, but there is the eternal law for all living beings. The King of Death, like a rushing stream, carries away all beings into the ocean of destruction, long before their wishes are fulfilled.'

Then, in order to teach the Law, the Master spoke the following verse:—

'Death comes and carries off the thoughtless man,
Proud of his sons and flocks that none can number,
As floods arise and carry off by night
A happy village bound in deepest slumber.'

(Dhammapada, v. 287.)

When he had finished this verse, Kisâ Gotamî had made the first step towards the truth.

And afterwards she asked the Master to admit her into the order, and the Master sent her to the nuns, and allowed her to take the vow. When she had been admitted, she received the name of Kisâ Gotamî, the elder lady.

One day she came to the door of the chapel, and having lighted a lamp, she sat down. When she saw the rows of lamps going out and reviving, she was comforted, thinking, 'Like these lamps, all living beings, too, go out and revive; but those who have reached Nibbâna are seen no more.'

The Master was seated at that time in his chamber, and sending forth a radiant image of himself, he sat down before her, as if preaching, and said: 'So it

is, indeed, O Gotamî; like lamps, all living beings go out and revive; but those who have reached Nibbâna are seen no more.'

He then said: 'One moment's life of a man who sees Nibbâna is better than a hundred years of those who do not see Nibbâna;' and after showing her the connection between this and what she had just seen, he pronounced the following song, by way of teaching the Law:—

'If man should live one hundred years on earth,
And never see the place which knows no dying,
One day of life would better be by far,
That made him see the place which knows no dying.
(Dhammapada, v. 114.)

At the end of the lesson, Kisâ Gotamî, where she was sitting, obtained saintship together with all knowledge.

Gentlemen, this is a specimen of true Buddhism; this is the language, intelligible to the poor and the suffering, which has endeared Buddhism to the hearts of millions—not the silly metaphysical phantasmagorias of worlds of gods and worlds of Brahma, or final dissolution of the soul in Nirvâna—no, the beautiful, the tender, the humanly true, which, like pure gold, lies buried in all religions, even in the sandy desert of the Buddhist canon.

XIX.

ON SANSKRIT TEXTS

DISCOVERED

IN JAPAN.

Read at the Meeting of the Royal Asiatic Society, February 16, 1880.

It is probably in the recollection of some of the senior members of this Society how wide and deep an interest was excited in the year 1853 by the publication of Stanislas Julien's translation of the 'Life and Travels of Hiouen-thsang.' The account given by an eye-witness of the religious, social, political, and literary state of India at the beginning of the seventh century of our era was like a rocket, carrying a rope to a whole crew of struggling scholars, on the point of being drowned in the sea of Indian chronology; and the rope was eagerly grasped by all, whether their special object was the history of Indian religion, or the history of Indian literature, architecture, or politics. While many books on Indian literature, published five-and-twenty years ago, are now put aside and forgotten, Julien's three volumes of Hiouen-thsang still maintain a fresh interest, and supply new subjects for discussion, as may be seen even in the last number of the Journal of your Society.

I had the honour and pleasure of working with

Stanislas Julien, when he was compiling those large lists of Sanskrit and Chinese words which formed the foundation of his translation of Hiouen-thsang, and enabled him in his classical work, the *Méthode pour déchiffrer et transcrire les noms Sanskrits* (1861), to solve a riddle which had puzzled Oriental scholars for a long time—viz. how it happened that the original Sanskrit names had been so completely disguised and rendered almost unrecognisable in the Chinese translations of Sanskrit texts, and how they could be restored to their original form.

I had likewise the honour and pleasure of working with your late President, Professor H. H. Wilson, when, after reading Julien's works, he conceived the idea that some of the original Sanskrit texts of which the Chinese translations had been recovered might still be found in the monasteries of China. His influential position as President of your Society, and his personal relations with Sir John Bowring, then English Resident in China, enabled him to set in motion a powerful machinery for attaining his object; and if you look back some five-and-twenty years, you will find in your Journal a full account of the correspondence that passed between Professor Wilson, Sir J. Bowring, and Dr. Edkins, on the search after Sanskrit MSS. in the temples or monasteries of China.

On February 15, 1854, Professor Wilson writes from Oxford to Sir John Bowring:—

'I send you herewith a list of the Sanskrit works carried to China by Hwen Tsang in the middle of the seventh century, and in great part translated by him, or under his supervision, into Chinese. If any

of them, *especially the originals*, should be still in existence, you would do good service to Sanskrit literature and to the history of Buddhism by procuring copies.'

Chinese Translators of Sanskrit Texts.

It is a well-known fact that, even long before the time of Hiouen-thsang—that is, long before the seventh century of our era—large numbers of Sanskrit MSS. had been exported to China. These literary exportations began as early as the first century A.D. When we read for the first time of commissioners being sent to India by Ming-ti, the Emperor of China, the second sovereign of the Eastern Han dynasty, about 62 or 65 A.D., we are told that they returned to China with a white horse, carrying books and images.[1] And the account proceeds to state that 'these books still remain, and are reverenced and worshipped.'

From that time, when Buddhism was first officially recognised in China,[2] there is an almost unbroken succession of importers and translators of Buddhist, in some cases of Brahmanic texts also, till we come to the two famous expeditions, the one undertaken by Fa-hian in 400–415, the other by Hiouen-thsang, 629–645 A.D. Fa-hian's Travels were translated into French by Abel Rémusat (1836), into English by Mr. Beal (1869). Hiouen-thsang's Travels are well known through Stanislas Julien's admirable transla-

[1] Beal, *Travels of Buddhist Pilgrims*, Introd. p. xxi.; *Chinese Repository*, vol. x. No. 3, March, 1841.

[2] See an account of the Introduction of Buddhism into China, in *Journal Asiatique*, 1856, August, p. 105. *Recherches sur l'origine des ordres religieux dans l'empire chinois*, par Bazin.

tion. Of Hiouen-thsang we are told that he brought back from India no less than 520 fasciculi, or 657 separate works, which had to be carried by twenty-two horses.[1] He translated, or had translated, 740 works, forming 1,335 fasciculi.

I say nothing of earlier traces of Buddhism which are supposed to occur in Chinese books. Whatever they may amount to, we look in vain in them for evidence of any Chinese translations of Buddhist books before the time of the Emperor Ming-ti; and what concerns us at present is, not the existence or the spreading of Buddhism towards the north and east long before the beginning of the Christian era, but the existence of Buddhist books, so far as it can be proved at that time by the existence of Chinese translations the date of which can be fixed with sufficient certainty.

In the following remarks on the history of these translations I have had the great advantage of being able to use the Annals of the Sui Dynasty (589–618), kindly translated for me by Professor Legge. In China the history of each dynasty was written under the succeeding dynasty from documents which may be supposed to be contemporaneous with the events they relate. The account given in the Sui Chronicles of the introduction of Buddhism and Buddhist works into China is said to be the best general account to be found in early Chinese literature, and the facts here stated may be looked upon as far more trustworthy than the notices hitherto relied upon, and collected from Chinese writers of different dates and different localities. I have also had the assistance

[1] Stan. Julien, *Pèlerins Bouddhistes*, vol. i. p. 296

of Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, who compared the names of the translators mentioned in the Sui Annals with the names as given in the K'ai-yuen-shih-kiao-mu-lu (Catalogue of the Buddhist books compiled in the period K'ai-yuen [A.D. 713–741]); and though there still remain some doubtful points, we may rest assured that the dates assigned to the principal Chinese translators and their works can be depended on as historically trustworthy.

With regard to the period anterior to Ming-ti, the Sui Chronicles tell us that, after an investigation of the records, it was known that Buddhism had not been brought to China previously to the Han dynasty (began 206 B.C.), though some say that it had long been spread abroad, but had disappeared again in the time of the *Khin*[1] (221–206 B.C.). Afterwards, however, when *Kang-khien* was sent on a mission to the regions of the West (about 130 B.C.), he is supposed to have become acquainted with the religion of Buddha. He was made prisoner by the Hiung-nu (Huns),[2] and, being kept by them for ten years, he may well have acquired during his captivity some knowledge of Buddhism, which at a very early time had spread from Cabul[3] towards the north and the east.

In the time of the Emperor Âi (B.C. 6–2) we read

[1] Dr. Edkins in his Notices of Buddhism in China (which unfortunately are not paged) says that Indians arrived at the capital of China in Shensi in 217 B.C. to propagate their religion.

[2] Dr. Edkins, *l.c.*, states that *Kang-khien*, on his return from the country of the Getæ, informed the Emperor Wu-ti that he had seen articles of traffic from Shindo. The commentator adds that the name is pronounced Kando and Tindo, and that it is the country of the barbarians called Buddha (*sic*).

[3] Kabul or Ko-fu is, in the Eastern Han annals, called a state of the Yüeh-*ki*.

that *Khin-king* caused I-tsun to teach the Buddhist Sûtras orally, but that the people gave no credence to them. All this seems to rest on semi-historical evidence only.

The first official recognition of Buddhism in China dates from the reign of the Emperor Ming-ti, and the following account, though not altogether free from a legendary colouring, is generally accepted as authentic by Chinese scholars:—'The Emperor Ming-ti, of the After Han dynasty (58–75 A.D.), dreamt that a man of metal (or golden colour) was flying and walking in a courtyard of the palace. When he told his dream in the Court, Fu-î said that the figure was that of Buddha. On this the Emperor sent the gentleman-usher Tsâi-yin and *Khin-king* (who must then have been growing old) both to the country of the great Yueh-*ki*[1] and to India, in order to seek for such an image.'

An earlier account of the same event is to be found in the Annals of the After (or Eastern) Han dynasty (25–120 A.D.). These annals were compiled by Fan-yeh, who was afterwards condemned to death as a rebel (445 A.D.). Here we read[2] (vol. 88, fol. 8 a *seq.*):—'There is a tradition that the Emperor Ming-ti (58–75 A.D.) dreamt that there was a giant-like man of golden colour,[3] whose head was refulgent. The Emperor wanted his retainers to interpret it. Then some said, "There is a god (or spirit) in the

[1] Generally identified with the Getæ, but without sufficient proof.

[2] Translated by Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio.

[3] The golden colour or *suvarṇavarṇatâ* is one of the thirty two marks of a Buddha, recognised both in the Southern and Northern schools (Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 579).

West who is called Fo, whose height is sixteen feet, and of golden colour." Having heard this, the Emperor at once sent messengers to Tien-*k*u (*i.e.* India), to inquire after the doctrine of Buddha. Subsequently, copies of the image of Buddha were drawn in the middle country (*i.e.* China).'

The emissaries whom the Emperor Ming-ti had sent to India obtained a Buddhist Sûtra in forty-two sections, and an image of Buddha, with which and the Shâmans K*â*syapa Mâtaṅga and *K*û-fa-lan, they returned to the East. When Tsâi-yin approached (the capital), he caused the book to be borne on a white horse, and on this account the monastery of the White Horse was built on the west of the Yung gate of the city of Lo to lodge it. The classic was tied up and placed in the stone house of the Lan tower, and, moreover, pictures of the image were drawn and kept in the *K*hing-yüan tower, and at the top of the Hsien-*k*ieh hill.

Here we seem to be on *terra firma*, for some of the literary works by K*â*syapa Mâtaṅga, and *K*û-fa-lan, are still in existence. K*â*syapa Mâtaṅga (or, it may be, K*â*sya Mâtaṅga[1]) is clearly a Sanskrit name. Mâtaṅga, though the name of a *K*andâla or

[1] This name is written in various ways, Ka-shio-ma-tô-giya, Ka-shio-ma-tô, Shio-ma-tô, Ka-tô, Ma-tô. In the Fan-i-ming-i-tsi (vol. iii. fol. 4 a), it is said 'that K. was a native of Central India, and a Brâhman by caste. Having been invited by the Chinese envoy, Tsâi-yin, he came to China, saw the Emperor, and died in Lo-yang, the capital.' Of *K*û-fa-lan it is said (*l.c.* vol. iii. fol. 4) that he was a native of Central India, well versed in Vinaya. When invited to go to China, the King would not let him depart. He left secretly, and arrived in China after K*â*syapa. They translated the Sûtra in forty-two sections together. After K*â*syapa died, *K*û-fa-lan translated five Sûtras.

low-caste man, might well be borne by a Buddhist priest.[1] The name of *Kû*-fa-lan, however, is more difficult. Chinese scholars declare that it can only be a Chinese name,[2] yet if *Kû*-fa-lan came from India with *Kâsyapa*, we should expect that he too bore a Sanskrit name. In that case, *Kû* might be taken as the last character of Tien-*kû*, India, which character is prefixed to the names of other Indian priests living in China. His name would be Fâ-lan, *i.e.* Dharma + x, whatever lan may signify, perhaps padma, lotus.[3] M. Feer[4] calls him Gobhara*na*, without, however, giving his authority for such a name. The Sutra of the forty-two sections exists in Chinese, but neither in Sanskrit nor in Pâli, and many difficulties would be removed if we admitted, with M. Feer, that this so-called Sûtra of the forty-two sections was really the work of Kâsyapa and *Kû*-fa-lan, who considered such an epitome of Buddhist doctrines, based chiefly on original texts, useful for their new converts in China.

It is curious that the Sui Annals speak here of no other literary work due to Kâsyapa and *Kû*-fa-lan, though they afterwards mention the Shih-*kû* Sûtra by *Kû*-fa-lan as a work almost unintelligible. In the Fan-i-ming-i-tsi (vol. iii. fol. 4 b), mention is made of five Sûtras, translated by *Kû*-fa-lan alone, after Kâsyapa's death. In the K'ai-yuen-shih-kiao-mu-lu

[1] See Vasala-sutta (in Nipâta-sutta), *v.* 22.

[2] Fa is the Buddhist equivalent for friar.

[3] Mr. B. Nanjio informs me that both in China and Japan Buddhist priests adopt either *Kû*, the last character of Tien-*kû*, India, or Shih, the first character of Shih-kia—*i.e.* Sâkya—as their surname.

[4] L. Feer, *Sutra en 42 articles*, p. xxvii. *Le Dhammapada par F. Hû, suivi du Sutra en 42 articles*, par Léon Feer, 1878, p. xxiv.

catalogue of the Buddhist books, compiled in the period K'ai-yuen (713–741, A. D.), vol. i. fol. 6, four Sûtras only are ascribed to *K*û-fa-lan :—

1. The Da*s*abhûmi, called the Sûtra on the destruction of the causes of perplexity in the ten stations; 70 A.D. This is the Shi-*k*û Sûtra.

2. The Sûtra of the treasure of the sea of the law (Dharma-samudra-kosha?).

3. The Sûtra of the original conduct of Buddha (Fo-pen-hing-king); 68 A.D. (taken by Julien for a translation of the Lalita-vistara).

4. The Sûtra of the original birth of Buddha (*G*âtaka).

The compiler of the catalogue adds that these translations have long been lost.

The next patron of Buddhism was Ying, the King of *Kh*û, at the time of the Emperor *K*ang, his father (76–88). Many Shâmans, it is said, came to China then from the Western regions, bringing Buddhist Sûtras. Some of these translations, however, proved unintelligible.

During the reign of the Emperor Hwan (147–167), An-shi-kao (usually called An-shing), a Shâman of An-hsi,[1] brought classical books to Lo, and translated them. This is evidently the same translator of whom Mr. Beal ('J.R.A.S.' 1856, pp. 327, 332) speaks as a native of Eastern Persia or Parthia, and whose name Mr. Wylie wished to identify with Arsak. As An-shi-kao is reported to have been a royal prince, who made himself a mendicant and travelled as far as China, Mr. Wylie supposes that he was the son of one

[1] In Beal's *Catalogue* this name is spelt An-shi-ko, An-shi-kao, and Ngan-shai-ko.

of the Arsacidæ, Kings of Persia. Mr. Beal, on the contrary, takes the name to be a corruption of Asvaka or Assaka—*i.e.* Ἱππάσιοι.[1]

Under the Emperor Ling, 168–189 A.D., *Ki-khan* (or *Ki*-tsin), a Shâman from the Yueh-*ki* (called *Ki*-lau-kia-*kuai* by Beal), *Kû*-fo-soh (Ta-fo-sa), an Indian Shâman, and others, worked together to produce a translation of the Nirvâna-sûtra, in two sections. The K'ai-yuen-lu ascribes twenty-three works to *Ki-khan*, and two Sûtras to *Kû*-fo-soh.

Towards the end of the Han dynasty, *Ku*-yung, the grand guardian, was a follower of Buddha.

In the time of the Three Kingdoms (220–264) Khang-sang-hui, a Shâman of the Western regions, came to Wû[2] with Sûtras and translated them. Sun-*khüan*, the sovereign, believed in Buddhism. About the same time Khang-sang-khai translated the longer text of the Sukhavatîvyûha.

In Wei,[3] during the period Hwang-*khu* (220–226) the Chinese first observed the Buddhist precepts, shaved their heads, and became Sang—*i.e.* monks.

Even before this, a Shâman of the Western regions had come here and translated the Hsiâo-pin Sûtra—*i.e.* the Sûtra of Smaller Matters (Khuddaka-nikâya?)—but the head and tail of it were contradictory, so that it could not be understood.

[1] His translations occur in Beal's *Catalogue*, pp. 31, 35, 37, 38, 40 (*bis*), 41 (*bis*), 42 (*bis*), 43, 45, 46, 47, 49, 50, 51 (*ter*), 52 (*bis*), 54, 70, 88, 95 (*bis*). In the K'ai-yuen-lu it is stated that he translated 99 works in 115 fascicles.

[2] Wû, comprising *K*eh-kiang and other parts, with its capital in what is now Sû-*k*au, was the southern one of the Three Kingdoms. Sun-*khüan* was its first sovereign.

[3] The northern of the Three Kingdoms, with its capital latterly in Lo-yang.

In the period Kan-lû (256–259), *K*û-shi-hsing (Chu-shuh-lan, in Beal's *Catalogue*) went to the West as far as Khoten, and obtained a Sûtra in ninety sections, with which he came back to Yéh, in the Tsin period of Yüen-khang (291–299), and translated it (with Dharmaraksha) under the title of 'Light-emitting Pra*gn*â-pâramitâ Sûtra.'[1]

In the period Thai-shi (265–274), under the Western Tsin (265–316), Kû-fâ-hu[2] (Dharmaraksha), a Shâman of the Yüeh-*k*i, travelled through the various kingdoms of the West, and brought a large collection of books home to Lo, where he translated them. It is stated in the Catalogue of the Great *K*au, an interlude in the dynasty of Thang (690–705 A.D), that in the seventh year of the period Thai-khang (286) he translated *K*ing-fa-hwa—*i.e.* the Saddharma-pu*nd*arîka (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 14).[3]

About 300 A.D. *K*i-kung-ming translated the Wei-ma (Vimala-kîrtti) and Fa-hwa (Saddharma-pu*nd*arîka).[4]

In 335 the prince of the *Kh*au kingdom (during the Tsin dynasty) permitted his subjects to become Shâmans, influenced chiefly by Buddhasi*m*ha.[5]

[1] See Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 5.

[2] This name, *K*û-fâ-hu, is generally re-translated as Dharmaraksha. *K*û is the second character in Tien-*k*û, the name of India, and this character was used as their surname by many Indian priests while living in China. In that case their Sanskrit names were mostly translated into two Chinese characters: as Fû (law = dharma), hu (protection = raksha).—B.N.

[3] According to Mr. Beal (Fahian, p. xxiii), this *K*û-fâ-hu, with the help of other Shâmans, translated no less than 165 texts, and among them the Lalita-vistara (Pou-yao-king), the Nirvâ*n*a Sûtra, and the Suvar*n*a-prabhâsa-Sûtra (265–308). The K'ai-yuen-lu assigns to him 275 works, in 354 fascicles.

[4] Edkins, *l.c.* Beal, *Catalogue*, p 17; 14.

[5] Edkins, *l.c.*

In the time of the rebel Shih-leh, 330–333, during the Tsin dynasty, a Shâman Wei-tao-an, or Tao-an, of *Kha*ng-shan, studied Buddhist literature under Buddhasi*m*ha. He produced a more correct translation of the Vimala-kîrtti-sûtra (and Sad-dharma-pu*nd*arîka), and taught it widely; but as he was not an original translator, his name is not mentioned in the K'ai-yuen-lu. On account of political troubles, Tâo-an led his disciples southward, to Hsin-ye, and despatched them to different quarters—Fâ-shang to Yang-*k*âu, Fâ-hwa to Shû—while he himself, with Wei-yüan, went to Hsiang-yang and *Kh*ang-an. Here Fu-*kh*ien, the sovereign of the Fûs, who about 350 had got possession of *Kh*ang-an, resisting the authority of the Tsin, and establishing the dynasty of the Former *Kh*in, received him with distinction. It was at the wish of Tâo-an that Fu-*kh*ien invited Kumâra*g*îva to *Kh*ang-an; but when, after a long delay, Kumâra*g*îva arrived there, in the second year of the period Hung-shi (400 A.D.), under Yâo-hsing, who, in 394, had succeeded Yâo-*kh*ang,[1] the founder of the After *Kh*in dynasty, Tâo-an had been dead already twenty years. His corrected translations, however, were approved by Kumâra*g*îva.

This Kumâra*g*îva marks a new period of great activity in the translation of Buddhist texts. He is said to have come from Ku-tsi, in Tibet, where the Emperor Yâo-hsing (397–415) sent for him. Among his translations are mentioned the Wei-ma or Vimala-kîrtti-sûtra (Beal's 'Catalogue,' p. 17); the Sad-dharma-pu*nd*arîka (Beal's 'Catalogue,' p. 15); the

[1] The Yâos subdued the Fûs, and ruled as the dynasty of the After *Kh*in.

Satyasiddha-vyâkara*ṇa* *s*âstra (Beal's 'Catalogue,' p. 80). He was a contemporary of the great traveller, Fâ-hian, who went from *Kh*ang-an to India, travelled through more than thirty states, and came back to Nanking in 414, to find the Emperor Yâo-hsing overturned by the Eastern Tsin dynasty. He was accompanied by the Indian contemplationist, Buddhabhadra.[1] Buddhabhadra translated the Fa-yan-king, the Buddhâvata*ṃ*saka-vaipulya-sûtra (Beal's 'Catalogue,' p. 9), and he and Fa-hian together, the Mo-ho-sang-*ki*-liu—*i.e.* the Vinaya of the Mahâsaṅghika school (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 68).

Another Shâman who travelled to India about the same time was *K*i-mang, of Hsin-fang, a district city of Kâo-*kh*ang. In 419, in the period Yüan-hsi, he went as far as Pâ*ṭ*ali-putra, where he obtained the Nirva*ṇa*-sûtra, and the Saṅghika, a book of discipline.[2] After his return to Kâo-*kh*ang he translated the Nirvâ*ṇa*-sûtra in twenty sections.

Afterwards the Indian Shâman Dharmaraksha II.[3]

[1] See p. 341. He is sometimes called Balasan, or, according to Edkins, Palat'sanga, Baddala, or Dabadara. In the Fan-i-ming-i-tsi (vol. iii. fol. 6) the following account of Buddhabhadra is given:—'Buddhabhadra met Kumâra*g*îva in China, and whenever the latter found any doubts, the former was always asked for an explanation. In the fourteenth year of Î-hsi (418 A.D.) Buddhabhadra translated the Fa-yan-king in sixty volumes.' This Sûtra is the Ta-fang-kwang-fo-fa-yan-king, Buddhâvata*ṃ*saka-vaipulya-sûtra (Beal's *Catalogue*, p. 9). This translation was brought to Japan in 736.

[2] The Sang-*ki*-liu, rules of priesthood—*i.e.* the Vinaya of the Mahâsaṅghika school.

[3] I call him Dharmaraksha II., in order to prevent a confusion which has been produced by identifying two Shâmans who lived at a distance of nearly 200 years—the one 250 A.D., the other 420 A.D. The first is called *K*û-fâ-hu, which can be rendered Dharmaraksha; the second is called Fâ-fâng (law-prosperity), but, if transliterated, he is best known by the names T'on-mo-la-tsin, T'an-mo-tsin, or

brought other copies of the foreign MSS. to the West of the Ho. And Tsü-*khü* Mung-sun, the king of North Liang, sent messengers to Kâo-*kh*ang for the copy which *K*i-mang had brought, wishing to compare the two.[1]

When *K*i-mang's copy arrived,[2] a translation was made of it in thirty sections. Dharmaraksha II. translated the Suvar*n*a-prabhâsa and the Nirvâ*n*a-sûtra, 416–423 A.D. The K'ai-yuen-lu ascribes nineteen works to Dharmalatsin in 131 fascicles.

Buddhism from that time spread very rapidly in China, and the translations became too numerous to be all mentioned.

The Mahâyâna school was represented at that time chiefly by the following translations:—

The Vimalakîrtti-sûtra (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 17) The Saddharmapu*nd*arîka-sûtra (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 15) The Satyasiddhavyâkara*n*a-sâstra (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 80)	Translated by Kumâra*g*îva.
The Suvar*n*aprabhâsa-sûtra (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 15) The Nirvâ*n*a-sûtra (Beal, 'Catalogue,' p. 12)	Translated by Dharmalatsin, or Dharmaraksha II.

Dharmalatsin. He was a native of Central India, and arrived in China in the first year of the period Hiouen-shi of the Tsü-*khü* family of the Northern Liang, 414 A.D. He was the contemporary of *K*i-mang, whom Mr. Beal places about 250 A.D., in order to make him a contemporary of Dharmaraksha I.

[1] Mung-sun died 432, and was succeeded by his heir, who lost his kingdom in 439. Yao-*kh*ang's kingdom, however, was destroyed by the Eastern Tsin, at the time of his second successor, 417, not by Mung-sun.

[2] It is said in the tenth year of the period Hung-shi of Yâo-

The Hînayâna school was represented by—

The Sarvâstivâda-vinaya by Kumâragîva (Beal, 'Catalogue,' pp. 67, 68).

The Dîrghâgama-sûtra, by Buddhayasas, 410 A.D. (Beal, Catalogue,' p. 36).

The Vinaya of the four Parts, by Buddhayasas.[1]

The Ekottarâgama-sûtra (Aṅguttara), translated by Dharmanandin, of Tukhâra (Fa-hsi).

The Abhidharma disquisitions, by Dharmayasas,[2] of Kophene.

During the period of Lung-an (397–401) the Ekottarâgama (Aṅguttara) and Madhyamâgama-sûtras[3] were translated by Saṅghadeva of Kophene. This is probably the Magghima Nikâya, translated by Gotama Saṅghadeva, under the Eastern Tsin dynasty, 317–419.

In the period Î-hsi (405–418) the Shâman Ki-fâ-ling brought from Khoten to Nanking, the southern capital, the Hwâ-yen Sûtra in 36,000 gâthâs, and translated it. This may be the Buddhâvatamsaka-sûtra, called the Ta-fang-kwang-fo-fa-yan-king (Beal's 'Catalogue,' pp. 9, 10). This translator is not mentioned in the K'ai-yuen-lu.

In 420 the Tsin dynasty came to an end.

The Emperor Thai-wu (424–452), of the N. Wei dynasty, persecuted the Buddhists, 446; but from the year 452 they were tolerated. This dynasty lasted from 386 to 535, when it was divided into two.

*kh*ang (better hsing), the copy arrived at *Kh*ang-an. But this cannot be, if *K*i-mang went to India in 419. There must be something wrong in these dates.

[1] The four Nikâyas or Âgamas; *cf.* Vinayapitaka, vol. i. p. xl.

[2] Sâriputrâbhidharma-sâstra; *cf.* Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 80.

[3] Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 36.

In 458 there was a conspiracy under Buddhist influences, and more stringent laws were enforced against them.

In 460 five Buddhists arrived in China from Ceylon, *viâ* Tibet. Two of them, Yashaita, and Vudanandi, brought images.[1] In 502 a Hindu translated Mahâyâna books, called Fixed Positions and Ten Positions.[2]

During the dynasties of *Khî* (479–502), Liang (502–557), and *Khin* (557–589), many famous Shâmans came to China, and translated books.

The Emperor Wû of Liang (502–549) paid great honour to Buddhism. He made a large collection of the Buddhist canonical books, amounting to 5,400 volumes, in the Hwâ-lin garden. The Shâman Pao-*khang* compiled the catalogue in fifty-four fascicles.

In the period Yung-ping, 508–511, there was an Indian Shâman Bodhiru*ki*, who translated many books, as Kumâra*gîva* had done. Among them were the Earth-holding *sâstra* (bhûmîdhara *sâstra*?) and the Shi-ti-king-lun, the Da*sa*bhûmika *sâstra*, greatly valued by the followers of the Mahâyâna.[3]

In 516, during the period Hsî-phing, the Chinese Shâman Wei-shang was sent to the West to collect Sûtras and Vinayas, and brought back a collection of 170 books. He is not, however, mentioned as a translator in the K'ai-yuen-lu.

In 518 Sung-yun, sent by the queen of the Wei country from Lo-yang to India, returned after three years, with 175 volumes. He lived to see Bodhidharma

[1] Edkins, *l.c.* [2] *Ibid.*

[3] Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 77; on p. 20 a translation of the Lankâvatâra is mentioned.

in his coffin. This Bodhidharma, the twenty-eighth patriarch, had arrived in Canton by sea in 528, in the time of Wu-ti, the first Emperor of the Liang dynasty. Some Sanskrit MSS. that had belonged to him, and other relics, are still preserved in Japan.[1]

In the time of the Emperor Wû, of the Northern *K*âu dynasty (561–577), a Shâman, Wei-yüan-sung, accused the Buddhist priests, and the Emperor persecuted them. But in the first year of Kao-tsu, the founder of the Sui dynasty, in 589, toleration was again proclaimed. He ordered the people to pay a certain sum of money, according to the number of the members of each family, for the purpose of preparing Sûtras (the Buddhist canon) and images. And the Government caused copies of the whole Buddhist canon to be made, and placed them in certain temples or monasteries in the capital, and in several other large cities, in such provinces as Ping-*k*âu, Hsiang-*k*âu, Lo-*k*âu, etc. And the Government caused also another copy to be made and to be deposited in the Imperial Library. The Buddhist sacred books among the people were found to be several hundred times more numerous than those on the six Kings of Confucius. There were 1,950 distinct Buddhist books translated.

In the period Tâ-yeh (605–616) the Emperor ordered the Shâman *K*i-kwo to compose a catalogue of the Buddhist books at the Imperial Buddhist chapel within the gate of the palace. He then made some divisions and classifications, which were as follows :—

[1] See *Athenæum*, August 7, 1880; and *infra*, p. 370.

The Sûtras which contained what Buddha had spoken were arranged under three divisions :—

1. The Mahâyâna.
2. The Hînayâna.
3. The Mixed Sûtras.

Other books, that seemed to be the productions of later men, who falsely ascribed their works to greater names, were classed as Doubtful Books.

There were other works in which Bodhisattvas and others went deeply into the explanation of the meaning, and illustrated the principles of Buddha. These were called Disquisitions, or Sâstras. Then there were Vinaya, or compilations of precepts, under each division, as before, Mahâyâna, Hînayâna, Mixed. There were also Records, or accounts of the doings in their times of those who had been students of the system. Altogether there were eleven classes under which the books were arranged :—

1. Sûtra.	Mahâyâna .	617	in	2,076	chapters.
	Hînayâna . .	487	„	852	„
	Mixed . .	380	„	716	„
	Mixed and doubtful	172	„	336	„
2. Vinaya.	Mahâyâna . .	52	„	91	„
	Hînayâna . .	80	„	472	„
	Mixed . .	27	„	46	„
3. Sâstra.	Mahâyâna .	35	„	141	„
	Hînayâna .	41	„	567	„
	Mixed . .	51	„	437	„
	Records . .	20	„	464	„
		1,962		6,198	

Search for Sanskrit MSS. in China.

It was the publication of Hiouen-thsang's Travels which roused the hopes of Professor Wilson that some of the old Sanskrit MSS. which had been carried away from India might still be discovered in China.[1]

But though no pains were spared by Sir John Bowring to carry out Professor Wilson's wishes, though he had catalogues sent to him from Buddhist libraries, and from cities where Buddhist compositions might be expected to exist, the results were disappointing, at least so far as Sanskrit texts were concerned. A number of interesting Chinese books, translated from Sanskrit by Hiouen-thsang and others, works also by native Chinese Buddhists, were sent to the library of the East India House; but what Professor Wilson and all Sanskrit scholars with him most desired, Sanskrit MSS., or copies of Sanskrit MSS., were not forthcoming. Professor Wilson showed me, indeed, one copy of a Sanskrit MS. that was sent to him from China, and, so far as I remember, it was the Kâla-*K*akra,[2] which we know as one of the books translated from Sanskrit into Chinese. That MS., however, is no longer to be found in the India Office Library, though it certainly existed in the old East India House.

[1] A long list of Sanskrit texts translated into Chinese may be found in the *Journal Asiatique*, 1849, p. 353 *seq.*, *s.t.* 'Concordance Sinico-Samskrite d'un nombre considérable de titres d'ouvrages Bouddhiques, recueillie dans un Catalogue Chinois de l'an 1306, par M. Stanislas Julien.'

[2] Csoma Körösi, *As. Res.* vol. xx. p. 418. *Journal Asiatique*, 1849, p. 356.

The disappointment at the failure of Professor Wilson's and Sir J. Bowring's united efforts was felt all the more keenly because neither Sanskrit nor Chinese scholars could surrender the conviction that, until a very short time ago, Indian MSS. had existed in China. They had been seen by Europeans, such as Dr. Gutzlaff, the hard-working missionary in China, who in a paper, written shortly before his death, and addressed to Colonel Sykes ('Journal R.A.S.' 1856, p. 73), stated that he himself had seen Pâli MSS. preserved by Buddhist priests in China. Whether these MSS. were in Pâli or Sanskrit would matter little, supposing even that Dr. Gutzlaff could not distinguish between the two. He speaks with great contempt of the whole Buddhist literature. There was not a single priest, he says, capable of explaining the meaning of the Pâli texts, though some were interlined with Chinese. 'A few works,' he writes, 'are found in a character originally used for writing the Pâli; and may be considered as faithful transcripts of the earliest writings of Buddhism. They are looked upon as very sacred, full of mysteries, and deep significations; and therefore as the most precious relics of the founder of their creed. With the letters of this alphabet the priests perform incantations[1] to expel demons, rescue souls from hell, bring down rain on the earth, remove calamities, etc. They turn and twist them in every shape, and maintain that the very demons tremble at the recitation of them.'

Another clear proof of the existence of Sanskrit MSS. in China is found in the account of a 'Trip to

[1] *Cf.* Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 66.

Ning-po and T'hëen-t'hae,' by Dr. Edkins. After he had arrived at Fang-kwang, he ascended the Hwa-ling hill, and at the top of the hill he describes a small temple with a priest residing in it. 'Scattered over the hill,' he adds, 'there are various little temples where priests reside, but the one at the top is the most celebrated, as being the place where Che-k'hae spent a portion of his time, worshipping a Sanskrit manuscript of a Buddhist classic.' On his return he arrived at the pagoda erected to the memory of Che-k'hae, the founder of the Thëen-t'hae system of Buddhism, in the Chin dynasty (about 580 A.D.). And a little further on, situated in a deep dell on the left, was the monastery of Kaon-ming-sze. This is particularly celebrated for its possession of a Sanskrit MS., written on the palm leaf, once read and explained by Che-k'hae, but now unintelligible to any of the followers of Buddhism in these parts. The priests seemed to pay uncommon reverence to this MS., which is the only one of the kind to be found in the East of China, and thus of great importance in a literary point of view. It is more than 1300 years old, but is in a state of perfect preservation, in consequence of the palm leaves, which are written on both sides, having been carefully let into slips of wood, which are fitted on the same central pin, and the whole, amounting to fifty leaves, enclosed in a rosewood box.

This may account for the unwillingness of the priests to part with their old MSS., whether Sanskrit or Pâli, but it proves at the same time that they still exist, and naturally keeps up the hope that some day or other we may still get a sight of them.

Materials on which Sanskrit MSS. were written.

Of course, it might be said that if MSS. did not last very long in India, neither would they do so in China. But even then, we might expect at least that as in India the old MSS. were copied whenever they showed signs of decay, so they would have been in China. Besides, the climate of China is not so destructive as the heat and moisture of the climate of India. In India, MSS. seldom last over a thousand years. Long before that time paper made of vegetable substances decays, palm leaves and birch bark become brittle, and white ants often destroy what might have escaped the ravages of the climate. It was the duty, therefore, of Indian Rajahs to keep a staff of librarians, who had to copy the old MSS. whenever they began to seem unsafe, a fact which accounts both for the modern date of most of our Sanskrit MSS. and for the large number of copies of the same text often met with in the same library.

The MSS. carried off to China were in all likelihood not written on paper, or whatever we like to call the material which Nearchus describes 'as cotton well beaten together,'[1] but on the bark of the birch tree or on palm leaves. The bark of trees is mentioned as a writing material used in India by Curtius ;[2] and in Buddhist Sûtras, such as the Kara*nd*avyûha (p. 69), we actually read of bhûrga, birch, mâsi, ink, and karama (kalam), as the common requisites for writing. MSS. written on that material have long been known in Europe, chiefly as curiosities (I had to write many years ago about one of them, preserved

[1] The modern paper in Nepal is said to date from 500 years ago (Hodgson, *Essays*).

[2] M.M., *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, p. 516.

in the Library at All Souls' College). Of late,[1] however, they have attracted more serious attention, particularly since Dr. Bühler discovered in Kashmir old MSS. containing independent recensions of Vedic texts, written on birch bark. One of these, containing the whole text of the Rig-Veda Saṁhitâ[2] with accents, was sent to me, and though it had suffered a good deal, particularly on the margins, it shows that there was no difficulty in producing from the bark of the birch tree thousands and thousands of pages of the largest quarto or even folio size, perfectly smooth and pure, except for the small dark lines peculiar to the bark of that tree.[3]

At the time of Hiouen-thsang, in the seventh

[1] Burnell, *South Indian Palæography*, 2nd ed. p. 84 *seq.*

[2] See *Sacred Books of the East*, vol. i., Upanishads, Introduction, p. lxxviii.

[3] Dr. Bühler (*Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society, Bombay*, 1877, p. 29) has the following interesting remarks:—'The Bhûrga MSS. are written on specially-prepared thin sheets of the inner bark of the Himalayan birch (*Bætula Bhojpatr*, Wallich), and invariably in Śâradâ characters. The lines run always parallel to the narrow side of the leaf, and the MSS. present, therefore, the appearance of European books, not of Indian MSS., which owe their form to an imitation of the Tâlapatras. The Himâlaya seems to contain an inexhaustible supply of birch bark, which in Kaśmîr and other hill countries is used both instead of paper by the shopkeepers in the bazaars, and for lining the roofs of houses in order to make them watertight. It is also exported to India, where in many places it is likewise used for wrapping up parcels, and plays an important part in the manufacture of the flexible pipe-stems used by hukâ smokers. To give an idea of the quantities which are brought into Śrînagar, I may mention that on one single day I counted fourteen large barges with birch bark on the river. . . . The use of birch bark for literary purposes is attested by the earliest classical Sanskrit writers. Kâlidâsa mentions it in his dramas and epics; Sustuta, Varâhamihira (*circa* 500–550 A.D.) know it likewise. As is the case with nearly all old customs, the use of birch bark for writing still survives in India, though the fact is little known. Mantras, which are worn as

century, palm leaves seem to have been the chief material for writing. He mentions a forest of palm trees (*Borassus flabelliformis*) near Konkaṇapura (the Western coast of the Dekhan),[1] which was much prized on account of its supplying material for writing (vol. i. p. 202, and vol. iii. p. 148). At a later time, too, in 965, we read of Buddhist priests returning to China with Sanskrit copies of Buddhist books written on palm leaves (peito).[2] If we could believe Hiouen-thsang, the palm leaf would have been used even so early as the first Buddhist Council,[3] for he says that Kâśyapa then wrote the Piṭakas on palm leaves (tâla), and spread them over the whole of India. In the Pâli Gâtakas, paṇṇa is used in the sense of letter, but originally parṇa meant a wing, then a leaf of a tree, then a leaf for writing. Paṭṭa, also, which is used in the sense of a sheet, was originally pattra, a wing, a leaf of a tree. Suvaṇṇapaṭṭa, a golden leaf to write on, still shows that the original writing material had been the leaves of trees, most likely of

amulets, are written on pieces of Bhûrga with ashṭau gandhâḥ, a mixture of eight odoriferous substances—*e.g.* camphor, sandal, turmeric—which vary according to the deity to which the writing is dedicated. The custom prevails in Bengal as well as in Gujarât. Birch-bark MSS. occur in Orissa. The Petersburg Dictionary refers to a passage in the Kâṭhaka, the redaction of the Yajurveda formerly current in Kaśmîr, where the word Bhûrga occurs, though it is not clear if it is mentioned there too as material for writing on. The Kaśmirian Pandits assert, and apparently with good reason, that in Kaśmîr all books were written on bhûrgapattras from the earliest times until after the conquest of the Valley by Akbar, about 200–250 years ago. Akbar introduced the manufacture of paper, and thus created an industry for which Kaśmîr is now famous in India.'

[1] Dr. Burnell, *Indian Antiquary*, 1880, p. 234, shows that Koṅkaṇapura is Koṅkaṇahlli in the Mysore territory.

[2] Beal's *Travels of Buddhist Pilgrims*, Introd. p. xlvi.

[3] *Pèlerins Bouddhistes*, vol. i. p. 158.

palm-trees.[1] Potthaka, *i.e.* pustaka, book, likewise occurs in the Pâli *Gâtakas*.[2]

Such MSS., written on palm leaves, if preserved carefully and almost worshipped, as they seem to have been in China, might well have survived to the present day, and they would certainly prove of immense value to the students of Buddhism, if they could still be recovered, whether in the original or even in later copies.

It is true, no doubt, that, like all other religions, Buddhism too had its periods of trial and persecution in China. We know that during such periods—as, for instance, in 845, under the Emperor Wu-tsung—monasteries were destroyed, images broken, and books burnt. But these persecutions seem never to have lasted long, and when they were over, monasteries, temples and pagodas soon sprang up again, images were restored, and books collected in greater abundance than ever. Dr. Edkins tells us that 'in an account of the Ko-t'sing monastery in the History of T'ian-t'ai-shan it is said that a single work was saved from a fire there several centuries ago, which was written on the Pei-to (Pe-ta) or palm leaf of India.' He also states that great pagodas were built on purpose as safe repositories of Sanskrit MSS., one being erected by the Emperor for the preservation of the newly arrived Sanskrit books at the request of Hiouen-thsang, lest they should be injured for want of care. It was 180 feet high, had five stories with grains of She-li (relics) in the

[1] Fausböll, *Dasaratha-jâtaka*, p. 25.

[2] See also Albiruni, as quoted by Reinaud, *Mémoire sur l'Inde*, p. 305.

centre of each, and contained monuments inscribed with the prefaces written by the Emperor or Prince Royal to Hiouen-thsang's translations.

Search for Sanskrit MSS. in Japan.

Being myself convinced of the existence of old Indian MSS. in China, I lost no opportunity, during the last five-and-twenty years, of asking any friends of mine who went to China to look out for these treasures, but—with no result!

Some years ago, however, Dr. Edkins, who had taken an active part in the search instituted by Professor Wilson and Sir J. Bowring, showed me a book which he had brought from Japan, and which contained a Chinese vocabulary with Sanskrit equivalents and a transliteration in Japanese. The Sanskrit is written in that peculiar alphabet which we find in the old MSS. of Nepâl, and which in China has been further modified, so as to give it an almost Chinese appearance.

That MS. revived my hopes. If such a book was published in Japan, I concluded that there must have been a time when such a book was useful there—that is to say, when the Buddhists in Japan studied Sanskrit. Dr. Edkins kindly left the book with me, and though the Sanskrit portion was full of blunders, yet it enabled me to become accustomed to that peculiar alphabet in which the Sanskrit words are written.

While I was looking forward to more information from Japan, good luck would have it that a young Buddhist priest, Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, came to me from Japan, in order to learn Sanskrit and Pâli, and thus

to be able in time to read the sacred writings of the Buddhists in their original language, and to compare them with the Chinese and Japanese translations now current in his country. After a time, another Buddhist priest, Mr. Kasawara, came to me for the same purpose, and both are now working very hard at learning Sanskrit. Japan is supposed to contain 34,388,504 inhabitants, all of whom, with the exception of about 1 or 200,000 followers of the Shintô religion,[1] are Buddhists, divided into ten principal sects, the sect to which Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio belongs being that of the Shinshiu. One of the first questions which I asked Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, when he came to read Sanskrit with me, was about Sanskrit MSS. in Japan. I showed him the Chinese-Sanskrit-Japanese Vocabulary which Dr. Edkins had left with me, and he soon admitted that Sanskrit texts in the same alphabet might be found in Japan, or at all events in China. He wrote home to his friends, and after waiting for some time, he brought me in December last a book which a Japanese scholar, Shuntai Ishikawa, had sent to me, and which he wished me to correct, and then to send back to him to Japan. I did not see at once the importance of the book. But when I came to read the introductory formula, Evam mayâ śrutam, 'Thus by me it has been heard,' the typical beginning of the Buddhist Sûtras, my eyes were opened. Here, then, was what I had so long been looking forward to—a Sanskrit text, carried from India to China, from China to Japan, written in the peculiar Nepalese alphabet, with a Chinese translation, and a transliteration in Japanese.

[1] See Letter to the *Times*, 'On the Religions of Japan,' Oct. 20, 1880

Of course, it is a copy only, not an original MS.; but copies presuppose originals at some time or other, and, such as it is, it is a first instalment, which tells us that we ought not to despair, for where one of the long-sought-for literary treasures that were taken from India to China, and afterwards from China to Japan, has been discovered, others are sure to come to light.

We do not possess yet very authentic information on the ancient history of Japan, and on the introduction of Buddhism into that island. M. Léon de Rosny[1] and the Marquis D'Hervey de Saint-Denys[2] have given us some information on the subject, and I hope that Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio will soon give us a trustworthy account of the ancient history of his country, drawn from native authorities. What is told us about the conversion of Japan to Buddhism has a somewhat legendary aspect, and I shall only select a few of the more important facts, as they have been communicated to me by my Sanskrit pupil. Buddhism first reached Japan, not directly from China, but from Corea, which had been converted to Buddhism in the fourth century A.D. In the year 200 A.D., Corea had been conquered by the Japanese Empress Zingu, and the intercourse thus established between the two countries led to the importation of Buddhist doctrines from Corea to Japan. In the year 552 A.D. one of the Corean kings sent a bronze statue of Buddha and many sacred books to the Court of Japan, and, after various vicissitudes,

[1] 'Le Bouddhisme dans l'extrême Orient,' *Revue Scientifique*, Décembre, 1879.

[2] *Journal Asiatique*, 1871, p. 386 *seq.*

Buddhism became the established religion of the island about 600 A.D. Japanese students were sent to China to study Buddhism, and they brought back with them large numbers of Buddhist books, chiefly translations from Sanskrit. In the year 640 A.D. we hear of a translation of the Sukhavatîvyûha-mahâyâna-sûtra being read in Japan. This is the title of the Sanskrit text now sent to me from Japan. The translation had been made by Kô-sô-gai (in Chinese, Khang-sang-khai), a native of Tibet, though living in India, 252 A.D., and we are told that there had been eleven other translations of the same text.[1]

Among the teachers of these Japanese students we find our old friend Hiouen-thsang, whom the Japanese call Genziô. In the year 653 a Japanese priest, Dosho by name, studied under Genziô, adopted the views of the sect founded by him—the Hossô sect—and brought back with him to Japan a compilation of commentaries on the thirty verses of Vasubandhu, written by Dharmapâla, and translated by Genziô. Two other priests, Chitsû and Chitatsu, likewise became his pupils, and introduced the famous Abhidharma-kosha-sâstra into Japan, which had been composed by Vasubandhu, and translated by Genziô. They seem to have favoured the Hînayâna, or the views of the Small Vehicle (Kushashiu).

In the year 736 we hear of a translation of the Buddhâvata*m*saka-vaipulya-sûtra, by Buddhabhadra and others[2] (317–419 A.D.), being received in Japan,

[1] Five of these translations were introduced into Japan; the others seem to have been lost in China. The translations are spoken of as 'the five in existence and the seven missing.'

[2] See p. 325.

likewise of a translation of the Saddharmapuṇḍarîka by Kumâraǵîva.[1]

And, what is more important still, in the ninth century we are told that Kukai (died 835), the founder of the Shingon sect in Japan, was not only a good Chinese, but a good Sanskrit scholar also. Nay, one of his disciples, Shinnyo, in order to perfect his knowledge of Buddhist literature, undertook a journey, not only to China, but to India, but died before he reached that country.

These short notices, which I owe chiefly to Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, make it quite clear that we have every right to expect Sanskrit MSS., or, at all events, Sanskrit texts, in Japan, and the specimen which I have received encourages me to hope that some of these Sanskrit texts may be older than any which exist at present in any part of India.

The Sukhavatî-vyûha.

The text which was sent to me bears the title of Sukhâvatî-vyûha-mahâyâna-sûtra.[2]

This is a title well known to all students of Buddhist literature. Burnouf, in his 'Introduction à l'Histoire du Buddhisme' (pp. 99–102),[3] gave a short account of this Sûtra, which enables us to see that the scene of the dialogue was laid at Râǵagṛîha, and that the two speakers were Bhagavat and Ânanda.

We saw before, in the historical account of Buddhism in Japan, that no less than twelve Chinese translations of a work bearing the same title were

[1] See p. 319.

[2] The MSS. vary between Sukhavatî and Sukhâvatî.

[3] See also *Lotus de la bonne Loi*, p. 267.

SANSKRIT TEXT OF SUKHAVATÎVYÛHA, DISCOVERED IN JAPAN.

(MAX MÜLLER'S SELECTED ESSAYS, VOL. II.)

mentioned. The Chinese tell us at least of five translations which are still in existence.[1]

Those of the Han and Wu dynasties (25–280 A.D.), we are told, were too diffuse, and those of the later periods, the T'ang and Sung dynasties, too literal. The best is said to be that by Kô-sô-gai, a priest of Tibetan descent, which was made during the early Wei dynasty, about 252 A.D. This may be the same which was read in Japan in 640 A.D.

The same Sûtra exists also in a Tibetan translation, for there can be little doubt that the Sûtra quoted by Csoma Körösi ('As. Res.' vol. xx. p. 408) under the name of Amitâbha-vyûha is the same work. It occupies, as M. Léon Feer informs me, fifty-four leaves, places the scene of the dialogue at Râgagṛiha, on the mountain Gṛidhra-kûṭa, and introduces Bhagavat and Ânanda as the principal speakers.

There are Sanskrit MSS. of the Sukhavatî-vyûha in your own Library, in Paris, at Cambridge, and at Oxford.

The following is a list of the MSS. of the Sukhavatî-vyûha, hitherto known :—

1. MS. of the Royal Asiatic Society, London (Hodgson Collection), No. 20. Sukhavatîvyûha-mahâyânasûtra, sixty-five leaves. Dated Samvat 934 = A.D. 1814. It begins: Namo dasadiganantâparyantalokadhâtupratishṭitebhyaḥ, etc. Evaṃ mayâ śrutam ekasmiṃ samaye Bhagavân Râgagṛihe viharati sma. It ends: Sukhâvatîvyûha-mahâyânasûtraṃ samâptaṃ. Saṃvat 934, kârttikasudi 4, saṃpûrṇam abhût. Śrîsuvarṇapaṇârimahânagare Maitrîpûrima-

[1] *Journal of the R.A.S.*, 1856, p. 319.

hâvihâre Śrîvâkvagradâsa vagrâkâryasya Gayânandasya ka sarvârthasiddheh. (Nepalese alphabet.)

2. MS. of the Bibliothèque Nationale, Paris (Collection Burnouf), No. 85; sixty-four leaves. It begins, after a preamble of five lines, Evam mayâ śrutammekasmi samaya Bhagavân Râgagrihe viharati sma Gridhrakute parvvate mahatâ Bhikshusanghena sârddham. Dvâtrimśratâ Bhikshusahasraih. It ends: Bhagavato mitâbhasya gunaparikîrttanam Bodhisattvâmavaivartyabhûmipravesah. Amitâbhavyuhaparivarttah. Sukhâvatîvyûhah sampurnah. Iti Śrî Amitâbhasya Sukhâvatîvyuha nâma mahâyânasûtram samâptam.[1] (Devanâgarî alphabet.)

3. MS. of the Société Asiatique at Paris (Collection Hodgson), No. 17; eighty-two leaves. (Nepalese alphabet.)[2]

4. MS. of the University Library at Cambridge, No. 1368; thirty-five leaves. It begins with some lines of prose and verse in praise of Amitâbha and Sukhavatî, and then proceeds: Evam mayâ śrutam ekasmim samaye Bhagavân Râgagrihe nagare viharati sma, Gridhrakûtaparvate mahatâ Bhikshusanghena sârddha, etc. It ends: iti śrîmad amitâbhasya tathâgatasya Sukhâvatîvyûha-mahâyânasûtram samâptam. (Nepalese alphabet, modern.)

5. MS. given by Mr. Hodgson to the Bodleian Library, Oxford (Hodgson 3). It begins with: Om namo ratnatrayâya. Om namah sarvabuddhabodhisattvebhyah, etc. Then Evam mayâ śrutam, etc. It

[1] I owe this information to the kindness of M. Léon Feer at Paris.

[2] See *Journal Asiatique*, 3rd series, vol. iii. p. 316; vol. iv. p. 296–8.

ends with sukhâvatîvyûhamahâyânasutram samâptam. (Nepalese alphabet, modern.)

But when I came to compare these Sanskrit MSS. with the text sent to me from Japan, though the title was the same, I soon perceived that their contents were different. While the text, as given in the ordinary Devanâgari or Nepalese MSS., fills about fifty to sixty leaves, the text of the Sûtra that reached me from Japan would hardly occupy more than eight or ten leaves.

I soon convinced myself that this MS. was not a text abbreviated in Japan, for this shorter text, sent to me from Japan, corresponds in every respect with the Chinese Sûtra translated by Mr. Beal in his 'Catena,' pp. 378–383, and published in your Journal, 1866, p. 136. No doubt the Chinese translation, on which Mr. Beal's translation is based, is not only free, but displays the misapprehensions peculiar to many Chinese renderings of Sanskrit texts, due to a deficient knowledge either of Sanskrit or of Chinese on the part of the translators, perhaps also to the different genius of those two languages.

Yet, such as it is, there can be no doubt that it was meant to be a translation of the text now in my possession. Mr. Beal tells us that the translation he followed is that by Kumâragîva, the contemporary of Fa-hian (400 A.D.), and that this translator omitted repetitions and superfluities in the text.[1] Mr. Edkins knows a translation, *s.t.* Wou-liang-sheu-king, made under the Han dynasty.[2] What is important is that in the Chinese translation of the shorter text the scene is laid, as in the Japanese

[1] *J. R. A. S.*, 1866, p. 136. [2] *Ibid.*

Sanskrit text, at *S*râvastî, and the principal speakers are Bhagavat and *S*âriputra.

There is also a Tibetan translation of the short text, described by Csoma Körösi (‘As. Res.’ vol. xx. p. 439). Here, though the name of the scene is not mentioned, the speakers are Bhagavat and *S*âriputra. The whole work occupies seven leaves only, and the names of the sixteen principal disciples agree with the Japanese text. The translators were Pra*g*nâvarman, Sûrendra, and the Tibetan Lotsava Ya-shes-sde.

M. Feer informs me that there is at the National Library a Chinese text called O-mi-to-king, *i.e.* Amitâbha-sûtra. The scene is at *S*râvastî; the speakers are Bhagavat and *S*âriputra.

Another text at the National Library is called Ta-o-mi-to-king, *i.e.* Mahâ Amitâbha-sûtra, and here the scene is at Râ*g*a*g*ri*h*a.

There is, besides, a third work, called Kwan-wou-liang-sheu-king, by Kiang-ling-ye-she, *i.e.* Kâla-ya*s*as, a foreigner of the West, who lived in China about 424 A.D.

We have, therefore, historical evidence of the existence of three Sûtras, describing Sukhavatî, or

[1] Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 23. *J. R. A. S.* 1856, p. 319. Beal, *Catalogue*, p. 77, mentions also an Amitâbha-sûtra-upade*s*a-sâstra, by Vasubandhu, translated by Bodhiru*k*i (Wou-liang-sheu-king-yeou-po-tishe). There is an Amitâbha sûtra, translated by Chi-hien of the Wu period—*i.e.* 222–280 A.D.—mentioned in Mr. Beal's *Catalogue of the Buddhist Tripitaka*, p. 6. The next Sûtra, which he calls the Sûtra of measureless years, is no doubt the Amitâyus-Sûtra, Amitâyus being another name for Amitâbha (Fu-shwo-wou-liang-sheu-king, p. 6). See also *Catalogue*, pp. 99, 102. Dr. Edkins also, in his *Notices of Buddhism in China*, speaks of a translation of ‘the Sûtra of boundless age,’ by Fa-t'ian-pun, a native of Magadha, who was assisted in his translation by a native of China familiar with Sanskrit, about 1000 A.D.

the Paradise of Amitâbha. We know two of them in Sanskrit, Chinese, and Tibetan—one long, the other short. The third is known as yet in Chinese only.

Of the two Sanskrit texts, the one from Nepal, the other from Japan, the latter seems certainly the earlier. But even the fuller text must have existed at a very early time, because it was translated by *Ki*-lau-kia-*kh*ai, under the Eastern Han dynasty (25–220 A.D.)—*i.e.* at all events before 220 A.D.

The shorter text is first authenticated through the translation of Kumâra*g*îva, about 400 A.D.; but if the views generally entertained as to the relative position of the longer and shorter Sûtras be correct, we may safely claim for our short Sûtra a date within the second century of our era.

What Japan has sent us is, therefore, a Sanskrit text, of which we had no trace before, which must have left India at least before 400 A.D., but probably before 200 A.D., and which gives us the original of that description of Amitâbha's Paradise, which formerly we knew in a Chinese translation only, which was neither complete nor correct.

The book sent to me was first published in Japan in 1773, by Ziômiô, a Buddhist priest. The Sanskrit text is intelligible, but full of inaccuracies, showing clearly that the editor did not understand Sanskrit, but simply copied what he saw before him. The same words occurring in the same line are written differently, and the Japanese transliteration simply repeats the blunders of the Sanskrit transcript.

There are two other editions of the same text, published in 1794 A.D. by another Japanese priest,

named Hôgŏ. These are in the possession of Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, and offered some help in correcting the text. One of them contains the text and three Chinese translations, one being merely a literal rendering, while the other two have more of a literary character and are ascribed to Kumâragîva (400 A.D.), and Hiouen-thsang (648 A.D.).

Lastly, there is another book by the same Hôgŏ, in four volumes, in which an attempt is made to give a grammatical analysis of the text. This, however, as Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio informs me, is very imperfect.

I have to-day brought with me the Japanese Sanskrit text, critically restored, and a literal translation into English, to which I have added a few notes.

TRANSLATION.

Adoration to the Omniscient.

This is what I have heard. At one time the Blessed (Bhagavat, *i.e.* Buddha) dwelt at Srâvastî,[1] in the Geta-grove, in the garden of Anâthapi*n*daka, together with[2] a large company of Bhikshus (mendicant friars), viz. with thirteen hundred Bhikshus, all of them acquainted with the five kinds of knowledge,[3]

[1] Srâvastî, capital of the Northern Kosalas, residence of King Prasena*g*it. It was in ruins when visited by Fa-hian (init. V. Sæc.); not far from the modern Fizabad. *Cf.* Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 22.

[2] Sârdha, with, the Pâli saddhim. Did not the frequent mention of 1,200 and a half (*i.e.* 1,250), 1,300 and a half (*i.e.* 1,350), persons accompanying Buddha arise from a misunderstanding of sârdha, meaning originally 'with a half'?

[3] Abhi*g*ñânâbhi*g*ñâtai*ḥ*. The Japanese text reads abhi*g*ñâtâbhâ*g*ñâtai*ḥ*—*i.e.* abhi*g*ñâtâbhi*g*ñâtai*ḥ*. If this were known to be the correct reading, we should translate it by 'known by known people,' *notus a viris notis*—*i.e.* well-known, famous. Abhi*g*ñâta in the sense

elders, great disciples,[1] and Arhats,[2] such as Sâriputra, the elder, Mahâmaudgalyâyana, Mahâkâsyapa, Mahâkapphina, Mahâkâtyâyana, Mahâkaushthila, Revata, Suddhipanthaka, Nanda, Ânanda, Râhula, Gavâmpati, Bharadvâga, Kâlodayin, Vakkula, and Ani-

of known, famous, occurs in Lalita-Vistara, p. 25, and the Chinese translators adopted that meaning here. Again, if we preferred the reading abhigñânâbhigñâtaih, this, too, would admit of an intelligible rendering—viz. known or distinguished by the marks or characteristics, the good qualities, that ought to belong to a Bhikshu. But the technical meaning is 'possessed of a knowledge of the five abhigñâs.' It would be better in that case to write abhigñâtâbhigñânaih, but no MSS. seem to support that reading. The five abhigñâs or abhigñânas which an Arhat ought to possess are the divine sight, the divine hearing, the knowledge of the thoughts of others, the remembrance of former existences, and magic power. See Burnouf, *Lotus*, Appendice, No. xiv. The larger text of the Sukhavatîvyûha has abhigñânâbhigñaih, and afterwards abhigñâtâbhigñaih. The position of the participle as the uttara-pada in such compounds as abhigñânâbhigñâtaih is common in Buddhist Sanskrit. Mr. Bendall has called my attention to the Pâli abhiññâta-abhiññâta, (Vinaya-pitaka, ed. Oldenberg, vol. i. p. 43), which favours the Chinese acceptation of the term.

[1] Mahâsrâvaka, the great disciples; sometimes the eighty principal disciples.

[2] Arhadbhih. I have left the correct Sanskrit form, because the Japanese text gives the termination adbhih. Hôgô's text has the more usual form arhantaih. The change of the old classical arhat into the Pâli arahan, and then back into Sanskrit arhanta, arahanta, and at last arihanta, with the meaning of 'destroyer of the enemies'—*i.e.* the passions—shows very clearly the different stages through which Sanskrit words passed in the different phases of Buddhist literature. In Tibet, in Mongolia, and in China, Arhat is translated by 'destroyer of the enemy.' See Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 287, *Introduction*, p. 295. Arhat is the title of the Bhikshu on reaching the fourth degree of perfection. *Cf.* Sûtra of the 42 Sections, cap. 2. Clemens of Alexandria (d. 220) speaks of the Σεμνοί who worshipped a pyramid erected over the relics of a god. Is this a translation of Arhat, as Lassen ('De nom. Ind. philosoph.' in *Rhein. Museum*, vol. i. p. 187) and Burnouf (*Introduction*, p. 295) supposed, or a transliteration of Samana? Clemens also speaks of Σεμναί (*Stromat.* p. 539, Potter).

ruddha.[1] He dwelt together with these and many other great disciples, and together with many noble-minded Bodhisattvas, such as Mañgusrî, the prince, the Bodhisattva Agita, the Bodhisattva Gandhahastin, the Bodhisattva Nityodyukta, the Bodhisattva Anikshiptadhura. He dwelt together with them and many other noble-minded Bodhisattvas, and with Sakra, the Indra or King[2] of the Devas, and with Brahman Sahâmpati. With these and many other hundred thousands of Nayutas[3] of sons of the gods, Bhagavat dwelt at Srâvastî.

[1] Names of Disciples in Sanskrit, Pâli, Chinese, Tibetan, and Japanese MSS. Beal, *J.R.A.S.* 1866, p. 140 :—

JAPANESE MS.	SANSKRIT. (Burnouf, *Lotus*, pp. 1 and 126.)	CHINESE. (Beal, *Catena*, p. 378.)	TIBETAN.	PÂLI.
1 Sâriputra	Sâriputra	Sâriputra	Sharihi-bu	Sariputta
2 Mahâmaudgalyâyana	Maudgalyâyana	Maudgalyâyana	Mougal-gyi-bu	Moggalâna
3 Mahâkâsyapa	Kâsyapa	Kâsyapa	Hodsrungs-ch'hen-po	Kassapa
4 Mahâkapphina	Kapphina	Kapphina (?)	Kâtyâbi-bu	Kappina
5 Mahâkâtyâyana	Kâtyâyana	Kâtyâyana	Kapina	Kaccâyana
6 Mahâkaushthila	Kaushthila	Mahâkoṭṭhila	Gsus-poch'he	Koṭṭhita
7 Revata	Revata	Revata	Nam-gru	Revata
8 Suddhipanthaka (*Sudi*, MS.)	Śrutavimsatikoṭi (Mahâpanthaka ?)	Śrutavimsatikoṭi	Lam-p'hran-bstan	Mahâpanthaka
9 Nanda	Sunanda ?	Nanda	Dgah-vo	Nanda
10 Ânanda	Mahânanda	Ânanda	Kundgahvo	Ânanda
11 Râhula	Râhula	Râhula	Sgra-gchan-hdsin	Râhula (Kumâra)
12 Gavâmpati	Gavâmpati	Gavâmpati (Pindoda; Pindola ?)	Balang-bdag	Gavampati (Pindolabhâradvâga)
13 Bharadvâga	Bharadvâga	Bharadvâga	Bharadhwaja	Bhâradvâga
14 Kâlodayin	Kâlodayin	Kâlâditya	Hch'har-byed-nagpo	Kâla (tthera)
15 Vakkula	Vakkula	Vakula	Vakula	Vakkali
16 Aniruddha	Aniruddha	Aniruddha	Mahgags-pa	Anuruddha (tthera)

[2] Indra, the old Vedic god, has come to mean simply lord, and in the Kanda Paritta (*Journal Asiatique*, 1871, p. 220) we actually find Asurinda, the Indra or Lord of the Asuras.

[3] The numbers in Buddhist Literature, if they once exceed a Koṭi or Koṭî—*i.e.* ten millions—become very vague, nor is their value always the same. Ayuta, *i.e.* a hundred Koṭis; Niyuta, *i.e.* a hundred Ayutas; and Nayuta, *i.e.* 1 with 22 zeros, are often confounded;

Then Bhagavat addressed the honoured *S*âriputra and said: O *S*âriputra, after you have passed from here over a hundred thousand Kotis of Buddha-countries there is in the Western part a Buddha-country, a world called Sukhavatî (the happy country). And there a Tathâgata, called Amitâyus, an Arhat, fully enlightened, dwells now, and remains, and supports himself, and teaches the Law.[1]

Now what do you think, *S*âriputra, for what reason is that world called Sukhavatî (the happy)? In that world Sukhavatî, O *S*âriputra, there is neither bodily nor mental pain for living beings. The sources of happiness are innumerable there. For that reason is that world called Sukhavatî (the happy).

And again, O *S*âriputra, that world Sukhavatî is adorned with seven terraces, with seven rows of palm-trees, and with strings of bells.[2] It is enclosed

nor does it matter much so far as any definite idea is concerned which such numerals convey to our mind.

[1] Tish*th*ati dh*r*iyate yâpayati dharma*m* *k*a desayati. This is evidently an idiomatic phrase, for it occurs again and again in the Nepalese text of the Sukhavatîvyûha (MS. 26*b*, l. 1. 2; 55*a*, l. 2, etc.). It seems to mean, he stands there, holds himself, supports himself, and teaches the law. Burnouf translates the same phrase by, 'ils se trouvent, vivent, existent' (*Lotus*, p. 354). On yâpeti in Pâli, see Fausböll, Dasaratha-jâtaka, pp. 26, 28; and yâpana in Sanskrit.

[2] Kiṅkin*î*g*â*la. The texts read kaṅka*n*ag*a*lais *k*a and kaṅka*n*î*g*alais *k*a, and again later kaṅka*n*î*g*alunâm (also lû) and kaṅka*n*î*g*alânâm. Mr. Beal translates from Chinese 'seven rows of exquisite curtains,' and again 'gemmous curtains.' First of all, it seems clear that we must read *g*âla, net, web, instead of *g*ala. Secondly, kaṅka*n*a, bracelet, gives no sense, for what could be the meaning of nets or strings of bracelets? I prefer to read kiṅkin*î*g*â*la, nets or strings or rows of bells. Such rows of bells served for ornamenting a garden, and it may be said of them that, if moved by the wind, they give forth certain sounds. In the commentary on Dhammapada 30, p. 191, we meet with kiṅkinika*g*âla, from which likewise the music

on every side,[1] beautiful, brilliant with the four gems, viz. gold, silver, beryl, and crystal.[2] With

proceeds; see Childers, *s.v. gâla*. In the MSS. of the Nepalese Sukhavatîvyûha (*R.A.S.*), p. 39*a*, l. 4, I likewise find svar*n*aratnakiṅkiṇ*î*g*â*lâni, which settles the matter, and shows how little confidence we can place in the Japanese texts.

[1] Anuparikshipta, inclosed; see parikkhepo in Childers' Dict.

[2] The four and seven precious things in Pâli are (according to Childers):—

1. suva*n*nam,	gold.
2. ra*j*atam,	silver.
3. muttâ,	pearls.
4. ma*n*i,	gems (as sapphire, ruby).
5. ve*l*uriyam,	cat's eye.
6. va*j*iram,	diamond.
7. pavâ*l*am,	coral.

Here Childers translates cat's eye; but *s.v.* ve*l*uriyam, he says, a precious stone, perhaps lapis lazuli.

In Sanskrit (Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 320):

1. suvar*n*a,	gold.
2. rûpya,	silver.
3. vai*d*ûrya,	lapis lazuli.
4. sphaṭika,	crystal.
5. lohitamukti,	red pearls.
6. a*s*magarbha,	diamond.
7. musâragalva,	coral.

Julien (*Pèlerins Buddhistes*, vol. ii. p. 482) gives the following list:

1. sphaṭika,	rock crystal.
2. vaidûrya,	lapis lazuli.
3. a*s*magarbha,	cornaline.
4. musâragalva,	amber.
5. padmarâga,	ruby.

Vai*d*ûrya (or Vaidûrya) is mentioned in the Tathâgatagu*n*ajñâna*k*intyavishayâvatâranirdesa (Wassilief, p. 161) as a precious stone which, if placed on green cloth, looks green, if placed on red cloth, red. The fact that vai*d*ûrya is often compared with the colour of the eyes of a cat would seem to point to the cat's eye (see Borooah's *Engl. Sanskrit Dictionary*, vol. ii. preface, p. ix), certainly not to lapis lazuli. Cat's eye is a kind of chalcedony. I see, however, that vai*d*ûrya has been recognised as the original of the Greek βήρυλλος, a very ingenious conjecture, either of Weber's or of Pott's, considering that lingual *d* has a sound akin to r, and ry may be

such arrays of excellences peculiar to a Buddha-country is that Buddha-country adorned.

And again, O Śâriputra, in that world Sukhavatî there are lotus lakes, adorned with the seven gems, viz. gold, silver, beryl, crystal, red pearls, diamonds, and corals as the seventh. They are full of water which possesses the eight good qualities,[1] their waters rise as high as the fords and bathing-places, so that even crows[2] may drink there; they are full of

changed to ly and ll (Weber, *Omina*, p. 326). The Persian billaur or ballûr, which Skeat gives as the etymon of βήρυλλος, is of Arabic origin, means crystal, and could hardly have found its way into Greek at so early a time.

[1] The eight good qualities of water are limpidity and purity, refreshing coolness, sweetness, softness, fertilising qualities, calmness, power of preventing famine, productiveness. See Beal, *Catena*, p. 379.

[2] Kâkâpeya. One text reads Kâkapeya, the other Kâkâpeya. It is difficult to choose. The more usual word is kâkapeya, which is explained by Pâṇini, ii. 1, 33. It is uncertain, however, whether kâkapeya is meant as a laudatory or as a depreciatory term. Boehtlingk takes it in the latter sense, and translates nadî kâkapeyâ, by a shallow river that could be drunk up by a crow. Târânâtha takes it in the former sense, and translates nadî kâkapeyâ, as a river so full of water that a crow can drink it without bending its neck (kâkair anatakandharaiḥ pîyate; pûrṇodakatvena prasasye kâkaiḥ peye nadyâdau). In our passage kâkapeya must be a term of praise, and we therefore could only render it by 'ponds so full of water that crows could drink from them.' But why should so well known a word as kâkapeya have been spelt kâkâpeya, unless it was done intentionally? And if intentionally, what was it intended for? We must remember that Pâṇini, ii. 1, 42 schol., teaches us how to form the word tîrthakâka, a crow at a tîrtha, which means a person in a wrong place. It would seem therefore that crows were considered out of place at a tîrtha or bathing-place, either because they were birds of ill omen, or because they defiled the water. From that point of view, kâkâpeya would mean a pond not visited by crows, free from crows. Professor Pischel has called my attention to Mahâparinibbâna Sutta (*J.R.A.S.* 1875, p. 67, p. 21), where kâkapeyâ clearly refers to a full river. Samatiṭṭhika, if this is the right reading, occurs in the same place as an epithet of a river, by the

golden sand, and of vast extent. And in these lotus lakes there are all around on the four sides four stairs, beautiful and brilliant with the four gems, viz. gold, silver, beryl, crystal. And on every side of these lotus lakes gem trees are growing, beautiful and brilliant with the seven gems, viz. gold, silver, beryl, crystal, red pearls, diamonds, and corals as the seventh. And in those lotus lakes lotus flowers are growing, blue, blue-coloured, of blue splendour, blue to behold; yellow, yellow-coloured, of yellow splendour, yellow to behold; red, red-coloured, of red splendour, red to behold; white, white-coloured, of white splendour, white to behold; beautiful, beautifully-coloured, of beautiful splendour, beautiful to behold, and in circumference as large as the wheel of a chariot.

And again, O Sâriputra, in that Buddha-country there are heavenly musical instruments always played on and the earth is lovely and of golden colour. And in that Buddha-country a flower-rain of heavenly Mândârava blossoms pours down three times every day, and three times every night. And the beings who are born there worship before their morning meal[1] a hundred thousand Kotis of Buddhas by going to other worlds; and having showered a

side of kâkapeya, and I think it most likely that it means rising to a level with the tîrthas, the fords or bathing-places. Mr. Rhys Davids informs me that the commentary explains the two words by samatittikâ ti samaharitâ, kâkapeyyâ ti yatthatatthaki tîre *th*itena kâkena sakkâ patum ti.

[1] Purobhaktena. The text is difficult to read, but it can hardly be doubtful that purobhaktena corresponds to Pâli purebhatta*m* (*i.e.* before the morning meal), opposed to pa*kkhâ*bhatta*m*, after the noonday meal (*i.e.* in the afternoon). See Childers, *s. v.* Pûrvabhaktikâ would be the first repast, as Prof. Cowell informs me.

hundred thousand of Kotis of flowers upon each Tathâgata, they return to their own world in time for the afternoon rest.[1] With such arrays of excellences peculiar to a Buddha-country is that Buddha-country adorned.

And again, O Sâriputra, there are in that Buddha-country swans, curlews,[2] and peacocks. Three times every night, and three times every day, they come together and perform a concert, each uttering his own note. And from them thus uttering proceeds a sound proclaiming the five virtues, the five powers, and the seven steps leading towards the highest knowledge.[3] When the men there hear that sound,

[1] Divâ vihârâya, for the noonday rest, the *siesta*. See Childers, *s.v.* vihâra.

[2] Krauñkâh. Snipe, curlew. Is it meant for Kuravîka, or Karavîka, a fine-voiced bird (according to Kern, the Sk. karâyikâ), or for Kalaviṅka, Pâli Kalavîka? See Childers, *s.v.* opapâtiko; Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 566. I see, however, the same birds mentioned together elsewhere, as haṁsakrauñkamayûraśukaśâlikakokila, etc. On mayûra see Mahâv. Introd. p. xxxix.; Rv. I. 191, 14.

[3] Indriyabalabodhyaṅgaśabda. These are technical terms, but their meaning is not quite clear. Spence Hardy, in his *Manual*, p. 498, enumerates the five indrayas, viz. 1) sardhâwa, purity (probably śraddhâ, faith), 2) wiraya, persevering exertion (vîrya), 3) sati or smirti, the ascertainment of truth (smṛiti), 4) samâdhi, tranquillity, 5) pragnâwa, wisdom (prajñâ).

The five balayas (bala), he adds, are the same as the five indrayas.

The seven bowdyânga (bodhyaṅga)) are according to him: 1) sihi or smirti, the ascertainment of the truth by mental application, 2) dharmmawicha, the investigation of causes, 3) wîraya, persèvering exertion, 4) prîti, joy, 5) passadhi, or prasrabdhi, tranquillity, 6) samâdhi, tranquillity in a higher degree, including freedom from all that disturbs either body or mind, 7) upekshâ, equanimity.

It will be seen from this that some of these qualities or excellences occur both as indriyas and bodhyangas, while balas are throughout identical with indriyas.

remembrance of Buddha, remembrance of the Law, remembrance of the Assembly, rises in their mind.

Now, do you think, O Sâriputra, that these are beings who have entered into the nature of animals (birds, etc.)? This is not to be thought of. The very name of hells is unknown in that Buddha-country, and likewise that of (descent into) animal natures and of the realm of Yama (the four apâyas).[1] No, these tribes of birds have been made on purpose by the Tathâgata Amitâyus, and they utter the sound of the Law. With such arrays of excellences, etc.

And again, O Sâriputra, when those rows of palm-trees and strings of bells in that Buddha-country are moved by the wind, a sweet and enrapturing sound proceeds from them. Yes, O Sâriputra, as from a heavenly musical instrument consisting of a hundred thousand Kotis of sounds, when played by Âryas, a sweet and enrapturing sound proceeds, a sweet and enrapturing sound proceeds from those rows of palm-trees and strings of bells moved by

Burnouf, however, in his *Lotus*, gives a list of five balas (from the *Vocabulaire Pentaglotte*) which correspond with the five indriyas of Spence Hardy: viz. śraddhâ-bala, power of faith, vîrya-bala, power of vigour, smṛiti-bala, power of memory, samâdhi-bala, power of meditation, pragñâ-bala, power of knowledge. They precede the seven bodhyaṅgas both in the *Lotus*, the *Vocabulaire Pentaglotte*, and the Lalita-Vistara.

To these seven bodhyaṅgas Burnouf has assigned a special treatise (Appendice xii, p. 796). They occur both in Sanskrit and Pâli.

[1] Niraya, the hells, also called Naraka. Yamaloka, the realm of Yama, the judge of the dead, is explained as the four Apâyas—*i.e.* Naraka, hell, Tiryagyoni, birth as animals, Pretaloka, realm of the dead, Asuraloka, realm of evil spirits. The three terms which are here used together occur likewise in a passage translated by Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 544.

the wind. And when the men hear that sound, reflection on Buddha arises in their body, reflection on the Law, reflection on the Assembly. With such arrays of excellences, etc.

Now what do you think, O Śâriputra, for what reason is that Tathâgata called Amitâyus? The length of life (âyus), O Śâriputra, of that Tathâgata and of those men there is immeasurable (amita). Therefore is that Tathâgata called Amitâyus. And ten Kalpas have passed, O Śâriputra, since that Tathâgata awoke to perfect knowledge.

And what do you think, O Śâriputra, for what reason is that Tathâgata called Amitâbhâs? The splendour (âbhâs), O Śâriputra, of that Tathâgata is unimpeded over all Buddha-countries. Therefore is that Tathâgata called Amitâbhâs.

And there is, O Śâriputra, an innumerable assembly of disciples with that Tathâgata, purified and venerable persons, whose number it is not easy to count. With such arrays of excellences, etc.

And again, O Śâriputra, of those beings also who are born in the Buddha-country of the Tathâgata Amitâyus as purified Bodhisattvas, never to return again and bound by one birth only, of those Bodhisattvas also, O Śâriputra, the number is not easy to count, except they are reckoned as infinite in number.[1]

Then again all beings, O Śâriputra, ought to make fervent prayer for that Buddha-country. And why? Because they come together there with such

[1] Iti sankhyâm gakkhanti, they are called; *cf.* Childers, *s.v.* sankhyâ. Asankhyeya, even more than aprameya, is the recognised term for infinity. Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 852.

excellent men. Beings are not born in that Buddha-country of the Tathâgata Amitâyus as a reward and result of good works performed in this present life.[1] No, whatever son or daughter of a family shall hear the name of the blessed Amitâyus, the Tathâgata, and having heard it, shall keep it in mind, and with thoughts undisturbed shall keep it in mind for one, two, three, four, five, six or seven nights, that son or daughter of a family, when he or she comes to die, then that Amitâyus, the Tathâgata, surrounded by an assembly of disciples and followed by a host of Bodhisattvas, will stand before them at their hour of death, and they will depart this life with tranquil minds. After their death they will be born in the world Sukhavatî, in the Buddha-country of the same Amitâyus, the Tathâgata. Therefore, then, O Sâriputra, having perceived this cause and effect,[2] I with reverence say thus, Every son and every daughter of

[1] Avaramâtraka. This is the Pâli oramattako, 'belonging merely to the present life,' and the intention of the writer seems to be to inculcate the doctrine of the Mahâyâna, that salvation can be obtained by mere repetitions of the name of Amitâbha, in direct opposition to the original doctrine of Buddha, that as a man soweth, so he reapeth. Buddha would have taught that the kuśalamûla, the root or the stock of good works performed in this world (avaramâtraka), will bear fruit in the next, while here 'vain repetitions' seems all that is enjoyed. The Chinese translators take a different view of this passage, and I am not myself quite certain that I have understood it rightly. But from the end of this section, where we read kulaputreṇa vâ kuladuhitrâ vâ tatra buddhakshetre kittaprâṇidhânam kartavyam, it seems clear that the locative (buddhakshetre) forms the object of the praṇidhâna, the fervent prayer or longing. The Satpurushas already in the Buddhakshetra would be the innumerable men (manushyâs) and Boddhisattvas mentioned before.

[2] Arthavaśa, lit. the power of the thing; *cf.* Dhammapada, p. 388, *v.* 289.

a family ought to make with their whole mind fervent prayer for that Buddha-country.

And now, O Śâriputra, as I here at present glorify that world, thus in the East, O Śâriputra, other blessed Buddhas, led by the Tathâgata Akshobhya, the Tathâgata Merudhvaga, the Tathâgata Mahâmeru, the Tathâgata Meruprabhâsa, and the Tathâgata Mañgudhvaga, equal in number to the sand of the river Gangâ, comprehend their own Buddha-countries in their speech, and then reveal them.[1] Accept this repetition of the Law, called the 'Favour of all Buddhas,' which magnifies their inconceivable excellences.

Thus also in the South, do other blessed Buddhas, led by the Tathâgata Kandrasûryapradîpa, the Tathâgata Yasaḥprabha, the Tathâgata Mahârkiskandha, the Tathâgata Merupradîpa, the Tathâgata Anantavîrya, equal in number to the sand of the river Gangâ, comprehend their own Buddha-countries in their speech, and then reveal them. Accept, etc.

Thus also in the West do other blessed Buddhas, led by the Tathâgata Amitâyus, the Tathâgata Amitaskandha, the Tathâgata Amitadhvaga, the Tathâgata Mahâprabha, the Tathâgata Mahâratnaketu, the Tathâgata Śuddharaśmiprabha, equal in number to the sand of the river Gangâ, comprehend, etc.

Thus also in the North do other blessed Buddhas,

[1] I am not quite certain as to the meaning of this passage, but if we enter into the bold metaphor of the text, viz. that the Buddhas cover the Buddha-countries with the organ of their tongue and then unrol it, what is intended can hardly be anything but that they first try to find words for the excellences of those countries, and then reveal or proclaim them. Burnouf, however (*Lotus*, p. 417), takes the expression in a literal sense, though he is shocked by its grotesqueness. On these Buddhas and their countries, see Burnouf, *Lotus*, p. 113.

led by the Tathâgata Mahârkiskandha, the Tathâgata Vaisvânaranirghosha, the Tathâgata Dundubhisvaranirghosha, the Tathâgata Dushpradharsha, the Tathâgata Âdityasambhava, the Tathâgata Galeniprabha (Gvalanaprabha?), the Tathâgata Prabhâkara, equal in number to the sand, etc.

Thus also in the Nadir do other blessed Buddhas, led by the Tathâgata Simha, the Tathâgata Yasas, the Tathâgata Yasahprabhâva, the Tathâgata Dharma, the Tathâgata Dharmadhara, the Tathâgata Dharmadhvaga, equal in number to the sand, etc.

Thus also in the Zenith do other blessed Buddhas, led by the Tathâgata Brahmaghosha, the Tathâgata Nakshatrarâga, the Tathâgata Indraketudhvagarâga, the Tathâgata Gandhottama, the Tathâgata Gandhaprabhâsa, the Tathâgata Mahârkiskandha, the Tathâgata Ratnakusumasampushpitagâtra, the Tathâgata Sâlendrarâga, the Tathâgata Ratnotpalasri, the Tathâgata Sarvâdarsa, the Tathâgata Sumerukalpa, equal in number to the sand, etc.[1]

Now what do you think, O Sâriputra, for what reason is that repetition of the Law called the Favour of all Buddhas? Every son or daughter of a family who shall hear the name of that repetition of the Law and retain in their memory the names of those blessed Buddhas, will all be favoured by the Buddhas, and will never return again, being once in possession of the transcendent true knowledge. Therefore, then, O Sâriputra, believe,[2] accept, and long for me and those blessed Buddhas!

[1] It should be remarked that the Tathâgatas here assigned to the ten quarters differ entirely from those assigned to them in the Lalita-vistara, book xx. Not even Amitâbha is mentioned there.

[2] Pratîyatha. The texts give again and again pattîyatha, evi-

Whatever sons or daughters of a family shall make mental prayer for the Buddha-country of that blessed Amitâyus, the Tathâgata, or are making it now or have made it formerly, all these will never return again, being once in possession of the transcendent true knowledge. They will be born in that Buddha-country, have been born, or are being born now. Therefore, then, O Sâriputra, mental prayer is to be made for that Buddha-country by faithful sons and daughters of a family.

And as I at present magnify here the inconceivable excellences of those blessed Buddhas, thus, O Sâriputra, do those blessed Buddhas magnify my own inconceivable excellences.

A very difficult work has been done by Sâkyamuni, the sovereign of the Sâkyas. Having obtained the transcendent true knowledge in this world Saha, he taught the Law which all the world is reluctant to accept, during this corruption of the present Kalpa, during this corruption of mankind, during this corruption of belief, during this corruption of life, during this corruption of passions.

This is even for me, O Sâriputra, an extremely difficult work that, having obtained the transcendent

dently the Pali form, instead of pratîyata. I have left tha, the Pali termination of the 2 p. pl. in the imperative, instead of ta, because that form was clearly intended, while pa for pra may be an accident. Yet I have little doubt that patîyatha was in the original text. That it is meant for the imperative, we see from śraddadhâdhvam, etc., further on. Other traces of the influence of Pâli or Prakrit on the Sanskrit of our Sûtra appear in arhantaiḥ, the various reading for arhadbhiḥ, which I preferred; sambahula for bahula; dhṛiyate yâpayati; purobhaktena; anyatra; saṅkhyâm gaḳkhanti; avaramâtraka; veṭhana instead of veshṭana, in nirveṭhana; dharmaparyâya (*Corp. Inscript.* plate xv.), etc.

true knowledge in this world Saha, I taught the Law which all the world is reluctant to accept, during this corruption of mankind, of belief, of passion, of life, and of this present Kalpa.

Thus spoke Bhagavat joyful in his mind. And the honourable *Sâriputra*, and the Bhikshus and Bodhisattvas, and the whole world with the gods, men, evil spirits and genii, applauded the speech of Bhagavat.[1]

This is the Mahâyânasûtra called Sukhavatîvyûha.

[1] The Sukhavatîvyûha, even in its shortest text, is called a Mahâyâna-sûtra, nor is there any reason why a Mahâyâna-sûtra should not be short. The meaning of Mahâyâna-sûtra is simply a Sûtra belonging to the Mahâyâna school, the school of the Great Boat. It was Burnouf who, in his *Introduction to the History of Buddhism*, tried very hard to establish a distinction between the Vaipulya or developed Sûtras, and what he calls the simple Sûtras. Now, the Vaipulya Sûtras may all belong to the Mahâyâna school, but that would not prove that all the Sûtras of the Mahâyâna school are Vaipulya or developed Sûtras. The name of simple Sûtra, in opposition to the Vaipulya or developed Sûtras, is not recognised by the Buddhists themselves; it is really an invention of Burnouf's. No doubt there is a great difference between a Vaipulya Sûtra, such as the Lotus of the Good Law, translated by Burnouf, and the Sûtras which Burnouf translated from the Divyâvadâna. But what Burnouf considers as the distinguishing mark of a Vaipulya Sûtra, viz. the occurrence of Bodhisattvas, as followers of the Buddha *Sâkyamuni*, would no longer seem to be tenable,* unless we classed our short Sukhavatî-vyûha as a Vaipulya or developed Sûtra. For this there is no authority. Our Sûtra is called a Mahâyâna Sûtra, never a Vaipulya Sûtra, and yet among the followers of Buddha, the Bodhisattvas constitute a very considerable portion. But more than that, Amitâbha, the Buddha of Sukhavatî, another personage whom Burnouf looks upon as peculiar to the Vaipulya Sûtras, who is, in fact,

* La présence des Bodhisattvas ou leur absence intéresse donc le fonds même des livres où on la remarque, et il est bien évident que ce seul point trace une ligne de démarcation profonde entre les Sûtras ordinaires et les Sûtras développés.'—Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 112.

This Sûtra sounds to us, no doubt, very different from the original teaching of Buddha. And so it is. Nevertheless it is the most popular and most widely read Sûtra in Japan, and the whole religion of the great mass of the people may be said to be founded on it. 'Repeat the name of Amitâbha as often as you can, repeat it particularly in the hour of death, and you will go straight to Sukhavatî and be happy for ever;' this is what Japanese Buddhists are asked to believe: this is what they are told was the teaching of Buddha. There is one passage in our Sûtra which seems even to be pointedly directed against the original teaching of Buddha. Buddha taught that as a man soweth so shall he reap, and that by a stock of good works accumulated on earth the way is opened to higher knowledge and higher bliss. Our Sûtra says No; not by good works done on earth, but by a mere repetition of the name of Amitâbha is an entrance gained into the land of bliss. This is no better than what later Brahmanism teaches, viz. 'Repeat the name of Hari or of *Krishna*, and you will be saved.' It is no better than what even some Christian teachers are reported to teach. It may be that in a lower stage of civilisation even such teach-

one of the Dhyâni-buddhas, though not called by that name in our Sûtra, forms the chief object of its teaching, and is represented as coeval with Buddha Śâkyamuni.* The larger text of the Sukhavatîvyûha would certainly, according to Burnouf's definition, seem to fall into the category of the Vaipulya Sûtras. But it is not so called in the MSS. which I have seen, and Burnouf himself gives an analysis of that Sûtra (*Introduction*, p. 99) as a specimen of a Mahâyâna, but not of a Vaipulya Sûtra.

* 'L'idée d'un ou de plusieurs Buddhas surhumains, celle de Bodhisattvas créés par eux, sont des conceptions aussi étrangères à ces livres (les Sûtras simples) que celle d'un Adibuddha ou d'un Dieu.'—Burnouf, *Introduction*, p. 120.

ing has produced some kind of good.[1] But Japan is surely ripe for better things. What the worship of Amitâbha may lead to we can learn from a description given by Dr. Edkins in his 'Trip to Ning-po and T'hëen-t'hae. 'The next thing,' he writes, 'shown to us was the prison, in which about a dozen priests had allowed themselves to be shut up for a number of months or years, during which they were to occupy themselves in repeating the name of Amida Buddha,[2] day and night, without intermission. During the day the whole number were to be thus engaged; and during the night they took it by turns, and divided themselves into watches, so as to ensure the keeping up of the work till morning. We asked when they were to be let out. To which it was replied, that they might be liberated at their own request, but not before they had spent several months in seclusion. We inquired what could be the use of such an endless repetition of the name of Buddha. To which it was answered, that the constant repetition of the sacred name had a tendency to purify the heart, to deaden the affections towards the present world, and to prepare them for the state of Nirvâna. It was further asked whether Buddha was likely to be pleased with such an endless repetition of his name. To which it was answered, that in the Western world it was considered a mark of respect to repeat the name of anyone whom we delighted to

[1] See H. Yule, *Marco Polo*, 2nd ed. vol. i. pp. 441–443.

[2] In China, as Dr. Edkins states, the doctrine of Amitâbha is represented by the so-called Lotus school (Lian-tsung) or Pure Land (Tsing-tu). The founder of this school in China was Hwei-yuan of the Tsin dynasty (fourth century). The second patriarch (tsu) of this school was Kwang-ming (seventh century).

honour. The recluses seemed most of them young men; some of whom came out to the bars of their cage to look at the strangers, but kept on repeating the name of Buddha as they stood there. It appeared to us that nothing was more calculated to produce idiocy than such a perpetual repetition of a single name, and the stupid appearance of many of the priests whom we have seen seems to have been induced by some such process.'

Is it not high time that the millions who live in Japan, and profess a faith in Buddha, should be told that this doctrine of Amitâbha and all the Mahâyâna doctrine is a secondary form of Buddhism, a corruption of the pure doctrine of the Royal Prince, and that, if they really mean to be Buddhists, they should return to the words of Buddha, as they are preserved to us in the old Sûtras? Instead of depending, as they now do, on Chinese translations, not always accurate, of degraded and degrading Mahâyâna tracts, why should they not have Japanese translations of the best portions of Buddha's real doctrine; which would elevate their character, and give them a religion of which they need not be ashamed? There are Chinese translations of some of the better portions of the Sacred Writings of Buddhism. They exist in Japan too, as may be seen in that magnificent collection of the Buddhist Tripiṭaka which was sent from Japan as a present to the English Government, and of which Mr. Beal has given us a very useful Catalogue. But they are evidently far less considered in Japan than the silly and mischievous stories of Amitâbha and his Paradise, and those which I know from translations are far from correct.

I hope that Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio and Mr. Kasawara, if they diligently continue their study of Sanskrit and Pâli, will be able to do a really great and good work, after their return to Japan. And if more young Buddhist priests are coming over, I shall always, so far as my other occupations allow it, be glad to teach them, and to help them in their unselfish work. There is a great future in store, I believe, for those Eastern Islands, which have been called prophetically 'the England of the East,' and to purify and reform their religion—that is, to bring it back to its original form—is a work that must be done before anything else can be attempted.

In return, I hope that they and their friends in Japan, and in Corea and China too, will do all they can to discover, if possible, some more of the ancient Sanskrit texts, and send them over to us. A beginning, at all events, has been made, and if the members of this Society who have friends in China or in Japan will help, if H.E. the Japanese Minister, Mori Arinori, who has honoured us by his presence to-day, will lend us his powerful assistance, I have little doubt that the dream which passed before the mind of your late President may still become a reality, and that some of the MSS. which, beginning with the beginning of our era, were carried from India to China, Corea, and Japan, may return to us, whether in the original or in copies, like the one sent to me by Mr. Shuntai Ishikawa.

With the help of such MSS. we shall be able all the better to show to those devoted students who from the extreme East have come to the extreme West in order to learn to read their sacred writings

in the original Sanskrit or Pâli, what difference there is between the simple teaching of Buddha and the later developments and corruptions of Buddhism. Buddha himself, I feel convinced, never knew even the names of Amitâbha, Avalokitesvara, or Sukhavatî. Then, how can a nation call itself Buddhist whose religion consists chiefly in a belief in a divine Amitâbha and his son Avalokitesvara, and in a hope of eternal life in the paradise of Sukhavatî?

POSTSCRIPT: *Oxford, March* 10, 1880.

The hope which I expressed in my paper on 'Sanskrit Texts discovered in Japan,' viz. that other Sanskrit texts might still come to light in Japan or China, has been fulfilled sooner than I expected. Mr. A. Wylie wrote to me on March 3 that he had brought a number of Sanskrit-Chinese books from Japan, and he afterwards kindly sent them to me to examine. They were of the same appearance and character as the dictionary which Dr. Edkins had lent me, and the Sukhavatî-vyûha which I had received from Japan. But with the exception of a collection of invocations, called the Vagra-sûtra, and the short Pragñâ-hridaya-sûtra, they contained no continuous texts. The books were intended to teach the Sanskrit alphabet, and every possible and impossible combination of the Devanâgarî letters, and that was all. Still, so large a number of books written to teach the Sanskrit alphabet augurs well for the existence of Sanskrit texts. There was among Mr. Wylie's books a second Chinese-Sanskrit-Japanese vocabulary, of which Mr. Kasawara has given me the following account: 'This vocabulary

is called "A Thousand Sanskrit and Chinese Words," and it is said to have been arranged by I-tsing, who left China for India in 671, about twenty-seven years after Hiouen-thsang's return to China, and who is best known as the author of a book called Nanhae-ki-kwei-*k*ou'en, on the manners and customs of the Indian Buddhists at that time.

'This vocabulary was brought from China to Japan by Zikaku, a Japanese priest, who went to China in 838 and returned in 847. It is stated at the end of the book, that in the year 884 a Japanese priest of the name of Rioyiu copied that vocabulary from a text belonging to another priest, Yûïkai. The edition brought from Japan by Mr. Wylie was published there in the year 1727 by a priest called Jakumio.'

The following curious passage occurs in the preface of Jakumio's edition: 'This vocabulary is generally called "one thousand Sanskrit and Chinese words." It is stated in Annen's work, that this was first brought (from China) by Zikaku. I have corrected several mistakes in this vocabulary, comparing many copies; yet the present edition is not free from blunders; I hope the readers will correct them, if they have better copies.

'In the temple Hôriuji, in Yamato, there are treasured Pra*gñâ*pâramitâh*ri*dayasûtram, and Sonshio-dhâra*ni*, written on two palm leaves, handed down from Central India; and, at the end of these, fourteen letters of the "siddha" are written. In the present edition of the vocabulary the alphabet is in imitation of that of the palm leaves, except such forms of letters as cannot be distinguished from those prevalent among the scriveners at the present day.

'Hôriuji is one of eleven temples founded by the prince Umayado (who died A.D. 621). This temple is at a town named Tatsuta, in the province Yamato, near Kioto, the western capital.'

Here, then, we have clear evidence that in the year 1727 palm leaves containing the text of Sanskrit Sûtras were still preserved in the temple of Hôriuji. If that temple is still in existence, might not some Buddhist priest of Kioto, the western capital of Japan, be induced to go there to see whether the palm leaves are still there, and, if they are, to make a copy and send it to Oxford?

F. M. M.

SECOND POSTSCRIPT: *Oxford, August* 2, 1880.

At the end of my paper on 'Sanskrit Texts in Japan' I mentioned in a postscript (March 10) that I had received from Mr. Wylie a copy of a vocabulary called 'A Thousand Sanskrit and Chinese Words,' compiled by I-tsing, about 700 A.D., and brought to Japan by Zikaku, a Japanese priest, in 847 A.D. The edition of this vocabulary which Mr. Wylie bought in Japan was published by Jakumio in 1727, and in the preface the editor says: 'In the temple Hôriuji, in Yamato, there are treasured Pragñâpâramitâhridaya-sûtram and Sonshio-dhâranî, written on two palm leaves, handed down from Central India.'

Hôriuji is one of eleven temples founded by Prince Umayado, who died in A.D. 621. This temple is in a town named Tatsuta, in the province Yamato, near Kioto, the western capital. I ended my article with the following sentence: 'Here, then, we have

clear evidence that in the year 1727 palm leaves containing the text of Sanskrit Sûtras were still preserved in the temple of Hôriuji. If that temple is still in existence, might not some Buddhist priest of Kioto, the western capital of Japan, be induced to go there to see whether the palm leaves are still there, and, if they are, to make a copy and send it to Oxford?'

Sooner than expected this wish of mine has been fulfilled. On April 28 Mr. Shigefuyu Kurihara, of Kioto, a friend of one of my Sanskrit pupils, Mr. Bunyiu Nanjio, who for some years had himself taken an interest in Sanskrit, went to the temple or monastery of Hôriuji to inquire whether any old Sanskrit MSS. were still preserved there. He was told that the priests of the monastery had recently surrendered their valuables to the Imperial Government, and that the ancient palm leaves had been presented to the emperor.

In a chronicle kept at the monastery of Hôriuji it is stated that these palm leaves and other valuables were brought by Ono Imoko, a retainer of the Mikado (the Empress Suiko), from China (during the Sui dynasty, 589–618) to Japan, in the thirty-seventh year of the age of Prince Umayado—*i.e.*, A.D. 609. The other valuable articles were:

1. Niô, *i.e.*, a cymbal used in Buddhist temples;
2. Midzu-game, a water vessel;
3. Shaku-jio, a staff, the top of which is armed with metal rings, as carried by Buddhist priests;
4. Kesa (Kashâya), a scarf, worn by Buddhist priests across the shoulder, which belonged to the famous Bodhidharma;

5. Ha*ki*, a bowl, given by the same Bodhidharma.

These things and the Sanskrit MSS. are said to have belonged to some Chinese priests, named Hwui-sz' (Yeshi) and Nien-shan (Nenzen), and to four others successively, who lived in a monastery on the mountain called Nan-yo (Nangak), in the province of Hăng (Kô) in China. These palm-leaf MSS. may, therefore, be supposed to date from at least the sixth century A.D., and be, in fact, *the oldest Sanskrit MSS. now in existence.*[1]

May we not hope that His Excellency Mori Arinori, who expressed so warm an interest in this matter when he was present at the meeting of the Royal Asiatic Society, will now lend us his powerful aid, and request the Minister of the Department of the Imperial Household to allow these MSS. to be carefully copied or photographed?

[1] See page 324.

XX.

POPOL VUH.

A BOOK called 'Popol Vuh,'[1] and pretending to be the original text of the sacred writings of the Indians of Central America, will be received by most people with a sceptical smile. The Aztec children who were shown all over Europe as descendants of a race to whom, before the Spanish conquest, divine honours were paid by the natives of Mexico, and who turned out to be unfortunate creatures that had been tampered with by heartless speculators, are still fresh in the memory of most people; and the 'Livre des Sauvages,'[2] lately published by the Abbé Domenech, under the auspices of Count Walewsky, has somewhat lowered the dignity of American studies in general. Still, those who laugh at the 'Manuscrit Pictographique Américain' discovered by the French Abbé in the library of the French Arsénal, and edited by him with so much care as a precious relic of the old Red-skins of North America, ought not to forget that there would be nothing at all sur-

[1] *Popol Vuh*: le Livre Sacré et les Mythes de l'Antiquité Américaine, avec les Livres Héroïques et Historiques des Quichés. Par l'Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg. Paris: Durand, 1861.

[2] *Manuscrit Pictographique Américain*, précédé d'une Notice sur l'Idéographie des Peaux-Rouges. Par l'Abbé Em. Domenech. Ouvrage publié sous les auspices de M. le Ministre d'Etat et de la Maison de l'Empereur. Paris, 1860.

prising in the existence of such a MS., containing genuine pictographic writing of the Red Indians. The German critic of the Abbé Domenech, M. Petzholdt,[1] assumes much too triumphant an air in announcing his discovery that the 'Manuscrit Pictographique' was the work of a German boy in the backwoods of America. He ought to have acknowledged that the Abbé himself had pointed out the German scrawls on some of the pages of his MS.; that he had read the names of Anna and Maria; and that he never claimed any great antiquity for the book in question. Indeed, though M. Petzholdt tells us very confidently that the whole book is the work of a naughty, nasty, and profane little boy, the son of German settlers in the backwoods of America, we doubt whether anybody who takes the trouble to look through all the pages will consider this view as at all satisfactory, or even as more probable than that of the French Abbé. We know what boys are capable of in pictographic art from the occasional defacements of our walls and railings; but we still feel a little sceptical when M. Petzholdt assures us that there is nothing extraordinary in a boy filling a whole volume with these elaborate scrawls. If M. Petzholdt had taken the trouble to look at some of the barbarous hieroglyphics that have been collected in North America, he would have understood more readily how the Abbé Domenech, who had spent many years among the Red Indians, and had himself copied several of their

[1] *Das Buch der Wilden im Lichte Französischer Civilisation.* Mit Proben aus dem in Paris als *Manuscrit Pictographique Américain*, veröffentlichten Schmierbuche eines Deutsch-Amerikanischen Hinterwälder Jungen. Von J. Petzholdt. Dresden, 1861.

inscriptions, should have taken the pages preserved in the library of the Arsénal at Paris as genuine specimens of American pictography. There is a certain similarity between these scrawls and the figures scratched on rocks, tombstones, and trees by the wandering tribes of North America; and though we should be very sorry to endorse the opinion of the enthusiastic Abbé, or to start any conjecture of our own as to the real authorship of the 'Livre des Sauvages,' we cannot but think that M. Petzholdt would have written less confidently, and certainly less scornfully, if he had been more familiar than he seems to be with the little that is known of the picture-writing of the Indian tribes.

As a preliminary, therefore, to the question of the authenticity of the 'Popol Vuh,' a few words on the pictorial literature of the Red Indians of North America will not be considered out of place. The 'Popol Vuh' is not, indeed, a 'Livre des Sauvages,' but a literary composition in the true sense of the word. It contains the mythology and history of the civilised races of Central America, and comes before us with credentials that will bear the test of critical inquiry. But we shall be better able to appreciate the higher achievements of the South, after we have examined, however cursorily, the rude beginnings in literature among the savage races of the North.

Colden, in his 'History of the Five Nations,' informs us that when, in 1696, the Count de Frontenac marched a well-appointed army into the Iroquois country, with artillery and all other means of regular military offence, he found, on the banks of the Onondaga, now called Oswego River, a tree, on the trunk

of which the Indians had depicted the French army, and deposited two bundles of cut rushes at its foot, consisting of 1,434 pieces; an act of symbolical defiance on their part, which was intended to warn their Gallic invaders that they would have to encounter this number of warriors.

This warlike message is a specimen of Indian picture-writing. It belongs to the lowest stage of graphic representation, and hardly differs from the primitive way in which the Persian ambassadors communicated with the Greeks, or the Romans with the Carthaginians. Instead of the lance and the staff of peace between which the Carthaginians were asked to choose, the Red Indians would have sent an arrow and a pipe, and the message would have been equally understood. This, though not yet *peindre la parole*, is nevertheless a first attempt at *parler aux yeux*. It is a first beginning which may lead to something more perfect in the end. We find similar attempts at pictorial communication among other savage tribes, and they seem to answer every purpose. In Freycinet and Arago's 'Voyage to the Eastern Ocean' we are told of a native of the Carolina Islands, a Tamor of Sathoual, who wished to avail himself of the presence of a ship to send to a trader at Botta, M. Martinez, some shells which he had promised to collect in exchange for a few axes and some other articles. He expressed his wishes to the captain, who gave him a piece of paper to make the drawing, and satisfactorily executed the commission. The figure of a man at the top denoted the ship's captain, who by his outstretched hands represented his office as a messenger between the parties. The

rays or ornaments on his head denote rank or authority. The vine beneath him is a type of friendship. In the left column are depicted the number and kinds of shells sent; in the right column the things wished for in exchange—namely, seven fish-hooks, three large and four small, two axes, and two pieces of iron.

The inscriptions which are found on the Indian graveboards mark a step in advance. Every warrior has his crest, which is called his *totem*, and is painted on his tombstone. A celebrated war-chief, the Adjetatig of Wabojeeg, died on Lake Superior, about 1793. He was of the clan of the Addik, or American reindeer. The fact is symbolised by the figure of the deer. The reversed position denotes death. His own personal name, which was White Fisher, is not noticed. But there are seven transverse strokes on the left, and these have a meaning —namely, that he had led seven war parties. Then there are three perpendicular lines below his crest, and these again are readily understood by every Indian. They represent the wounds received in battle. The figure of a moose's head is said to relate to a desperate conflict with an enraged animal of this kind; and the symbols of the arrow and the pipe are drawn to indicate the chief's influence in war and peace.

There is another graveboard of the ruling chief of Sandy Lake on the Upper Mississippi. Here the reversed bird denotes his family name or clan, the Crane. Four transverse lines above it denote that he had killed four of his enemies in battle. An analogous custom is mentioned by Aristotle ('Poli-

tica,' vii. 2, p. 220, ed. Göttling). Speaking of the Iberians, he states that they placed as many obelisks round the grave of a warrior as he had killed enemies in battle.

But the Indians went further; and though they never arrived at the perfection of the Egyptian hieroglyphics, they had a number of symbolic emblems which were perfectly understood by all their tribes. *Eating* is represented by a man's hand lifted to his mouth. *Power over man* is symbolised by a line drawn in the figure from the mouth to the heart; *power* in general by a head with two horns. A circle drawn around the body at the abdomen denotes *full means of subsistence.* A boy drawn with waved lines from each ear and lines leading to the heart represents a *pupil.* A figure with a plant as head, and two wings, denotes a *doctor* skilled in medicine, and endowed with the power of ubiquity. A tree with human legs, a *herbalist* or *professor of botany.* *Night* is represented by a finely crossed or barred sun, or a circle with human legs. *Rain* is figured by a dot or semicircle filled with water and placed on the head. The heaven with three disks of the sun is understood to mean three days' journey; and a landing after a voyage is represented by a tortoise. Short sentences, too, can be pictured in this manner. A prescription ordering abstinence from food for two, and rest for four, days is written by drawing a man with two bars on the stomach and four across the legs. We are told even of war-songs and love-songs composed in this primitive alphabet, though it would seem as if, in these cases, the reader required even greater poetical imagination than the

writer. There is one war-song consisting of four pictures—

1. The sun rising.

2. A figure pointing with one hand to the earth and the other extended to the sky.

3. The moon with two human legs.

4. A figure personifying the Eastern woman—*i.e.* the evening star.

These four symbols are said to convey to the Indian the following meaning:

> I am rising to seek the war path;
> The earth and the sky are before me;
> I walk by day and by night;
> And the evening star is my guide.

The following is a specimen of a love-song:

1. Figure representing a god (monedo) endowed with magic power.

2. Figure beating the drum and singing; lines from his mouth.

3. Figure surrounded by a secret lodge.

4. Two bodies joined with one continuous arm.

5. A woman on an island.

6. A woman asleep; lines from his ear towards her.

7. A red heart in a circle.

This poem is intended to express these sentiments:

1. It is my form and person that make me great—

2. Hear the voice of my song, it is my voice.

3. I shield myself with secret coverings.

4. All your thoughts are known to me, blush!
5. I could draw you hence were you ever so far
6. Though you were on the other hemisphere—
7. I speak to your naked heart.

All we can say is that if the Indians can read this writing they are greater adepts in the mysteries of love than the judges of the old *Cours d'amour*. But it is much more likely that these war-songs and love-songs are known to the people beforehand, and that their writings are only meant to revive what exists already in the memory of the reader. It is a kind of mnemonic writing, which has sometimes been used by missionaries for similar purposes, and with considerable success. Thus, in a translation of the Bible in the Massachusetts language by Eliot, the verses from 25 to 32 in the thirtieth chapter of Proverbs,[1] are expressed by 'an ant, a coney, a locust, a spider, a river (symbol of motion), a lion, a greyhound, a he-goat and a king, a man foolishly lifting himself to take hold of the heavens.' No doubt such symbols would help the reader to remember the

[1] Proverbs xxx. 25-32. 'The *ants* are a people not strong, yet they prepare their meat in the summer;

'The *conies* are but a feeble folk, yet make they their houses in the rocks;

'The *locusts* have no king, yet go they forth all of them by bands;

'The *spider* taketh hold with her hands, and is in king's palaces.

'There be three things which *go well*, yea, four are comely in going;

'A *lion*, which is strongest among beasts, and turneth not away for any;

'A *greyhound*; an *he-goat* also; and a *king*, against whom there is no rising up.

'If thou hast done *foolishly in lifting up thyself*, or if thou hast thought evil, lay thine hand upon thy mouth.'

proper order of the verses, but they would be perfectly useless without a commentary or without a previous knowledge of the text.

We are told that the famous Testéra, brother of the chamberlain of François I., who came to America eight or nine years after the taking of Mexico, finding it impossible to learn the language of the natives, taught them the Bible history and the principal doctrines of the Christian religion by means of pictures, and that these diagrams produced a greater effect on the minds of the people, who were accustomed to this style of representation, than all other means employed by the missionaries. But here again, unless these pictures were explained by interpreters, they could by themselves convey no meaning to the gazing crowds of the natives. The fullest information on this subject is to be found in a work by T. Baptiste, 'Hiéroglyphes de la conversion, où par des estampes et des figures on apprend aux naturels à desirer le ciel.'

There is no evidence to show that the Indians of the North ever advanced beyond the rude attempts which we have thus described, and of which numerous specimens may be found in the voluminous work of Schoolcraft, published by authority of Congress, 'Historical and Statistical Information respecting the History, Condition, and Prospects of the Indian Tribes of the United States,' Philadelphia, 1851–1855. There is, in fact, no trace of anything like literature among the wandering tribes of the North, and until a real 'Livre des Sauvages' turns up to fill this gap, they must continue to be classed among the illiterate races.[1]

[1] *Manuscrit Pictographique*, pp. 26, 29.

It is very different if we turn our eyes to the people of Central and South America, to the races who formed the population of Mexico, Guatemala, and Peru, when conquered by the Spaniards. The Mexican hieroglyphics published by Lord Kingsborough are not to be placed in the same category with the totems and the pictorial scratches of the Red-skins. They are, first of all, of a much more artistic character, more conventional in their structure, and hence more definite in their meaning. They are coloured, written on paper, and in many respects quite on a level with the hieroglyphic inscriptions and hieratic papyri of Egypt. Even the conception of speaking to the ear through the eye, of expressing sound by means of outlines, was familiar to the Mexicans, though they seem to have applied their phonetic signs to the writing of the names of places and persons only. The principal object, indeed, of the Mexican hieroglyphic manuscripts was, not to convey new information, but rather to remind the reader by means of mnemonic artifices of what he had learnt beforehand. This is acknowledged by the best authorities, by men who knew the Indians shortly after their first intercourse with Europeans, and whom we may safely trust in what they tell us of the oral literature and hieroglyphic writings of the natives. Acosta, in his 'Historia natural y moral,' vi. 7, tells us that the Indians were still in the habit of reciting from memory the addresses and speeches of their ancient orators, and numerous songs composed by their national poets. As it was impossible to acquire these by means of hieroglyphics or written characters such as were used by the Mexicans, care was taken that those speeches and poems should be

learnt by heart. There were colleges and schools for that purpose, where these and other things were taught to the young by the aged, in whose memory they seemed to be engraved. The young men who were brought up to be orators themselves had to learn the ancient compositions word by word; and when the Spaniards came and taught them to read and write the Spanish language, the Indians soon began to write for themselves, a fact attested by many eye-witnesses.

Las Casas, the devoted friend of the Indians, writes as follows:—

'It ought to be known that in all the republics of this country, in the kingdoms of New Spain and elsewhere, there was amongst other professions, that of the chroniclers and historians. They possessed a knowledge of the earliest times, and of all things concerning religion, the gods, and their worship. They knew the founders of cities, and the early history of their kings and kingdoms. They knew the modes of election and the rights of succession; they could tell the number and characters of their ancient kings, their works, and memorable achievements whether good or bad, and whether they had governed well or ill. They knew the men renowned for virtue and heroism in former days, what wars they had waged, and how they had distinguished themselves; who had been the earliest settlers, what had been their ancient customs, their triumphs and defeats. They knew, in fact, whatever belonged to history; and were able to give an account of all the events of the past. . . . These chroniclers had likewise to calculate the days, months, and years; and though they had

no writing like our own, they had their symbols and characters through which they understood everything; they had their great books, which were composed with such ingenuity and art that our alphabet was really of no great assistance to them. . . . Our priests have seen those books, and I myself have seen them likewise, though many were burnt at the instigation of the monks, who were afraid that they might impede the work of conversion. Sometimes when the Indians who had been converted had forgotten certain words, or particular points of the Christian doctrine, they began—as they were unable to read our books—to write very ingeniously with their own symbols and characters, drawing the figures which corresponded either to the ideas or to the sounds of our words. I have myself seen a large portion of the Christian doctrine written in figures and images, which they read as we read the characters of a letter; and this is a very extraordinary proof of their genius. . . . There never was a lack of those chroniclers. It was a profession which passed from father to son, highly respected in the whole republic. Each historian instructed two or three of his relatives. He made them practise constantly, and they had recourse to him whenever a doubt arose on a point of history. . . . But not these young historians only went to consult him; kings, princes, and priests came to ask his advice. Whenever there was a doubt as to ceremonies, precepts of religion, religious festivals or anything of importance in the history of the ancient kingdoms, everyone went to the chroniclers to ask for information.'

In spite of the religious zeal of Dominican and

Franciscan friars, a few of these hieroglyphic MSS. escaped the flames, and may now be seen in some of our public libraries, as curious relics of a nearly extinct and forgotten literature. The first collection of these MSS. and other American antiquities was due to the zeal of the Milanese antiquarian, Boturini, who had been sent by the Pope in 1736 to regulate some ecclesiastical matters, and who devoted the eight years of his stay in the New World to rescuing whatever could be rescued from the scattered ruins of ancient America. Before, however, he could bring these treasures safe to Europe, he was despoiled of his valuables by the Spanish Viceroy; and when at last he made his escape with the remnants of his collection, he was taken prisoner by an English cruiser, and lost everything. The collection, which remained at Mexico, became the subject of several lawsuits, and after passing through the hands of Veytia and Gama, who both added to it considerably, it was sold at last by public auction. Humboldt, who was at that time passing through Mexico, acquired some of the MSS., which he gave to the Royal Museum at Berlin. Others found their way into private hands, and after many vicissitudes they have mostly been secured by the public libraries or private collectors of Europe. The most valuable part of that unfortunate shipwreck is now in the hands of M. Aubin, who was sent to Mexico in 1830 by the French Government, and who devoted nearly twenty years to the same work which Boturini had commenced a hundred years before. He either bought the dispersed fragments of the collections of Boturini, Gama, and Pichardo, or procured accurate copies;

and he has brought to Europe what is, if not the most complete, at least the most valuable and most judiciously arranged collection of American antiquities. We likewise owe to M. Aubin the first accurate knowledge of the real nature of the ancient Mexican writing; and we look forward with confident hope to his still achieving in his own field as great a triumph as that of Champollion, the decipherer of the hieroglyphics of Egypt.

One of the most important helps towards the deciphering of the hieroglyphic MSS. of the Americans is to be found in certain books which, soon after the conquest of Mexico, were written down by natives who had learnt the art of alphabetic writing from their conquerors, the Spaniards. Ixtlilxochitl, descended from the royal family of Tetzcuco, and employed as interpreter by the Spanish Government, wrote the history of his own country from the earliest time to the arrival of Cortez. In writing this history he followed the hieroglyphic paintings as they had been explained to him by the old chroniclers. Some of these very paintings, which formed the text-book of the Mexican historian, have been recovered by M. Aubin; and as they once helped the historian in writing his history, that history now helps the scholar in deciphering their meaning.

It is with the study of works like that of Ixtlilxochitl that American philology ought to begin. They are to the student of American antiquities what Manetho is to the student of Egyptian hieroglyphics, or Berosus to the decipherer of the cuneiform inscriptions. They are written in dialects not more than three hundred years old, and still spoken by large numbers

of natives, with such modifications as three centuries are certain to produce. They give us whatever was known of history, mythology, and religion among the people whom the Spaniards found in Central and South America in the possession of most of the advantages of a long-established civilisation. Though we must not expect to find in them what we are accustomed to call history, they are nevertheless of great historical interest, as supplying the vague outlines of a distant past, filled with migrations, wars, dynasties, and revolutions, such as were cherished in the memory of the Greeks at the time of Solon, and believed in by the Romans at the time of Cato. They teach us that the New World which was opened to Europe a few centuries ago was in its own eyes an old world, not so different in character and feelings from ourselves as we are apt to imagine when we speak of the Red-skins of America, or when we read the accounts of the Spanish conquerors, who denied that the natives of America possessed human souls, in order to establish their own right of treating them like wild beasts.

The 'Popol Vuh,' or the sacred book of the people of Guatemala, of which the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg has just published the original text, together with a literal French Translation, holds a very prominent rank among the works composed by natives in their own native dialects, and written down by them with the letters of the Roman alphabet. There are but two works that can be compared to it in their importance to the student of American antiquities and American languages—namely, the 'Codex Chimalpopoca' in Nahuatl, the ancient written lan-

guage of Mexico, and the 'Codex Cakchiquel' in the dialect of Guatemala. These, together with the work published by the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg under the title of 'Popol Vuh,' must form the starting-point of all critical inquiries into the antiquities of the American people.

The first point which has to be determined with regard to books of this kind is whether they are genuine or not; whether they are what they pretend to be—compositions about three centuries old, founded on the oral traditions and the pictographic documents of the ancient inhabitants of America, and written in the dialects which were spoken at the time of Columbus, Cortez, and Pizarro. What the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg has to say on this point amounts to this:—The manuscript was first discovered by Father Francisco Ximenes towards the end of the seventeenth century. He was curé of Santo-Tomas Chichicastenango, situated about three leagues south of Santa-Cruz del Quiché and twenty-two leagues north-east of Guatemala. He was well acquainted with the languages of the natives of Guatemala, and has left a dictionary of their three principal dialects, his 'Tesoro de las Lenguas Quiché, Cakchiquel y Tzutohil.' This work, which has never been printed, fills two volumes, the second of which contains the copy of the MS. discovered by Ximenes. Ximenes likewise wrote a history of the province of the preachers of San-Vincente de Chiapas y Guatemala, in four volumes. Of this he left two copies. But three volumes only were still in existence when the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg visited Guatemala, and they are said to contain valuable information on the

history and traditions of the country. The first volume contains the Spanish translation of the manuscript which occupies us at present. The Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg copied that translation in 1855. About the same time a German traveller, Dr. Scherzer, happened to be at Guatemala, and had copies made of the works of Ximenes. These were published at Vienna, in 1856.[1] The French Abbé, however, was not satisfied with a mere reprint of the text and its Spanish translation by Ximenes, a translation which he characterises as untrustworthy and frequently unintelligible. During his travels in America he acquired a practical knowledge of several of the native dialects, particularly of the Quiché, which is still spoken in various dialects by about six hundred thousand people. As a priest he was in daily intercourse with these people; and it was while residing among them and able to consult them like living dictionaries, that, with the help of the MSS. of Ximenes, he undertook his own translation of the ancient chronicles of the Quichés. From the time of the discovery of Ximenes, therefore, to the time of the publication of the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, all seems clear and satisfactory. But there is still a century to be accounted for, from the end of the sixteenth century, when the original is supposed to have been written, to the end of the seventeenth, when it was first discovered by Ximenes at Chichicastenango. These years are not yet bridged over. We may appeal, however, to the authority of the MS. itself, which carries the royal dynasties down to the

[1] Mr. A. Helps was the first to point out the importance of this work, in his excellent *History of the Spanish Conquest in America.*

Spanish Conquest, and ends with the names of the two princes, Don Juan de Rojas and Don Juan Cortes, the sons of Tecum and Tepepul. These princes, though entirely subject to the Spaniards, were allowed to retain the insignia of royalty to the year 1558, and it is shortly after their time that the MS. is supposed to have been written. The author himself says in the beginning that he wrote 'after the word of God (*chabal Dios*) had been preached, in the midst of Christianity; and that he did so because people could no longer see the "Popol Vuh," wherein it was clearly shown that they came from the other side of the sea, the account of our living in the land of shadow, and how we saw light and life.'

There is, therefore, no attempt at claiming for his work any extravagant age or mysterious authority. It is acknowledged to have been written when the Castilians were the rulers of the land; when bishops were preaching the word of Dios, the new God; when the ancient traditions of the people were gradually dying out. Even the title of 'Popol Vuh,' which the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg has given to this work, is not claimed for it by its author. He says that he wrote when the 'Popol Vuh' was no longer to be seen. 'Popol Vuh' means the book of the people, and referred to the traditional literature in which all that was known about the early history of the nation, their religion and ceremonies, was handed down from age to age.

It is to be regretted that the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg should have sanctioned the application of this name to the Quiché MS. discovered by Father Ximenes, and that he should apparently have trans-

lated it by 'Livre sacré' instead of 'Livre national,' or 'Libro del comun,' as proposed by Ximenes. Such small inaccuracies are sure to produce great confusion. Nothing but a desire to have a fine-sounding title could have led the editor to commit this mistake, for he himself confesses that the work published by him has no right to the title 'Popol Vuh,' and that 'Popol Vuh' does not mean 'Livre sacré.' Nor is there any more reason to suppose, with the learned Abbé, that the first two books of the Quiché MS. contain an almost literal transcript of the 'Popol Vuh,' or that the 'Popol Vuh' was the original of the 'Teo-Amoxtli,' or the sacred book of the Toltecs. All we know is, that the author wrote his anonymous work because the 'Popol Vuh'—the national book, or the national tradition—was dying out, and that he comprehended in the first two sections the ancient traditions common to the whole race, while he devoted the last two to the historical annals of the Quichés, the ruling nation at the time of the Conquest in what is now the republic of Guatemala. If we look at the MS. in this light, there is nothing at all suspicious in its character and its contents. The author wished to save from destruction the stories which he had heard as a child of his gods and his ancestors. Though the general outline of these stories may have been preserved partly in the schools, partly in the pictographic MSS., the Spanish Conquest had thrown everything into confusion, and the writer had probably to depend chiefly on his own recollections. To extract consecutive history from these recollections is simply impossible. All is vague, contradictory, miraculous, absurd. Consecutive history is

altogether a modern idea, of which few only of the ancient nations had any conception. If we had the exact words of the 'Popol Vuh,' we should probably find no more history there than we find in the Quiché MS. as it now stands. Now and then, it is true, one imagines one sees certain periods and landmarks, but in the next page all is chaos again. It may be difficult to confess that with all the traditions of the early migrations of Cecrops and Danaus into Greece, with the Homeric poems of the Trojan war, and the genealogies of the ancient dynasties of Greece, we know nothing of Greek history before the Olympiads, and very little even then. Yet the true historian does not allow himself to indulge in any illusions on this subject, and he shuts his eyes even to the most plausible reconstructions.

The same applies with a force increased a hundredfold to the ancient history of the aboriginal races of America, and the sooner this is acknowledged, the better for the credit of American scholars. Even the traditions of the migrations of the Chichimecs, Colhuas, and Nahuas, which form the staple of all American antiquarians, are no better than the Greek traditions about Pelasgians, Æolians, and Ionians; and it would be a mere waste of time to construct out of such elements a systematic history, only to be destroyed again sooner or later by some Niebuhr, Grote, or Lewis.

But if we do not find history in the stories of the ancient races of Guatemala, we do find materials for studying their character, for analysing their religion and mythology, for comparing their principles of morality, their views of virtue, beauty, and heroism,

with those of other races of mankind. This is the charm, the real and lasting charm, of such works as that presented to us for the first time in a trustworthy translation by the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg. Unfortunately, there is one circumstance which may destroy even this charm. It is just possible that the writers of this and other American MSS. may have felt more or less consciously the influence of European and Christian ideas, and if so, we have no sufficient guarantee that the stories they tell represent to us the American mind in its pristine and genuine form. There are some coincidences between the Old Testament and the Quiché MS. which are certainly startling. Yet even if a Christian influence has to be admitted, much remains in these American traditions which is so different from anything else in the national literatures of other countries, that we may safely treat it as the genuine growth of the intellectual soil of America. We shall give, in conclusion, some extracts to bear out our remarks; but we ought not to part with Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg without expressing to him our gratitude for the excellent work he has done, and without adding a hope that he may be able to realise his plan of publishing a 'Collection of documents written in the indigenous languages, to assist the student of the history and philology of ancient America,' a collection of which the work now published is to form the first volume.

Extracts from the 'Popol Vuh.'

The Quiché MS. begins with an account of the creation. If we read it in the literal translation

of the Abbé Brasseur de Bourbourg, with all the uncouth names of divine and other beings that have to act their parts in it, it does not leave any very clear impression on our minds. Yet after reading it again and again, some salient features stand out more distinctly, and make us feel that there was a groundwork of noble conceptions which has been covered and distorted by an aftergrowth of fantastic nonsense. We shall do best for the present to leave out all proper names, which only bewilder the memory and which convey no distinct meaning even to the scholar. It will require long-continued research before it can be determined whether the names so profusely applied to the Deity were intended as the names of so many distinct personalities, or as the names of the various manifestations of one and the same Power. At all events, they are of no importance to us till we can connect more distinct ideas than it is possible to gather from the materials now at hand, with such inharmonious sounds as Tzakol, Bitol, Alom, Qaholom, Hun-Ahpu-Vuch, Gucumatz, Quaz-Cho, &c. Their supposed meanings are in some cases very appropriate, such as the Creator, the Fashioner, the Begetter, the Vivifier, the Ruler, the Lord of the green planisphere, the Lord of the azure surface, the Heart of heaven. In other cases, however, we cannot fathom the original intention of names such as the feathered serpent, the white boar, *le tireur de sarbacane au sarigue*, and others; and they therefore sound to our ears simply absurd.

Well, the Quichés believed that there was a time when all that exists in heaven and earth was made. All was then in suspense, all was calm and silent;

all was immovable, all peaceful, and the vast space of the heavens was empty. There was no man, no animal, no shore, no trees; heaven alone existed. The face of the earth was not to be seen; there was only the still expanse of the sea and the heaven above. Divine Beings were on the waters like a growing light. Their voice was heard as they meditated and consulted, and when the dawn rose, man appeared. Then the waters were commanded to retire, the earth was established that she might bear fruit and that the light of day might shine on heaven and earth.

'For,' they said, 'we shall receive neither glory nor honour from all we have created until there is a human being—a being endowed with reason. "Earth," they said, and in a moment the earth was formed. Like a vapour it rose into being, mountains appeared from the waters like lobsters, and the great mountains were made. Thus was the creation of the earth, when it was fashioned by those who are the Heart of heaven, the Heart of the earth; for thus were they called who first gave fertility to them, heaven and earth being still inert and suspended in the midst of the waters.'

Then follows the creation of the brute world, and the disappointment of the gods when they command the animals to tell their names and to honour those who had created them. Then the gods said to the animals:—

'You will be changed, because you cannot speak. We have changed your speech. You shall have your food and your dens in the woods and crags; for our glory is not perfect, and you do not invoke us. There

will be beings still that can salute us; we shall make them capable of obeying. Do your task; as to your flesh, it will be broken by the tooth.'

Then follows the creation of man. His flesh was made of earth (*terre glaise*). But man was without cohesion or power, inert and aqueous; he could not turn his head, his sight was dim, and though he had the gift of speech, he had no intellect. He was soon consumed again in the water.

And the gods consulted a second time how to create beings that should adore them, and after some magic ceremonies, men were made of wood, and they multiplied. But they had no heart, no intellect, no recollection of their Creator; they did not lift up their heads to their Maker, and they withered away and were swallowed up by the waters.

Then follows a third creation, man being made of a tree called *tzité*, woman of the marrow of a reed called *sibac*. They, too, did neither think nor speak before him who had made them, and they were likewise swept away by the waters and destroyed. The whole nature—animals, trees, and stones—turned against men to revenge the wrongs they had suffered at their hands, and the only remnant of that early race is to be found in small monkeys which still live in the forests.

Then follows a story of a very different character, and which completely interrupts the progress of events. It has nothing to do with the creation, though it ends with two of its heroes being changed into sun and moon. It is a story very much like the fables of the Brahmans or the German *Mährchen*. Some of the principal actors in it are clearly divine

beings who have been brought down to the level of human nature, and who perform feats and tricks so strange and incredible that in reading them we imagine ourselves in the midst of the Arabian Nights. In the struggles of the two favourite heroes against the cruel princes of Xibalba, there may be reminiscences of historical events; but it would be perfectly hopeless to attempt to extricate these from the mass of fable by which they are surrounded. The chief interest of the American tale consists in the points of similarity which it exhibits with the tales of the Old World. We shall mention two only—the repeated resuscitation of the chief heroes, who, even when burnt and ground to powder and scattered on the water, are born again as fish and changed into men; and the introduction of animals endowed with reason and speech. As in the German and other tales, certain peculiarities in the appearance and natural habits of animals are frequently accounted for by events that happened 'once upon a time'—for instance, the stumpy tail of the bear, by his misfortune when he went out fishing on the ice—so we find in the American tales, 'that it was when the two principal heroes (Hun-Ahpu and Xbalanqué) had caught the rat and were going to strangle it over the fire, that *le rat commença à porter une queue sans poil.* Thus, because a certain serpent swallowed a frog who was sent as a messenger, therefore *aujourd'hui encore les serpents engloutissent les crapauds.*

The story, which well deserves the attention of those who are interested in the origin and spreading of popular tales, is carried on to the end of the second

book, and it is only in the third that we hear once more of the creation of man.

Three attempts, as we saw, had been made and had failed. We now hear again that before the beginning of dawn, and before the sun and moon had risen, man had been made, and that nourishment was provided for him which was to supply his blood —namely, yellow and white maize. Four men are mentioned as the real ancestors of the human race, or rather of the race of the Quichés. They were neither begotten by the gods nor born of woman, but their creation was a wonder wrought by the Creator. They could reason and speak, their sight was unlimited, and they knew all things at once. When they had rendered thanks to their Creator for their existence, the gods were frightened and they breathed a cloud over the eyes of men that they might see a certain distance only, and not be like the gods themselves. Then while the four men were asleep, the gods gave them beautiful wives, and these became the mothers of all tribes, great and small. These tribes, *both black and white*, lived and spread in the East. They did not yet worship the gods, but only turned their faces up to heaven, hardly knowing what they were meant to do here below. Their features were sweet, so was their language, and their intellect was strong.

We now come to a most interesting passage, which is intended to explain the confusion of tongues. No nation, except the Jews, has dwelt much on the problem why there should be many languages instead of one. Grimm, in his 'Essay on the Origin of Language,'

remarks: 'It may seem surprising that neither the ancient Greeks nor the ancient Indians attempted to propose or to solve the question as to the origin and the multiplicity of human speech. Holy Writ strove to solve at least one of these riddles, that of the multiplicity of languages, by means of the tower of Babel. I know only one other poor Esthonian legend which might be placed by the side of this Biblical solution. "The old god," they say, "when men found their first seats too narrow, resolved to spread them over the whole earth, and to give to each nation its own language. For this purpose he placed a caldron of water on the fire, and commanded the different races to approach it in order, and to select for themselves the sounds which were uttered by the singing of the water in its confinement and torture."'

Grimm might have added another legend which is current among the Thlinkithians, and was clearly framed in order to account for the existence of different languages. The Thlinkithians are one of the four principal races inhabiting Russian America. They are called Kaljush, Koljush, or Kolosh by the Russians, and inhabit the coast from about 60° to 45° N.L., reaching, therefore, across the Russian frontier as far as the Columbia River, and they likewise hold many of the neighbouring islands. Weniaminow estimates their number, both in the Russian and English colonies, at 20,000 to 25,000. They are evidently a decreasing race, and their legends, which seem to be numerous and full of original ideas, would well deserve the careful attention of American ethnologists. Wrangel suspected a relationship between them and the Aztecs of Mexico. These Thlinkithians

believe in a general flood or deluge, and that men saved themselves in a large floating building. When the waters fell, the building was wrecked on a rock, and by its own weight burst into two pieces. Hence, they say, arose the difference of languages. The Thlinkithians with their language remained on one side; on the other side were all the other races of the earth.[1]

Neither the Esthonian nor the Thlinkithian legend, however, offers any striking points of coincidence with the Mosaic accounts. The analogies, therefore, as well as the discrepancies, between the ninth chapter of Genesis and the chapter here translated from the Quiché MS. require special attention:

'All had but one language, and they did not invoke as yet either wood or stones; they only remembered the word of the Creator, the Heart of heaven and earth.

'And they spoke while meditating on what was hidden by the spring of day; and full of the sacred word, full of love, obedience, and fear, they made their prayers, and lifting their eyes up to heaven, they asked for sons and daughters:—

'"Hail! O Creator and Fashioner, thou who seest and hearest us! do not forsake us, O God, who art in heaven and earth, Heart of the sky, Heart of the earth! Give us offspring and descendants as long as the sun and dawn shall advance. Let there be seed and light. Let us always walk on open paths, on roads where there is no ambush. Let us always be quiet and in peace with those who are ours. May

[1] Holmberg, *Ethnographische Skizzen über die Völker des Russischen Amerika.* Helsingfors, 1855.

our lives run on happily. Give us a life secure from reproach. Let there be seed for harvest, and let there be light."

'They then proceeded to the town of Tulan, where they received their gods.

'And when all the tribes were there gathered together, their speech was changed, and they did not understand each other after they arrived at Tulan. It was there that they separated, and some went to the East, others came here. Even the language of the four ancestors of the human race became different. "Alas," they said, "we have left our language. How has this happened? We are ruined! How could we have been led into error? We had but one language when we came to Tulan; our form of worship was but one. What we have done is not good," replied all the tribes in the woods, and under the lianas.'

The rest of the work, which consists altogether of four books, is taken up with an account of the migrations of the tribes from the East, and their various settlements. The four ancestors of the race seem to have had a long life, and when at last they came to die, they disappeared in a mysterious manner, and left to their sons what is called the Hidden Majesty, which was never to be opened by human hands. What this Hidden Majesty was we do not know.

There are many subjects of interest in the chapters which follow, only we must not look there for history, though the author evidently accepts as truly historical what he tells us about the successive generations of kings. But when he brings us down at last, after sundry migrations, wars, and rebellions,

to the arrival of the Castilians, we find that between the first four ancestors of the human or of the Quiché race and the last of their royal dynasties, there intervene only fourteen generations, and the author, whoever he was, ends with the confession :—

'This is all that remains of the existence of Quiché; for it is impossible to see the book in which formerly the kings could read everything, as it has disappeared. It is over with all those of Quiché! It is now called Santa Cruz!'

XXI.

SEMITIC MONOTHEISM.

A WORK such as M. Renan's 'Histoire Générale et Système Comparé des Langues Sémitiques' can only be reviewed chapter by chapter. It contains a survey, not only, as its title would lead us to suppose, of the Semitic languages, but of the Semitic languages and nations; and considering that the whole history of the civilised world has hitherto been acted by two races only, the Semitic and the Aryan, with occasional interruptions produced by the inroads of the Turanian races, M. Renan's work comprehends in reality half of the history of the ancient world. We have received as yet the first volume only of this important work, and before the author had time to finish the second, he was called upon to publish a second edition of the first, which appeared in 1858, with important additions and alterations.

In writing the history of the Semitic race it is necessary to lay down certain general characteristics common to all the members of that race, before we can speak of nations so widely separated from

[1] *Histoire Générale et Système Comparé des Langues Sémitiques.* Par Ernest Renan, Membre de l'Institut. Seconde édition. Paris, 1858.

Nouvelles Considérations sur le Caractère Général des Peuples Sémitiques, et en particulier sur leur Tendance au Monothéisme. Par Ernest Renan. Paris, 1859.

each other as the Jews, the Babylonians, Phœnicians, Carthaginians, and Arabs, as one race or family. The most important bond which binds these scattered tribes together into one ideal whole is to be found in their language. There can be as little doubt that the dialects of all the Semitic nations are derived from one common type as there is about the derivation of French, Spanish, and Italian from Latin, or of Latin, Greek, German, Celtic, Slavonic, and Sanskrit from the primitive idiom of the ancestors of the Aryan race. The evidence of language would by itself be quite sufficient to establish the fact that the Semitic nations descended from common ancestors, and constitute, what, in the science of language, may be called a distinct race. But M. Renan was not satisfied with this single criterion of the relationship of the Semitic tribes, and he has endeavoured to draw, partly from his own observations, partly from the suggestions of other scholars, such as Ewald and Lassen, a more complete portrait of the Semitic man. This was no easy task. It was like drawing the portrait of a whole family, omitting all that is peculiar to each individual member, and yet preserving the features which constitute the general family likeness. The result has been what might be expected. Critics most familiar with one or the other branch of the Semitic family, have each and all protested that they can see no likeness in the portrait. It seems to some to contain features which it ought not to contain; whereas others miss the very expression which appears to them most striking.[1]

[1] *Cf.* Francis Galton, 'Composite Portraits,' *Journal of the Anthropological Institute*, 1879, p. 132.

The following is a short abstract of what M. Renan considers the salient points in the Semitic character:—

'Their character,' he says, 'is religious rather than political, and the mainspring of their religion is the conception of the unity of God. Their religious phraseology is simple, and free from mythological elements. Their religious feelings are strong, exclusive, intolerant, and sustained by a fervour which finds its peculiar expression in prophetic visions. Compared to the Aryan nations, they are found deficient in scientific and philosophical originality. Their poetry is chiefly subjective or lyrical, and we look in vain among their poets for excellence in epic and dramatic compositions. Painting and the plastic arts have never arrived at a higher than the decorative stage. Their political life has remained patriarchal and despotic, and their inability to organise on a large scale has deprived them of the means of military success. Perhaps the most general feature of their character is a negative one—their inability to perceive the general and the abstract, whether in thought, language, religion, poetry, or politics; and, on the other hand, a strong attraction towards the individual and personal, which makes them monotheistic in religion, lyrical in poetry, monarchical in politics, abrupt in style, and useless for speculation.'

One cannot look at this bold and rapid outline of the Semitic character without perceiving how many points it contains which are open to doubt and discussion. We shall confine our remarks to one point, which, in our mind, and, as far we can see, in

M. Renan's mind likewise, is the most important of all—namely, the supposed monotheistic tendency of the Semitic race. M. Renan asserts that this tendency belongs to the race by instinct—that it forms the rule, not the exception; and he seems to imply that without it the human race would never have arrived at the knowledge or worship of the One God.

If such a remark had been made fifty years ago, it would have roused little or no opposition. 'Semitic' was then used in a more restricted sense, and hardly comprehended more than the Jews and Arabs. Of this small group of people it might well have been said, with such limitations as are tacitly implied in every general proposition on the character of individuals or nations, that the work set apart for them by a Divine Providence in the history of the world was the preaching of a belief in one God. Three religions have been founded by members of that more circumscribed Semitic family—the Jewish, the Christian, the Mohammedan; and all three proclaim, with the strongest accent, the doctrine that there is but one God.

Of late, however, not only have the limits of the Semitic family been considerably extended, so as to embrace several nations notorious for their idolatrous worship, but the history of the Jewish and Arab tribes has been explored so much more fully that even there traces of a widespread tendency to polytheism have come to light.

The Semitic family is divided by M. Renan into two great branches, differing from each other in the form of their monotheistic belief, yet both, according

to their historian, imbued from the beginning with the instinctive faith in one God :—

1. The nomad branch, consisting of Arabs, Hebrews, and the neighbouring tribes of Palestine, commonly called the descendants of Terah ; and

2. The political branch, including the nations of Phœnicia, of Syria, Mesopotamia, and Yemen.

Can it be said that all these nations, comprising the worshippers of Elohim, Jehovah, Moloch, Nisroch, Rimmon, Nebo, Dagon, Ashtaroth, Baal or Bel, Baal-peor, Baal-zebub, Chemosh, Milcom, Adrammelech, Annamelech, Nibhaz and Tartak, Ashima, Nergal, Succoth-benoth, the Sun, Moon, planets, and all the host of heaven, were endowed with a monotheistic instinct? M. Renan admits that monotheism has always had its principal bulwark in the nomadic branch, but he maintains that it has by no means been so unknown among the members of the political branch as is commonly supposed. But where are the criteria by which, in the same manner as their dialects, the religions of the Semitic races could be distinguished from the religions of the Aryan and Turanian races? We can recognise any Semitic dialect by the triliteral character of its roots. Is it possible to discover similar radical elements in all the forms of faith, primary or secondary, primitive or derivative, of the Semitic tribes? M. Renan thinks that it is. He imagines that he hears the key-note of a pure monotheism through all the wild shoutings of the priests of Baal and other Semitic idols, and he denies the presence of that key-note in any of the religious systems of the Aryan nations, whether Greeks or Romans, Germans or Celts, Hindus or

Persians. Such an assertion could not but rouse considerable opposition, and so strong seems to have been the remonstrances addressed to M. Renan by several of his colleagues in the French Institute that, without awaiting the publication of the second volume of his great work, he has thought it right to publish part of it as a separate pamphlet. In his 'Nouvelles Considérations sur le Caractère Général des Peuples Sémitiques, et en particulier sur leur Tendance au Monothéïsme,' he endeavours to silence the objections raised against the leading idea of his history of the Semitic race. It is an essay which exhibits, not only the comprehensive knowledge of the scholar, but the warmth and alacrity of the advocate. With M. Renan the monotheistic character of the descendants of Shem is not only a scientific tenet, but a moral conviction. He wishes that his whole work should stand or fall with this thesis, and it becomes, therefore, all the more the duty of the critic to inquire whether the arguments which he brings forward in support of his favourite idea are valid or not.

It is but fair to M. Renan that, in examining his statements, we should pay particular attention to any slight modifications which he may himself have adopted in his last memoir. In his history he asserts with great confidence, and somewhat broadly, that 'le monothéisme résume et explique tous les caractères de la race Sémitique.' In his later pamphlet he is more cautious. As an experienced pleader, he is ready to make many concessions in order to gain all the more readily our assent to his general proposition. He points out himself with great can-

dour the weaker points of his argument, though, of course, only in order to return with unabated courage to his first position—that of all the races of mankind the Semitic race alone was endowed with the instinct of monotheism. As it is impossible to deny the fact that the Semitic nations, in spite of this supposed monotheistic instinct, were frequently addicted to the most degraded forms of a polytheistic idolatry, and that even the Jews, the most monotheistic of all, frequently provoked the anger of the Lord by burning incense to other gods, M. Renan remarks that when he speaks of a nation in general he only speaks of the intellectual aristocracy of that nation. He appeals in self-defence to the manner in which historians lay down the character of modern nations. 'The French,' he says, 'are repeatedly called "*une nation spirituelle*," and yet no one would wish to assert either that every Frenchman is *spirituel*, or that no one could be *spirituel* who is not a Frenchman.' Now, here we may grant to M. Renan that if we speak of '*esprit*' we naturally think of the intellectual minority only, and not of the whole bulk of a nation; but if we speak of religion, the case is different. If we say that the French believe in one God only, or that they are Christians, we speak not only of the intellectual aristocracy of France but of every man, woman, and child born and bred in France. Even if we say that the French are Roman Catholics, we do so only because we know that there is a decided majority in France in favour of that unreformed system of Christianity. But if, because some of the most distinguished writers of France have paraded their contempt for all religious dogmas,

we were to say broadly that the French are a nation without religion, we should justly be called to order for abusing the legitimate privilege of generalisation. The fact that Abraham, Moses, Elijah, and Jeremiah were firm believers in one God could not be considered sufficient to support the general proposition that the Jewish nation was monotheistic by instinct. And if we remember that among the other Semitic races we should look in vain for even four such names, the case would seem to be desperate to any one but M. Renan.

We cannot believe that M. Renan would be satisfied with the admission that there had been among the Jews a few leading men who believed in one God, or that the existence of but one God was an article of faith not quite unknown among the other Semitic races; yet he has hardly proved more. He has collected, with great learning and ingenuity, all traces of monotheism in the annals of the Semitic nations; but he has taken no pains to discover the traces of polytheism, whether faint or distinct, which are disclosed in the same annals. In acting the part of an advocate he has for a time divested himself of the nobler character of the historian.

If M. Renan had looked with equal zeal for the scattered vestiges both of a monotheistic and of a polytheistic worship, he would have drawn, perhaps, a less striking, but we believe a more faithful, portrait of the Semitic man. We may accept all the facts of M. Renan, for his facts are almost always to be trusted; but we cannot accept his conclusions, because they would be in contradiction to other facts which M. Renan places too much in the background,

or ignores altogether. Besides, there is something in the very conclusions to which he is driven by his too partial evidence which jars on our ears, and betrays a want of harmony in the premisses on which he builds. Taking his stand on the fact that the Jewish race was the first of all the nations of the world to arrive at the knowledge of one God, M. Renan proceeds to argue that, if their monotheism had been the result of a persevering mental effort —if it had been a discovery like the philosophical or scientific discoveries of the Greeks, it would be necessary to admit that the Jews surpassed all other nations of the world in intellect and vigour of speculation. This, he admits, is contrary to fact:—

'Apart la supériorité de son culte, le peuple juif n'en a aucune autre; c'est un des peuples les moins doués pour la science et la philosophie parmi les peuples de l'antiquité; il n'a une grande position ni politique ni militaire. Ses institutions sont purement conservatrices; les prophètes qui représentent excellemment son génie, sont des hommes essentiellement réactionnaires, se reportant toujours vers un idéal antérieur. Comment expliquer, au sein d'une société aussi étroite et aussi peu développée, une révolution d'idées qu'Athènes et Alexandrie n'ont pas réussi à accomplir?'

M. Renan then defines the monotheism of the Jews, and of the Semitic nations in general, as the result of a low rather than of a high state of intellectual cultivation: 'Il s'en faut,' he writes (p. 40), 'que le monothéisme soit le produit d'une race qui a des idées exaltées en fait de religion; c'est en réalite le fruit d'une race qui a peu de besoins religieux.

C'est comme *minimum* de religion, en fait de dogmes et en fait de pratiques extérieures, que le monothéisme est surtout accommodé aux besoins des populations nomades.'

But even this *minimum* of religious reflection, which is required, according to M. Renan, for the perception of the unity of God, he grudges to the Semitic nations, and he is driven in the end (p. 73) to explain the Semitic Monotheism as the result of a *religious instinct*, analogous to the instinct which led each race to the formation of its own language.

Here we miss the clearness and precision which distinguish most of M. Renan's works. It is always dangerous to transfer expressions from one branch of knowledge to another. The word 'instinct' has its legitimate application in natural history, where it is used of the unconscious acts of unconscious beings. We say that birds build their nests by instinct, that fishes swim by instinct, that cats catch mice by instinct; and, though no natural philosopher has yet explained what instinct is, yet we accept the term as a conventional expression for an unknown power working in the animal world.

If we transfer this word to the unconscious acts of conscious beings, we must necessarily alter its definition. We may speak of an instinctive motion of the arm, but we only mean a motion which has become so habitual as to require no longer any special effort of the will.

If, however, we transfer the word to the conscious thoughts of conscious beings, we strain the word beyond its natural capacities, and use it in order to avoid other terms which would commit us to the

admission either of innate ideas or inspired truths. We use a word in order to avoid a definition. It may sound more scientific to speak of a monotheistic instinct rather than of the inborn image or the revealed truth of the One living God; but is instinct less mysterious than revelation? Can there be an instinct without an instigation or an instigator? And whose hand was it that instigated the Semitic mind to the worship of one God? Could the same hand have instigated the Aryan mind to the worship of many gods? Could the monotheistic instinct of the Semitic race, if an instinct, have been so frequently obscured, or the polytheistic instinct of the Aryan race, if an instinct, so completely annihilated, as to allow the Jews to worship on all the high places round Jerusalem, and the Greeks and Romans to become believers in Christ? Fishes never fly, and cats never catch frogs. These are the difficulties into which we are led; and they arise simply and solely from our using words for their sound rather than for their meaning. We begin by playing with words, but in the end the words will play with us.

There are, in fact, various kinds of monotheism, and it becomes our duty to examine more carefully what they mean and how they arise. There is one kind of monotheism, though it would more properly be called theism, or henotheism, which forms the birthright of every human being. What distinguishes man from all other creatures, and not only raises him above the animal world, but removes him altogether from the confines of a merely natural existence, is the feeling of sonship inherent in and inseparable from human nature. That feeling may find expression in

a thousand ways, but there breathes through all of them the inextinguishable conviction, 'It is He that hath made us, and not we ourselves.' That feeling of sonship may with some races manifest itself in fear and trembling, and it may drive whole generations into religious madness and devil-worship. In other countries it may tempt the creature into a fatal familiarity with the Creator, and end in an apotheosis of man, or a headlong plunging of the human into the divine. It may take, as with the Jews, the form of a simple assertion that 'Adam was the son of God,'[1] or it may be clothed in the mythological phraseology of the Hindus, that Manu, or man, was the descendant of Svayambhû, the Self-existing. But, in some form or other, the feeling of dependence on a higher Power breaks through in all the religions of the world, and explains to us the meaning of St. Paul, 'that God, though in times past He suffered all nations to walk in their own ways, nevertheless He left not Himself without witness, in that He did good and gave us rain from heaven, and fruitful seasons, filling our hearts with food and gladness.'

This primitive intuition of God and the ineradicable feeling of dependence on God, could only have been the result of a primitive revelation, if only we take that word in its simplest and truest sense. Man, who owed his existence to an unknown power which he called God, saw and felt that God as the only source of his own and of all other existence. By the act of creation, God had revealed Himself. There He was, manifested in His works, in all His majesty and power, before the face of those to whom He had

[1] Genesis, v. 1, 2; Luke iii. 38.

given eyes to see and ears to hear, and into whose nostrils He had breathed the breath of life, even the Spirit of God.

This primitive intuition of God, however, was in itself neither monotheistic nor polytheistic, though it might become either, according to the expression which it took in the languages of man. It was this primitive intuition which supplied either the subject or the predicate in all the religions of the world, and without it no religion, whether true or false, whether revealed or natural, could have had even its first beginning. It is too often forgotten by those who believe that a polytheistic worship was the most natural unfolding of religious life, that polytheism must everywhere have been preceded by a more or less conscious theism. In no language does the plural exist before the singular. No human mind could have conceived the idea of gods without having previously conceived the idea of a god. It would be, however, quite as great a mistake to imagine, because the idea of a god must exist previously to that of gods, that therefore a belief in One God preceded everywhere the belief in many gods. A belief in God as exclusively One, involves a distinct negation of more than one God, and that negation is possible only after the conception, whether real or imaginary, of many gods.

The primitive intuition of the Godhead is neither monotheistic nor polytheistic, and it finds its most natural expression in the simplest and yet the most important article of faith—that God is God. This must have been the faith of the ancestors of mankind previously to any division of race or confusion of tongues. It might seem, indeed, as if in such a faith

the oneness of God, though not expressly asserted, was implied, and that it existed, though latent, in the first revelation of God. History, however, proves that the question of oneness was yet undecided in that primitive faith, and that the intuition of God was not yet secured against the illusions of a double vision. There are, in reality, two kinds of oneness which, when we enter into metaphysical discussions, must be carefully distinguished, and which for practical purposes are well kept separate by the definite and indefinite articles. There is one kind of oneness which does not exclude the idea of plurality; there is another which does. When we say that Cromwell was a Protector of England, we do not assert that he was the only protector. But if we say that he was the Protector of England, it is understood that he was the only man who enjoyed that title. If, therefore, an expression had been given to that primitive intuition of the Deity which is the mainspring of all later religion, it would have been—'There is a God,' but not yet 'There is but "One God."' The latter form of faith, the belief in One God, is properly called monotheism, whereas the term of henotheism would best express the faith in a single god.

We must bear in mind that we are here speaking of a period in the history of mankind when, together with the awakening of ideas, the first attempts only were being made at expressing the simplest conceptions by means of a language most simple, most sensuous, and most unwieldy. There was as yet no word sufficiently reduced by the wear and tear of thought to serve as an adequate expression for the

abstract idea of an immaterial and supernatural Being. There were words for walking and shouting, for cutting and burning, for dog and cow, for house and wall, for sun and moon, for day and night. Every object was called by some quality which had struck the eye as most peculiar and characteristic. But what quality should be predicated of that Being of which man knew as yet nothing but its existence? Language possessed as yet no auxiliary verbs. The very idea of being without the attributes of quality or action had never entered into the human mind. How then was that Being to be called which had revealed its existence, and continued to make itself felt by everything that most powerfully impressed the awakening mind, but which as yet was known only like a subterraneous spring by the waters which it poured forth with inexhaustible strength? When storm and lightning drove a father with his helpless family to seek refuge in the forests, and the fall of mighty trees crushed at his side those who were most dear to him, there were, no doubt, feelings of terror and awe, of helplessness and dependence, in the human heart which burst forth in a shriek for pity or help from the only Being that could command the storm. But there was no name by which He could be called. There might be names for the storm-wind and the thunderbolt, but these were not the names applicable to Him that rideth upon the heaven of heavens, which were of old. Again, when after a wild and tearful night the sun dawned in the morning, smiling on man—when after a dreary and death-like winter, spring came again with its sunshine

and flowers, there were feelings of joy and gratitude, of love and adoration in the heart of every human being;—but though there were names for the sun and the spring, for the bright sky and the brilliant dawn, there was no word by which to call the source of all this gladness, the giver of light and life.

At the time when we may suppose that the first attempts at finding a name for God were made, the divergence of the languages of mankind had commenced. We cannot dwell here on the causes which led to the multiplicity of human speech; but whether we look on the confusion of tongues as a natural or supernatural event, it was an event which the science of language has proved to have been inevitable. The ancestors of the Semitic and the Aryan nations had long become unintelligible to each other in their conversations on the most ordinary topics, when they each in their own way began to look for a proper name for God. Now, one of the most striking differences between the Aryan and the Semitic forms of speech was this:—In the Semitic languages the roots expressive of the predicates which were to serve as the proper names of any subjects, remained so distinct within the body of a word, that those who used the word were unable to forget its predicative meaning, and retained in most cases a distinct consciousness of its appellative power. In the Aryan languages, on the contrary, the significative element, or the root of a word, was apt to become so completely absorbed by the derivative elements, whether prefixes or suffixes, that most substantives ceased almost immediately to be appella-

tive, and were changed into mere names or proper names. What we mean can best be illustrated by the fact that the dictionaries of Semitic languages are mostly arranged according to their roots. When we wish to find the meaning of a word in Hebrew or Arabic, we first try to discover its root, whether triliteral or biliteral, and then look in the dictionary for that root and its derivatives. In the Aryan languages, on the contrary, such an arrangement would be extremely inconvenient. In many words it is impossible to detect the radical element. In others, after the root is discovered, we find that it has not given birth to any other derivatives which would throw their converging rays of light on its radical meaning. In other cases, again, such seems to have been the boldness of the original name-giver that we can hardly enter into the idiosyncrasy which assigned such a name to such an object.

This peculiarity of the Semitic and Aryan languages must have had the greatest influence on the formation of their religious phraseology. The Semitic man would call on God in adjectives only, or in words which always conveyed a predicative meaning. Every one of his words was more or less predicative, and he was therefore restricted in his choice to such words as expressed some one or other of the abstract qualities of the Deity. The Aryan man was less fettered in his choice. Let us take an instance. Being startled by the sound of thunder, he would at first express his impression by the single phrase, *It thunders*—*βρουτᾷ*. Here the idea of God is understood rather than expressed, very much in the same manner as the Semitic proper names Zabd (present),

Abd (servant), Aus (present), are habitually used for Abd-allah, Zabd-allah, Aus-allah, — the servant of God, the gift of God. It would be more in accordance with the feelings and thoughts of those who first used these so-called impersonal verbs to translate them by *He thunders, He rains, He snows.* Afterwards, instead of the simple impersonal verb *He thunders,* another expression naturally suggested itself. The thunder came from the sky, the sky was frequently called Dyaus (the bright one), in Greek Ζεύς; and though it was not the bright sky which thundered, but the dark, yet Dyaus had already ceased to be an expressive predicate, it had become a traditional name, and hence there was nothing to prevent an Aryan man from saying Dyaus, or the sky, *thunders,* in Greek Ζεὺς βροντᾷ. Let us here mark the almost irresistible influence of language on the mind. The word Dyaus, which at first meant *bright,* had lost its radical meaning, and now meant simply *sky.* It then entered into a new stage. The idea which had first been expressed by the pronoun or the termination of the third person, *He thunders,* was taken up into the word Dyaus, or *sky. He thunders,* and Dyaus *thunders,* became synonymous expressions, and by the mere habit of speech *He* became Dyaus, and Dyaus became *He.* Henceforth Dyaus remained as an appellative of that unseen though ever present Power, which had revealed its existence to man from the beginning, but which remained without a name long after every beast of the field and every fowl of the air had been named by Adam.

Now, what happened in this instance with the name of Dyaus, happened again and again with other names. When men felt the presence of God in the great and strong wind, in the earthquake, or the fire, they said at first, *He storms*, *He shakes*, *He burns*. But they likewise said, the storm (Marut) blows, the fire (Agni) burns, the subterraneous fire (*Vulcanus*) upheaves the earth. And after a time the result was the same as before, and the words meaning originally wind or fire were used, under certain restrictions, as names of the unknown God. As long as all these names were remembered as mere names or attributes of one and the same Divine Power, there was as yet no polytheism, though, no doubt, every new name threatened to obscure more and more the primitive intuition of God. At first, the names of God, like fetishes or statues, were honest attempts at expressing or representing an idea which could never find an adequate expression or representation. But as soon as they were drawn away from their original intention, the *eidolon*, or likeness, became an *idol*; the *nomen*, or name, lapsed into a *numen*, or *demon*. If the Greeks had remembered that Zeus was but a name or symbol of the Deity, there would have been no more harm in calling God by that name than by any other. If they had remembered that Kronos, and Uranos, and Apollon were all but so many attempts at naming the various sides, or manifestations, or aspects, or persons of the Deity, they might have used these names in the hours of their various needs, just as the Jews called on Jehovah Elohim, or on Jehovah

Säbaoth,[1] or as Roman Catholics implore the help of Nunziata, Dolores, and Notre-Dame-de-Grace.

What, then, is the difference between the Aryan and Semitic nomenclature for the Deity? Why are we told that the pious invocations of the Aryan world turned into a blasphemous mocking of the Deity, whereas the Semitic nations are supposed to have found from the first the true name of God? Before we look anywhere else for an answer to the question, we must look to language itself, and here we see that the Semitic dialects could never, by any possibility, have produced such names as the Sanskrit Dyaus (Zeus), Varuna (Uranos), Marut (Storm, Mars), or Ushas (Eos). They had no doubt names for the bright sky, for the tent of heaven, and for the dawn. But these names were so distinctly felt as appellatives, that they could never be thought of as proper names, whether as names of the Deity, or as names of deities. This peculiarity has been illustrated with great skill by M. Renan. We differ from him when he tries to explain the difference between the mythological phraseology of the Aryan and the theological phraseology of the Semitic races, by assigning to each a peculiar theological instinct. We cannot, in fact, see how the admission of such an instinct—*i.e.* of an unknown and incomprehensible Power—helps us in any way whatsoever to comprehend this curious mental process. His problem, however, is exactly the same as ours, and it would be impossible to state that problem in a more telling manner than he has done.

[1] See Cheyne, on Isaiah, cap. i., 'Appendix on Jehovah Sabâoth,' p. 11.

'The rain,' he says (p. 79), 'is represented, in all the primitive mythologies of the Aryan race, as the fruit of the embraces of Heaven and Earth.' 'The bright sky,' says Æschylus, in a passage which one might suppose was taken from the Vedas, 'loves to penetrate the earth; the earth on her part aspires to the heavenly marriage. Rain falling from the loving sky impregnates the earth, and she produces for mortals pastures of the flocks and the gifts of Ceres.' In the Book of Job,[1] on the contrary, it is God who tears open the waterskins of Heaven (xxxviii. 37), who opens the courses for the floods (*ibid.* 25), who engenders the drops of dew (*ibid.* 28):

'He draws towards Him the mists from the waters,
Which pour down as rain, and form their vapours.
Afterwards the clouds spread them out,
They fall as drops on the crowds of men.' (Job xxxvi. 27, 28.)

'He charges the night with damp vapours,
He drives before Him the thunder-bearing cloud.
It is driven to one side or the other by His command,
To execute all that He ordains
On the face of the universe,
Whether it be to punish His creatures
Or to make thereof a proof of His mercy.' (Job xxxvii. 11–13.)

Or, again, Proverbs xxx. 4:

'Who hath gathered the wind in His fists? Who

[1] We give the extracts according to M. Renan's translation of the Book of Job (Paris, 1859, Michel Lévy).

hath bound the waters in a garment? Who hath established all the ends of the earth? What is His name, and what is His Son's name, if thou canst tell?'

It has been shown by ample evidence from the Rig-Veda how many myths were suggested to the Aryan world by various names of the dawn, the day-spring of life. The language of the ancient Aryans of India had thrown out many names for that heavenly apparition, and every name, as it ceased to be understood, became, like a decaying seed, the germ of an abundant growth of myth and legend. Why should not the same have happened to the Semitic names for the dawn? Simply and solely because the Semitic words had no tendency to phonetic corruption; simply and solely because they continued to be felt as appellatives, and would inevitably have defeated every attempt at mythological phraseology such as we find in India and Greece. When the dawn is mentioned in the book of Job (ix. 7), it is God 'who commandeth the sun and it riseth not, and sealeth up the stars.' It is His power which causeth the day-spring to know its place, that it might take hold of the ends of the earth, that the wicked might be shaken out of it (Job xxxviii. 12, 13; Renan, 'Livre de Job,' pref. 71). Shahar, the dawn, never becomes an independent agent; she is never spoken of as Eos rising from the bed of her husband Tithonos (the setting sun), solely and simply because the word retained its power as an appellative, and thus could not enter into any mythological metamorphosis.

Even in Greece there are certain words which have remained so pellucid as to prove unfit for mythological refraction. *Selene* in Greek is so clearly the moon that her name would pierce through the darkest clouds of myth and fable. Call her *Hecate*, and she will bear any disguise, however fanciful. It is the same with the Latin *Luna*. She is too clearly the moon to be mistaken for anything else, but call her *Lucina*, and she will readily enter into various mythological phases. If, then, the names of sun and moon, of thunder and lightning, of light and day, of night and dawn could not yield to the Semitic races fit appellatives for the Deity, where were they to be found? If the names of Heaven or Earth jarred on their ears as names unfit for the Creator, where could they find more appropriate terms? They would not have objected to real names such as *Jupiter Optimus Maximus*, or Ζεὺς κύδιστος μέγιστος, if such words could have been framed in their dialects, and the names of Jupiter and Zeus could have been so ground down as to become synonymous with the general term for 'God.' Not even the Jews could have given a more exalted definition of the Deity than that of *Optimus Maximus*—the Best and the Greatest; and their very name of God, Jehovah, is generally supposed to mean no more than what the Peleiades of Dodona said of Zeus, Ζεὺς ἦν, Ζεὺς ἐστίν, Ζεὺς ἔσσεται· ὦ μεγάλε Ζεῦ, 'He was, He is, He will be, Oh great Zeus!' Not being able to form such substantives as Dyaus, or Varuna, or Indra, the descendants of Shem fixed on the predicates which in the Aryan prayers follow the name of the Deity, and called Him the Best and the Greatest, the Lord and

King. If we examine the numerous names of the Deity in the Semitic dialects we find that they are all adjectives, expressive of moral qualities. There is El, strong; Bel or Baal, Lord; Beel-samin, Lord of Heaven; Adonis (in Phœnicia), Lord; Marnas (at Gaza), our Lord; Shet, Master, afterwards a demon; Moloch, Milcom, Malika, King; Eliun, the Highest (the God of Melchisedek); Ram and Rimmon, the Exalted; and many more names, all originally adjectives and expressive of certain general qualities of the Deity, but all raised by one or other of the Semitic tribes to be the names of God or of that idea which the first breath of life, the first sight of this world, the first consciousness of existence, had for ever impressed and implanted in the human mind.

But do these names prove that the people who invented them had a clear and settled idea of the unity of the Deity? Do we not find among the Aryan nations that the same superlatives, the same names of Lord and King, of Master and Father, are used when the human mind is brought face to face with the Divine, and the human heart pours out in prayer and thanksgiving the feelings inspired by the presence of God? Brahman, in Sanskrit, meant originally Power, the same as El. It resisted for a long time the mythological contagion, but at last it yielded like all other names of God, and became the name of one God. By the first man who formed or fixed these names, Brahman, like El, and like every name of God, was meant, no doubt, as the best expression that could be found for the image reflected from the Creator upon the mind of the

creature. But in none of these words can we see any decided proof that those who framed them had arrived at the clear perception of One God, and were thus secured against the danger of polytheism. Like Dyaus, like Indra, like Brahman, Baal and El and Moloch were names of God, but not yet of the One God.

And we have only to follow the history of these Semitic names in order to see that, in spite of their superlative meaning, they proved no stronger bulwarks against polytheism than the Latin *Optimus Maximus*. The very names which we saw explained before as meaning the Highest, the Lord, the Master, are represented in the Phœnician mythology as standing to each other in the relation of Father and Son. (Renan, p. 60.) There is hardly one single Semitic tribe which did not at times forget the original meaning of the names by which they called on God. If the Jews had remembered the meaning of El, the Omnipotent, they could not have worshipped Baal, the Lord, as different from El. But as the Aryan tribes bartered the names of their gods, and were glad to add the worship of Zeus to that of Uranos, the worship of Apollon to that of Zeus, the worship of Hermes to that of Apollon, the Semitic nations likewise were ready to try the gods of their neighbours. If there had been in the Semitic race a truly monotheistic instinct, the history of those nations would become perfectly unintelligible. Nothing is more difficult to overcome than an instinct: *naturam expellas furcâ, tamen usque recurret.* But the history even of the Jewish race is made up of an almost uninterrupted series of relapses from monotheism into

polytheism and of repentant returns from polytheism to monotheism.

Let us admit, on the contrary, that God had in the beginning revealed Himself in the same manner to the ancestors of the whole human race. Let us then observe the natural divergence of the languages of man, and consider the peculiar difficulties that had to be overcome in framing names for God, and the peculiar manner in which they were overcome in the Semitic and Aryan languages, and everything that follows will be intelligible. If we consider the abundance of synonyms into which all ancient languages burst out at their first starting—if we remember that there were hundreds of names for the earth and the sky, the sun and the moon, we shall not be surprised at meeting with more than one name for God both among the Semitic and the Aryan nations. If we consider how easily the radical or significative elements of words were absorbed and obscured in the Aryan, and how they stood out in bold relief in the Semitic languages, we shall appreciate the difficulty which the Shemites experienced in framing any name that should not seem to take too one-sided a view of the Deity by predicating but one quality, whether strength, dominion, or majesty; and we shall equally perceive the snare which their very language laid for the Aryan nations, by supplying them with a number of words which, though they seemed harmless as meaning nothing except what by tradition or definition they were made to mean, yet were full of mischief owing to the recollections which, at any time, they might revive. Dyaus in itself was as good a name as any

for God, and in some respects more appropriate than its derivative deva, the Latin *deus*, which the Romance nations still use without meaning any harm. But Dyaus had meant sky for too long a time to become entirely divested of all the old myths or sayings which were true of Dyaus, the sky, but could only be retained as fables, if transferred to Dyaus, God. Dyaus, the Bright, might be called the husband of the earth; but when the same myth was repeated of *Zeus*, the god, then *Zeus* became the husband of *Demeter*, *Demeter* became a goddess, a daughter sprang from their union, and all the sluices of mythological madness were opened. There were a few men, no doubt, at all times, who saw through this mythological phraseology, who called on God, though they called him Zeus, or Dyaus, or Jupiter. Xenophanes, one of the earliest Greek heretics, boldly maintained that there was but 'one God, and that he was not like unto men, either in body or in mind.'[1] A poet in the Veda asserts distinctly, 'They call him Indra, Mitra, Varuṇa, Agni; then he is the well-winged heavenly Garutmat; that which is One the wise call it many ways—they call it Agni, Yama, Mâtarisvan.'[2]

But, on the whole, the charm of mythology prevailed among the Aryan nations, and a return to the primitive intuition of God, and a total negation of all gods, were rendered more difficult to the Aryan than to the Semitic man. The Semitic man had hardly ever to resist the allurements of mythology. The

[1] Xenophanes, about contemporary with Cyrus, as quoted by Clemens Alex., *Strom.* v. p. 601:—εἷς θεὸς ἔν τε θεοῖσι καὶ ἀνθρώποισι μέγιστος, οὔτε δέμας θνητοῖσιν ὁμοίτος οὐδὲ νόημα.

[2] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, by M. M., p. 567.

names with which he invoked the Deity did not trick him by their equivocal character. Nevertheless, these Semitic names, too, though predicative in the beginning, became subjective, and, from being the various names of One Being, lapsed into names of various beings. Hence arose a danger which threatened well-nigh to bar to the Semitic race the approach to the conception and worship of the One God.

Nowhere can we see this danger more clearly than in the history of the Jews. The Jews had, no doubt, preserved from the beginning the idea of God, and their names of God contained nothing but what might by right be ascribed to Him. They worshipped a single God, and, whenever they fell into idolatry, they felt that they had fallen away from God. But that God, under whatever name they invoked Him, was especially their God, their own national God, and His existence did not exclude the existence of other gods or demons. Of the ancestors of Abraham and Nachor, even of their father Terah, we know that in old time, when they dwelt on the other side of the flood, they served other gods (Joshua xxiv. 2). At the time of Joshua these gods were not yet forgotten, and, instead of denying their existence altogether, Joshua only exhorts the people to put away the gods which their fathers served on the other side of the flood and in Egypt, and to serve the Lord: 'Choose ye this day,' he says, 'whom you will serve; whether the gods which your fathers served that were on the other side of the flood, or the gods of the Amorites, in whose land ye dwell; but as for me and my house, we will serve the Lord.'

Such a speech, exhorting the people to make their

choice between various gods, would have been unmeaning if addressed to a nation which had once conceived the unity of the Godhead. Even images of the gods were not unknown to the family of Abraham, for, though we know nothing of the exact form of the teraphim, which Rachel carried away from her father, certain it is that Laban calls them his gods (Genesis xxxi. 19, 30). But what is much more significant than these traces of polytheism and idolatry is the hesitating tone in which some of the early patriarchs speak of their God. When Jacob flees before Esau into Padan-Aram and awakes from his vision at Bethel, he does not profess his faith in the One God, but he bargains, and says, 'If God will be with me, and will keep me in this way that I go, and will give me bread to eat, and raiment to put on, so that I come again to my father's house in peace, then shall the Lord be my God: and this stone, which I have set for a pillar, shall be God's house: and of all that thou shalt give me, I will surely give the tenth unto thee' (Genesis xxviii. 20–22). Language of this kind evinces not only a temporary want of faith in God, but it shows that the conception of God had not yet acquired that complete universality which alone deserves to be called monotheism, or belief in the One God. To him who has seen God face to face there is no longer any escape or doubt as to who is to be *his* god; God is his god, whatever befall. But this Jacob did not learn until he had struggled and wrestled with God, and committed himself to His care at the very time when no one else could have saved him. In that struggle Jacob asked for the true name of God, and he learnt from

God that His name was secret (Genesis xxxii. 29). After that, his God was no longer one of many gods. His faith was not like the faith of Jethro (Exodus xxvii. 11), the priest of Midian, the father-in-law of Moses, who when he heard of all that God had done for Moses acknowledged that God (Jehovah) was greater than all gods (Elohim). This is not yet faith in the One God. It is a faith hardly above the faith of the people who were halting between Jehovah and Baal, and who only when they saw what the Lord did for Elijah, fell on their faces and said, 'The Lord He is the God.'

And yet this limited faith in Jehovah as the God of the Jews, as a God more powerful than the gods of the heathen, as a God above all gods, betrays itself again and again in the history of the Jews. The idea of many gods is there, and wherever that idea exists, wherever the plural of god is used in earnest, there is polytheism. It is not so much the names of Zeus, Hermes, &c., which constitute the polytheism of the Greeks; it is the plural *θεοί*, gods, which contains the fatal spell. We do not know what M. Renan means when he says that Jehovah with the Jews 'n'est pas le plus grand entre plusieurs dieux; c'est le Dieu unique.' It was so with Abraham; it was so after Jacob had been changed into Israel; it was so with Moses, Elijah, and Jeremiah. But what is the meaning of the very first commandment, 'Thou shalt have no other gods before me'? Could this command have been addressed to a nation to whom the plural of God was a nonentity? It might be answered that the plural of God was to the Jews as revolting as it is to us, that it was revolting to their

faith, if not to their reason. But how was it that their language tolerated the plural of a word which excludes plurality as much as the word for the centre of a sphere? No man who had clearly perceived the unity of God, could say with the Psalmist (lxxxvi. 8), 'Among the gods there is none like unto Thee, O Lord, neither are there any works like unto Thy works.' Though the same poet says, 'Thou art God alone,' he could not have compared God with other gods, if his idea of God had really reached that all-embracing character which it had with Abraham, Moses, Elijah, and Jeremiah. Nor would God have been praised as the 'great king above all gods' by a poet in whose eyes the gods of the heathen had been recognised as what they were—mighty shadows, thrown by the mighty works of God, and intercepting for a time the pure light of the Godhead.

We thus arrive at a different conviction from that which M. Renan has made the basis of the history of the Semitic race. We can see nothing that would justify the admission of a monotheistic instinct, granted to the Semitic, and withheld from the Aryan race. They both share in the primitive intuition of God, they are both exposed to dangers in framing names for God, and they both fall into polytheism. What is peculiar to the Aryan race is their mythological phraseology, superadded to their polytheism; what is peculiar to the Semitic race is their belief in a national god—in a god chosen by his people as his people had been chosen by him.

No doubt, M. Renan might say that we ignored his problem, and that we have not removed the difficulties which drove him to the admission of a mono-

theistic instinct. How is the fact to be explained, he might ask, that the three great religions of the world in which the unity of the Deity forms the key-note are of Semitic origin, and that the Aryan nations, wherever they have been brought to a worship of the One God, invoke Him with names borrowed from the Semitic languages?

But let us look more closely at the facts before we venture on theories. Mohammedanism, no doubt, is a Semitic religion, and its very core is monotheism. But did Mohammed invent monotheism? Did he invent even a new name of God? (Renan, p. 23.) Not at all. His object was to destroy the idolatry of the Semitic tribes of Arabia, to dethrone the angels, the Jin, the sons and daughters who had been assigned to Allah, and to restore the faith of Abraham in one God. (Renan, p. 37.)

And how is it with Christianity? Did Christ come to preach a faith in a new God? Did He or His disciples invent a new name of God? No, Christ came not to destroy, but to fulfil; and the God whom He preached was the God of Abraham.

And who is the God of Jeremiah, of Elijah, and of Moses? We answer again, the God of Abraham.

Thus the faith in the One living God, which seemed to require the admission of a monotheistic instinct grafted in every member of the Semitic family, is traced back to one man, to him 'in whom all families of the earth shall be blessed' (Genesis xii. 3, Acts iii. 25, Galatians iii. 8). If from our earliest childhood we have looked upon Abraham, the friend of God, with love and veneration; if our first impressions of a truly god-fearing life were taken

from him, who left the land of his fathers to live a stranger in the land whither God had called him, who always listened to the voice of God, whether it conveyed to him the promise of a son in his old age, or the command to sacrifice that son, his only son Isaac, his venerable figure will assume still more majestic proportions when we see in him the life-spring of that faith which was to unite all the nations of the earth, and the author of that blessing which was to come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ.

And if we are asked how this one Abraham possessed not only the primitive intuition of God as He had revealed Himself to all mankind, but passed through the denial of all other gods to the knowledge of the one God, we are content to answer that it was by a special Divine Revelation. We do not indulge in theological phraseology, but we mean every word to its fullest extent. The Father of Truth chooses His own prophets, and He speaks to them in a voice stronger than the voice of thunder. It is the same inner voice through which God speaks to all of us. That voice may dwindle away, and become hardly audible; it may lose its Divine accent, and sink into the language of worldly prudence; but it may also, from time to time, assume its real nature with the chosen of God, and sound into their ears as a voice from Heaven. A 'divine instinct' may sound more scientific, and less theological; but in truth it would neither be an appropriate name for what is a gift or grace accorded to but few, nor would it be a more scientific, *i.e.* a more intelligible, word than 'special revelation.'

The important point, however, is not whether the

faith of Abraham should be called a divine instinct or a revelation; what we wish here to insist on is that that instinct, or that revelation, was special, granted to one man, and handed down from him to Jews, Christians, and Mohammedans, to all who believe in the God of Abraham. Nor was it granted to Abraham entirely as a free gift. Abraham was tried and tempted before he was trusted by God. He had to break with the faith of his fathers; he had to deny the gods who were worshipped by his friends and neighbours. Like all the friends of God, he had to hear himself called an infidel and atheist, and in our own days he would have been looked upon as a madman for attempting to slay his son. It was through special faith that Abraham received his special revelation, not through instinct, not through abstract meditation, not through ecstatic visions. We want to know more of that man than we do; but, even with the little we know of him, he stands before us as a figure second only to one in the whole history of the world. We see his zeal for God, but we never see him contentious. Though Melchizedek worshipped God under a different name, invoking Him as Eliun, the Most High, Abraham at once acknowledged in Melchizedek a worshipper and priest of the true God, or Elohim, and paid him tithes. In the very name of Elohim we seem to trace the conciliatory spirit of Abraham. Elohim is a plural, though it is followed by the verb in the singular. It is generally said that the genius of the Semitic languages countenances the use of plurals for abstract conceptions, and that when Jehovah is called Elohim, the plural should be translated by 'the Deity.' We

do not deny the fact, but we wish for an explanation, and an explanation is suggested by the various phases through which, as we saw, the conception of God passed in the ancient history of the Semitic mind. 'Eloah was at first the name for God, and as it is found in all the dialects of the Semitic family except the Phœnician (Renan, p. 61), it may probably be considered as the most ancient name of the Deity, sanctioned at a time when the original Semitic speech had not yet branched off into national dialects. When this name was first used in the plural, it could only have signified, like every plural, many Eloahs, and such a plural could only have been formed after the various names of God had become the names of independent deities—*i.e.* during a polytheistic stage. The transition from this into the monotheistic stage could be effected in two ways —either by denying altogether the existence of the Elohim, and changing them into devils, as the Zoroastrians did with the Devas of their Brahmanic ancestors; or by taking a higher view, and looking upon the Elohim as so many names, invented with the honest purpose of expressing the various aspects of the Deity, though in time diverted from their original purpose. This is the view taken by St. Paul of the religion of the Greeks when he came to declare unto them 'Him whom they *ignorantly* worshipped,' and the same view was taken by Abraham. Whatever the names of the Elohim worshipped by the numerous clans of his race, Abraham saw that all the Elohim were meant for God, and thus Elohim, comprehending by one name everything that ever had been or could be called divine, became the name with

which the monotheistic age was rightly inaugurated —a plural, conceived and construed as a singular. Jehovah was all the Elohim, and therefore there could be no other God. From this point of view the Semitic name of the Deity, Elohim, which seemed at first not only ungrammatical but irrational, becomes perfectly clear and intelligible, and it proves better than anything else that the true monotheism could not have risen except on the ruins of a polytheistic faith. It is easy to scoff at the gods of the heathen, but a cold-hearted negation of the gods of the ancient world is more likely to lead to Deism or Atheism than to a belief in the One living God, the Father of all mankind, 'who hath made of one blood all nations of men, for to dwell on all the face of the earth; and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation; that they should seek the Lord, if haply they might feel after Him, and find Him, though He be not far from every one of us: for in Him we live, and move, and have our being; as certain also of your own poets have said, For we are also His offspring.'

Taking this view of the historical growth of the idea of God, many of the difficulties which M. Renan has to overcome by most elaborate and sometimes hair-splitting arguments, disappear at once. M. Renan, for instance, dwells much on Semitic proper names in which the names of the Deity occur, and he thinks that, like the Greek names *Theodoros* or *Theodotos*, instead of *Zenodotos*, they prove the existence of a faith in one God. We should say they may or may not. As Devadatta, in Sanskrit, may mean either 'given by God,' or 'given by the gods,'

so every proper name which M. Renan quotes, whether of Jews, or Edomites, Ishmaelites, Ammonites, Moabites, and Themanites, whether from the Bible, or from Arab historians, from Greek authors, Greek inscriptions, the Egyptian papyri, the Himyaritic and Sinaitic inscriptions and ancient coins, are all open to two interpretations. 'The servant of Baal' may mean the servant of the Lord, but it may also mean the servant of Baal, as one of many lords, or even the servant of the Baalim or the Lords. The same applies to all other names. 'The gift of El' may mean 'the gift of the only strong God;' but it may likewise mean 'the gift of the El,' as one of many gods, or even 'the gift of the El's,' in the sense of the strong gods. Nor do we see why M. Renan should take such pains to prove that the name of Orotal or Orotulat, mentioned by Herodotos (III. 8), may be interpreted as the name of a supreme deity; and that Alilat, mentioned by the same traveller, should be taken, not as the name of a goddess, but as a feminine noun expressive of the abstract sense of the deity. Herodotos says distinctly that Orotal was a deity like Bacchus; and Alilat, as he translates her name by Οὐρανίη, must have appeared to him as a goddess, and not as the Supreme Deity. One verse of the Koran is sufficient to show that the Semitic inhabitants of Arabia worshipped not only gods, but goddesses also. 'What think ye of Allat, al Uzza, and Manah, that other third goddess?'

If our view of the development of the idea of God be correct, we can perfectly understand how, in spite of this polytheistic phraseology, the primitive intuition of God should make itself felt from time to time,

long before Mohammed restored the belief of Abraham in one God. The old Arabic prayer mentioned by Abulfarag may be perfectly genuine: 'I dedicate myself to thy service, O God! Thou hast no companion, except thy companion, of whom thou art absolute master, and of whatever is his.' The verse pointed out to M. Renan by M. Caussin de Perceval from the Moallaka of Zoheyr, was certainly anterior to Mohammed: 'Try not to hide your secret feelings from the sight of Allah; Allah knows all that is hidden.' But these quotations serve no more to establish the universality of the monotheistic instinct in the Semitic race than similar quotations from the Veda would prove the existence of a conscious monotheism among the ancestors of the Aryan race. There too we read, 'Agni knows what is secret among mortals' (Rig-Veda VIII. 39, 6): and again, 'He, the upholder of order, Varuna, sits down among his people; he, the wise, sits there to govern. From thence perceiving all wondrous things, he sees what has been and what will be done.'[1] But in these very hymns, better than anywhere else, we learn that the idea of supremacy and omnipotence ascribed to one god did by no means exclude the admission of other gods, or names of God. All the other gods disappear from the vision of the poet while he addresses his own God, and he only who is to fulfil his desires stands in full light before the eyes of the worshipper as the supreme and only God.

The Science of Religion is only just beginning, and we must take care how we impede its progress by preconceived notions or too hasty generalisations.

[1] *History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature*, by M. M., p. 536.

During the last fifty years the authentic documents of the most important religions of the world have been recovered in a most unexpected and almost miraculous manner. We have now before us the canonical books of Buddhism; the Zend-Avesta of Zoroaster is no longer a sealed book; and the hymns of the Rig-Veda have revealed a state of religion anterior to the first beginnings of that mythology which in Homer and Hesiod stands before us as a mouldering ruin. The soil of Mesopotamia has given back the very images once worshipped by the most powerful of the Semitic tribes, and the cuneiform inscriptions of Babylon and Nineveh have disclosed the very prayers addressed to Baal or Nisroch. With the discovery of these documents a new era begins in the study of religion. We begin to see more clearly every day what St. Paul meant in his sermon at Athens. But as the excavator at Babylon or Nineveh, before he ventures to reconstruct the palaces of these ancient kingdoms, sinks his shafts into the ground slowly and circumspectly lest he should injure the walls of the ancient palaces which he is disinterring; as he watches every corner-stone lest he mistake their dark passages and galleries; and as he removes with awe and trembling the dust and clay from the brittle monuments lest he destroy their outlines, and obliterate their inscriptions, so it behoves the student of the history of religion to set to work carefully, lest he should miss the track, and lose himself in an inextricable maze. The relics which he handles are more precious than the ruins of Babylon; the problems he has to solve are more important than the questions of ancient chronology; and the substructions which

he hopes one day to lay bare are the world-wide foundations of the eternal city of God.

We look forward with the highest expectations to the completion of M. Renan's work, and though English readers will differ from many of the author's views, and feel offended now and then at his blunt and unguarded language, we doubt not that they will find his volumes both instructive and suggestive. They are written in that clear and brilliant style which has secured to M. Renan the rank of one of the best writers of French, and which throws its charm even over the dry and abstruse inquiries into the grammatical forms and radical elements of the Semitic languages.

XXII.

ON FALSE ANALOGIES IN COMPARATIVE THEOLOGY.

VERY different from the real similarities that can be discovered in nearly all the religions of the world, and which, owing to their deeply human character, in no way necessitate the admission that one religion borrowed from the other, are those minute coincidences between the Jewish and the Pagan religions which have so often been discussed by learned theologians, and which were intended by them as proof positive, either that the Pagans borrowed their religious ideas direct from the Old Testament, or that some fragments of a primeval revelation, granted to the ancestors of the whole race of mankind, had been preserved in the temples of Greece and Italy.

Bochart, in his 'Geographia Sacra,' considered the identity of Noah and Saturn so firmly established as hardly to admit of the possibility of a doubt. The three sons of Saturn—Jupiter, Neptune, and Pluto—he represented as having been originally the three sons of Noah: Jupiter being Ham; Neptune, Japhet; and Shem, Pluto. Even in the third generation the two families were proved to have been one, for

Phut, the son of Ham, or of Jupiter Hammon, could be no other than Apollo Pythius; Canaan no other than Mercury; and Nimrod no other than Bacchus, whose original name was supposed to have been Bar-chus, the son of Cush. G. J. Vossius, in his learned work, 'De Origine et Progressu Idolatriæ' (1688), identified Saturn with Adam, Janus with Noah, Pluto with Ham, Neptune with Japhet, Minerva with Naamah, Vulcan with Tubal Cain, Typhon with Og. Huet, the friend of Bochart, and the colleague of Bossuet, went still further; and in his classical work, the 'Demonstratio Evangelica,' he attempted to prove that the whole theology of the heathen nations was borrowed from Moses, whom he identified not only with ancient law-givers, like Zoroaster and Orpheus, but with gods and demigods, such as Apollo, Vulcan, Faunus, and Priapus.

All this happened not more than two hundred years ago; and even a hundred years ago, nay, even after the discovery of Sanskrit and the rise of Comparative Philology, the troublesome ghost of Huet was by no means laid at once. On the contrary, as soon as the ancient language and religion of India became known in Europe, they were received by many people in the same spirit. Sanskrit, like all other languages, was to be derived from Hebrew, the ancient religion of the Brahmans from the Old Testament.

There was at that time an enthusiasm among Oriental scholars, particularly at Calcutta, and an interest for Oriental antiquities in the public at large, of which we in these days of apathy for Eastern literature can hardly form an adequate idea. Every-

body wished to be first in the field, and to bring to light some of the treasures which were supposed to be hidden in the sacred literature of the Brahmans. Sir William Jones, the founder of the Asiatic Society at Calcutta, published in the first volume of the 'Asiatic Researches' his famous essay 'On the Gods of Greece, Italy, and India;' and he took particular care to state that his essay, though published only in 1788, had been written in 1784. In that essay he endeavoured to show that there existed an intimate connection, not only between the mythology of India and that of Greece and Italy, but likewise between the legendary stories of the Brahmans and the accounts of certain historical events as recorded in the Old Testament. No doubt, the temptation was great. No one could look down for a moment into the rich mine of religious and mythological lore that was suddenly opened before the eyes of scholars and theologians, without being struck by a host of similarities, not only in the languages, but also in the ancient traditions of the Hindus, the Greeks, and the Romans; and if at that time the Greeks and Romans were still supposed to have borrowed their language and their religion from Jewish quarters, the same conclusion could hardly be avoided with regard to the language and the religion of the Brahmans of India.

The first impulse to look in the ancient religion of India for reminiscences of revealed truth seems to have come from missionaries rather than from scholars. It arose from a motive, in itself most excellent, of finding some common ground for those who wished to convert and those who were to be converted. Only,

instead of looking for that common ground where it really was to be found—namely, in the broad foundations on which all religions are built up: the belief in a divine power, the acknowledgment of sin, the habit of prayer, the desire to offer sacrifice, and the hope of a future life—the students of Pagan religion as well as Christian missionaries were bent on discovering more striking and more startling coincidences, in order to use them in confirmation of their favourite theory that some rays of a primeval revelation, or some reflection of the Jewish religion, had reached the uttermost ends of the world. This was a dangerous proceeding—dangerous because superficial, dangerous because undertaken with a foregone conclusion; and very soon the same arguments that had been used on one side in order to prove that all religious truth had been derived from the Old Testament were turned against Christian scholars and Christian missionaries, in order to show that it was not Brahmanism and Buddhism which had borrowed from the Old and New Testament, but that the Old and the New Testament had borrowed from the more ancient religions of the Brahmans and Buddhists.

This argument was carried out, for instance, in Holwell's 'Original Principles of the Ancient Brahmans,' published in London as early as 1779, in which the author maintains that 'the Brahmanic religion is the first and purest product of supernatural revelation,' and 'that the Hindu scriptures contain to a moral certainty the original doctrines and terms of restoration delivered from God himself, by the mouth of his first-created Birmah, to mankind, at his first creation in the form of man.'

Sir William Jones[1] tells us that one or two missionaries in India had been absurd enough, in their zeal for the conversion of the Gentiles, to urge 'that the Hindus were even now almost Christians, because their Brahma, Vishnu, and Mahesa were no other than the Christian Trinity;' a sentence in which, he adds, we can only doubt whether folly, ignorance, or impiety predominates.

Sir William Jones himself was not likely to fall into that error. He speaks against it most emphatically. 'Either,' he says, 'the first eleven chapters of Genesis—all due allowance being made for a figurative Eastern style—are true, or the whole fabric of our national religion is false; a conclusion which none of us, I trust, would wish to be drawn. But it is not the truth of our national religion as such that I have at heart; it is truth itself; and if any cool, unbiassed reasoner will clearly convince me that Moses drew his narrative through Egyptian conduits from the primeval fountains of Indian literature, I shall esteem him as a friend for having weeded my mind from a capital error, and promise to stand amongst the foremost in assisting to circulate the truth which he has ascertained.'

But though he speaks so strongly against the uncritical proceedings of those who would derive anything that is found in the Old Testament from Indian sources, Sir William Jones himself was really guilty of the same want of critical caution in his own attempts to identify the gods and heroes of Greece and Rome with the gods and heroes of India.

[1] *Asiatic Researches*, i. p. 272; *Life of Sir W. Jones*, vol. ii. p. 240 *seq.*

He begins his essay,[1] 'On the Gods of Greece, Italy, and India' with the following remarks :—

'We cannot justly conclude, by arguments preceding the proof of facts, that one idolatrous people must have borrowed their deities, rites, and tenets from another, since gods of all shapes and dimensions may be framed by the boundless powers of imagination, or by the frauds and follies of men, in countries never connected; but when features of resemblance, too strong to have been accidental, are observable in different systems of polytheism, without fancy or prejudice to colour them and improve the likeness, we can scarce help believing that some connection has immemorially subsisted between the several nations who have adopted them. It is my design in this essay to point out such a resemblance between the popular worship of the old Greeks and Italians and that of the Hindus; nor can there be any room to doubt of a great similarity between their strange religions and that of Egypt, China, Persia, Phrygia, Phœnice, and Syria; to which, perhaps, we may safely add some of the southern kingdoms, and even islands of America; while the Gothic system which prevailed in the northern regions of Europe was not merely similar to those of Greece and Italy, but almost the same in another dress, with an embroidery of images apparently Asiatic. From all this, if it be satisfactorily proved, we may infer a general union or affinity between the most distinguished inhabitants of the primitive world at the time when they deviated, as

[1] *Asiatic Researches*, i. p. 221.

they did too early deviate, from the rational adoration of the only true God.'

Here, then, in an essay written nearly a hundred years ago by Sir W. Jones, one of the most celebrated Oriental scholars in England, it might seem as if we should find the first outlines of that science which is looked upon as but of to-day or yesterday—the outlines of Comparative Mythology. But in such an expectation we are disappointed. What we find is merely a superficial comparison of the mythology of India and that of other nations, both Aryan and Semitic, without any scientific value, because carried out without any of those critical tests which alone keep Comparative Mythology from running riot. This is not intended as casting a slur on Sir W. Jones. At his time the principles which have now been established by the students of the science of language were not yet known, and as with words, so with the names of deities, similarity of sound, the most treacherous of all sirens, was the only guide in such researches.

It is not pleasant to have to find fault with a man possessed of such genius, taste, and learning as Sir W. Jones, but no one who is acquainted with the history of these researches will be surprised at my words. It is the fate of all pioneers, not only to be left behind in the assault which they had planned, but to find that many of their approaches were made in a false direction, and had to be abandoned. But as the authority of their names continues to sway the public at large, and is apt to mislead even painstaking students and to entail upon them repeated disappointments, it is necessary that those who know

should speak out, even at the risk of being considered harsh or presumptuous.

A few instances will suffice to show how utterly baseless the comparisons are which Sir W. Jones instituted between the gods of India, Greece, and Italy. He compares the Latin Janus with the Sanskrit deity Ganesa. It is well-known that Janus is connected with the same root that has yielded the names of Jupiter, Zeus, and Dyaus, while Ganesa is a compound, meaning lord of hosts, lord of the companies of gods.

Saturnus is supposed to have been the same as Noah, and is then identified by Sir W. Jones with the Indian Manu Satyavrata, who escaped from the flood. Ceres is compared with the goddess Sri, Jupiter or Diespiter with Indra or Divaspati; and, though etymology is called a weak basis for historical inquiries, the three syllables Jov in Jovis, Zeu in Zeus, and Siv in Siva are placed side by side, as possibly containing the same root, only differently pronounced. Now the s of Siva is a palatal s, and no scholar who has once looked into a book on Comparative Philology need be told that such an s could never correspond to a Greek Zeta or a Latin J.

In Krishna, the lovely shepherd-god, Sir W. Jones recognises the features of Apollo Nomius, who fed the herds of Admetus, and slew the dragon Python; and he leaves it to etymologists to determine whether Gopâla—*i.e.* the cow-herd—may not be the same word as Apollo. We are also assured, on the authority of Colonel Vallancey, that Krishna in Irish means the sun, and that the goddess Kâlî, to whom human sacrifices were offered, as enjoined in

the Vedas (?), was the same as Hekate. In conclusion, Sir W. Jones remarks, 'I strongly incline to believe that Egyptian priests have actually come from the Nile to the Gangâ and Yamunâ, and that they visited the Sarmans of India, as the sages of Greece visited them, rather to acquire than to impart knowledge.'

The interest that had been excited by Sir William Jones's researches did not subside, though he himself did not return to the subject, but devoted his great powers to more useful labours. Scholars, both in India and in Europe, wanted to know more of the ancient religion of India. If Jupiter, Apollo, and Janus had once been found in the ancient pantheon of the Brahmans; if the account of Noah and the deluge could be traced back to the story of Manu Satyavrata, who escaped from the flood, more discoveries might be expected in this newly-opened mine, and people rushed to it with all the eagerness of gold-diggers. The idea that everything in India was of extreme antiquity had at that time taken a firm hold on the minds of all students of Sanskrit; and, as there was no one to check their enthusiasm, everything that came to light in Sanskrit literature was readily accepted as more ancient than Homer, or even than the Old Testament.

It was under these influences that Lieutenant Wilford, a contemporary of Sir William Jones at Calcutta, took up the thread which Sir William Jones had dropped, and determined at all hazards to solve the question which at that time had excited a world-wide interest. Convinced that the Brahmans possessed in their ancient literature the originals,

not only of Greek and Roman mythology, but likewise of the Old Testament history, he tried every possible means to overcome their reserve and reticence. He related to them, as well as he could, the principal stories of classical mythology, and the leading events in the history of the Old Testament; he assured them that they would find the same things in their ancient books, if they would but look for them; he held out the hopes of ample rewards for any extracts from their sacred literature containing the histories of Adam and Eve, of Deukalion and Prometheus; and at last he succeeded. The coyness of the Pandits yielded; the incessant demand created a supply; and for several years essay after essay appeared in the 'Asiatic Researches,' with extracts from Sanskrit MSS., containing not only the names of Deukalion, Prometheus, and other heroes and deities of Greece, but likewise the names of Adam and Eve, of Abraham and Sarah, and all the rest.

Great was the surprise, still greater the joy, not only in Calcutta, but in London, at Paris, and all the universities of Germany. The Sanskrit MSS. from which Lieutenant Wilford quoted, and on which his theories were based, had been submitted to Sir W. Jones and other scholars; and though many persons were surprised and for a time even incredulous, yet the fact could not be denied that all was found in these Sanskritt MSS. as stated by Lieutenant Wilford. Sir W. Jones, then President of the Asiatic Society, printed the following declaration at the end of the third volume of the 'Asiatic Researches': —

'Since I am persuaded that the learned essay on Egypt and the Nile has afforded you equal delight with that which I have myself received from it, I cannot refrain from endeavouring to increase your satisfaction by confessing openly that I have at length abandoned the greatest part of the natural distrust and incredulity which had taken possession of my mind before I had examined the sources from which our excellent associate, Lieutenant Wilford, has drawn so great a variety of new and interesting opinions. Having lately read again and again, both alone and with a Pandit, the numerous original passages in the Purâ*n*as, and other Sanskrit books, which the writer of the dissertation adduces in support of his assertions, I am happy in bearing testimony to his perfect good faith and general accuracy, both in his extracts and in the translation of them.'

Sir W. Jones then proceeds himself to give a translation of some of these passages. 'The following translation,' he writes, 'of an extract from the Padma-purâ*n*a is minutely exact:'—

'1. To Satyavarman, the sovereign of the whole earth, were born three sons; the eldest Sherma; then Charma; and thirdly, Jyapeti.

'2. They were all men of good morals, excellent in virtue and virtuous deeds, skilled in the use of weapons to strike with, or to be thrown, brave men, eager for victory in battle.

'3. But Satyavarman, being continually delighted with devout meditation, and seeing his sons fit for dominion, laid upon them the burden of government,

'4. Whilst he remained honouring and satisfy-

ing the gods, and priests, and kine. One day, by the act of destiny, the king, having drunk mead,

'5. Became senseless, and lay asleep naked; then was he seen by Charma, and by him were his two brothers called.

'6. To whom he said: What now has befallen? In what state is this our sire? By those two was he hidden with clothes, and called to his senses again and again.

'7. Having recovered his intellect, and perfectly knowing what had passed, he cursed Charma, saying, Thou shalt be the servant of servants:

'8. And since thou wast a laugher in their presence, from laughter shalt thou acquire a name. Then he gave to Sherma the wide domain on the south of the snowy mountains.

'9. And to Jyapeti he gave all on the north of the snowy mountains; but he, by the power of religious contemplation, obtained supreme bliss.'

After this testimony from Sir W. Jones—wrung from him, as it would seem, against his own wish and will—Lieutenant Wilford's essays became more numerous and more startling every year.

At last, however, the coincidences became too great. The MSS. were again carefully examined; and then it was found that a clever forgery had been committed, that leaves had been inserted in ancient MSS., and that on these leaves the Pandits, urged by Lieutenant Wilford to disclose their ancient mysteries and traditions, had rendered in correct Sanskrit verse all that they had heard about Adam and Abraham from their inquisitive master. Lieutenant (then Colonel) Wilford did not hesitate

for one moment to confess publicly that he had been imposed upon; but in the meantime the mischief had been done, his essays had been read all over Europe, they retained their place in the volumes of the 'Asiatic Researches,' and to the present day some of his statements and theories continue to be quoted authoritatively by writers on ancient religion.

Such accidents, and, one might almost say, such misfortunes, will happen, and it would be extremely unfair were we to use unnecessarily harsh language with regard to those to whom they have happened. It is perfectly true that at present, after the progress that has been made in an accurate and critical study of Sanskrit, it would be unpardonable if any Sanskrit scholar accepted such passages as those translated by Sir W. Jones as genuine. Yet it is by no means certain that a further study of Sanskrit will not lead to similar disenchantments, and deprive many a book in Sanskrit literature which now is considered as very ancient of its claims to any high antiquity. Certain portions of the Veda even, which, as far as our knowledge goes at present, we are perfectly justified in referring to the tenth or twelfth century before our era, may some day or other dwindle down from their high estate, and those who have believed in their extreme antiquity will then be held up to blame or ridicule, like Sir W. Jones or Colonel Wilford. This cannot be avoided, for science is progressive, and does not acknowledge, even in the most distinguished scholars, any claims to infallibility. One lesson only may we learn from the disappointment that befell Colonel Wilford, and that is to be on our guard against anything which in

ordinary language would be called 'too good to be true.'

Comparative Philology has taught us again and again that when we find a word exactly the same in Greek and Sanskrit, we may be certain that it cannot be the same word; and the same applies to Comparative Mythology. The same god or the same hero cannot have exactly the same name in Sanskrit and Greek, for the simple reason that Sanskrit and Greek have deviated from each other, have both followed their own way, have both suffered their own phonetic corruptions; and hence, if they do possess the same word, they can only possess it either in its Greek or its Sanskrit disguise. And if that caution applies to Sanskrit and Greek, members of the same family of language, how much more strongly must it apply to Sanskrit and Hebrew! If the first man were called in Sanskrit Âdima, and in Hebrew Adam, and if the two were really the same word, then Hebrew and Sanskrit could not be members of two different families of speech, or we should be driven to admit that Adam was borrowed by the Jews from the Hindus, for it is in Sanskrit only that âdima means the first, whereas in Hebrew it has no such meaning.

The same remark applies to a curious coincidence pointed out many years ago by Mr. Ellis in his 'Polynesian Researches' (London, 1829, vol. ii. p. 38). We there read:—

'A very generally-received Tahitian tradition is that the first human pair were made by Taaroa, the principal deity formerly acknowledged by the nation. On more than one occasion I have listened to the

details of the people respecting his work of creation. They say that, after Taaroa had formed the world, he created man out of araea, red earth, which was also the food of man until bread first was made. In connection with this some relate that Taaroa one day called for the man by name. When he came, he caused him to fall asleep, and, while he slept, he took out one of his *ivi*, or bones, and with it made a woman, whom he gave to the man as his wife, and they became the progenitors of mankind. This,' Mr. Ellis continues, 'always appeared to me a mere recital of the Mosaic account of creation, which they had heard from some European, and I never placed any reliance on it, although they have repeatedly told me it was a tradition among them before any foreigners arrived. Some have also stated that the woman's name was *Ivi*, which would be by them pronounced as if written *Eve*. *Ivi* is an aboriginal word, and not only signifies a bone, but also a widow, and a victim slain in war. Notwithstanding the assertion of the natives, I am disposed to think that *Ivi*, or *Eve*, is the only aboriginal part of the story, as far as it respects the mother of the human race. Should more careful and minute inquiry confirm the truth of this declaration, and prove that their account was in existence among them prior to their intercourse with Europeans, it will be the most remarkable and valuable oral tradition of the origin of the human race yet known.'

In this case, I believe the probability is that the story of the creation of the first woman from the bone of a man[1] existed among the Tahitians before

[1] See *Introduction to the Science of Religion*, p. 48.

their intercourse with Christians, but I need hardly add that the similarity between the Polynesian name for bone, *ivi*, even when it was used as the name of the first woman, and the English corruption of the Hebrew חַוָּה, Chāvah, Eve, could be the result of accident only. Whatever Chāvah meant in Hebrew, whether life or living or anything else, it never meant bone, while the Tahitian *ivi*, the Maori *wheva*,[1] meant bone, and bone only.

These principles and these cautions were hardly thought of in the days of Sir William Jones and Colonel Wilford, but they ought to be thought of at present. Thus, before Bopp had laid down his code of phonetic laws, and before Burnouf had written his works on Buddhism, one cannot be very much surprised that Buddha should have been identified with Minos and Lamech; nay, that even the Babylonian deity Belus, and the Teutonic deity Wodan or Odin, should have been supposed to be connected with the founder of Buddhism in India. As Burnouf said in his 'Introduction à l'Histoire du Buddhisme,' p. 70: 'On avait même fait du Buddha une planète; et je ne sais pas si quelques savants ne se plaisent pas encore aujourd'hui à retrouver ce sage paisible sous les traits du belliqueux Odin.' But we did not expect that we should have to read again, in a book published in 1869, such statements as these:[2]—

[1] The Rev. W. W. Gill tells me that the Maori word for bone is *ivi*, but he suspects a foreign origin for the fable founded on it.

[2] *Tree and Serpent Worship*, by James Fergusson. London, 1868. Very similar opinions had been advocated by Rajendralal Mitra, in a paper published in 1858 in the *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 'Buddhism and Odinism, illustrated by extracts from Professor Holmboe's Memoir on the *Traces du Buddhisme en Norvège*.' How

'There is certainly a much greater similarity between the Buddhism of the Topes and the Scandinavian mythology than between it and the Buddhism of the books; but still the gulf between the two is immense; and if any traces of the doctrines of the gentle ascetic (Buddha) ever existed in the bosom of Odin or his followers, while dwelling near the roots of the Caucasus, all that can be said is, that they suffered fearful shipwreck among the rocks of the savage superstitions of the North, and sank, never again to appear on the surface of Scandinavian mythology. If the two religions come anywhere in contact, it is at their base, for underlying both there existed a strange substratum of Tree and Serpent Worship; on this the two structures seem to have been raised, though they afterwards diverged into forms so strangely dissimilar' (p. 34).

much mischief is done by opinions of this kind when they once find their way into the general public, and are supported by names which carry weight, may be seen by the following extracts from the *Pioneer* (July 30, 1878), a native paper published in India. Here we read that the views of Holmboe, Rajendralal Mitra, and Fergusson, as to a possible connection between Buddha and Wodan, between Buddhism and Wodenism, have been adopted and preached by an English bishop, in order to convince his hearers, who were chiefly Buddhists, that the religion of the gentle ascetic came originally, if not from the North-East of Scotland, at all events from the Saxons. 'Gotama Buddha,' he maintained, 'was a Saxon,' coming from 'a Saxon family which had penetrated into India.' And again: 'The most convincing proof to us Anglo-Indians lies in the fact that the Purâṇas named Varada and Matsy distinctly assert that the White Island in the West—meaning England—was known in India as Sacana, having been conquered at a very early period by the Sacas or Saks.' After this the bishop takes courage, and says: 'Let me call your attention to the Pâli word Nibban, called in Sanskrit Nirvâṇa. In the Anglo-Saxon you have the identical word—Nabban, meaning "not to have," or "to be without a thing."'

Or again (p. 32):—

'We shall probably not err far if we regard these traces of serpent worship as indicating the presence in the North-East of Scotland of the head of that column of migration, or of propagandism, which under the myth of Wodenism, we endeavoured in a previous chapter to trace from the Caucasus to Scandinavia.'

'The arbors under which two of the couples are seated are curious instances of that sort of summer-house which may be found adorning tea-gardens in the neighbourhood of London to the present day. It is scenes like these that make us hesitate before asserting that there could not possibly be any connection between Buddhism and Wodenism' (p. 140).

'One of the most tempting nominal similarities connected with this subject is suggested by the name of Mâyâ. The mother of Buddha was called Mâyâ. The mother of Mercury was also Maia, the daughter of Atlas. The Romans always called Wodin, Mercury, and *dies Mercurii* and *Wodensday* alike designated the fourth day of the week. . . . These and other similarities have been frequently pointed out and insisted upon, and they are too numerous and too distinct not to have some foundation in reality' (p. 186, note).

Statements like these cannot be allowed to pass unnoticed or uncontradicted, particularly if supported by the authority of a great name; and after having spoken so freely of the unscientific character of the mythological comparisons instituted by scholars like Sir William Jones and Lieutenant Wilford, who can no longer defend themselves, it would be mere

cowardice to shrink from performing the same unpleasant duty in the case of a living writer, who has shown that he knows how to wield the weapons both of defence and attack.

It is perfectly true that the mother of Buddha was called Mâyâ, but it is equally true that the Sanskrit Mâyâ cannot be the Greek Maiâ. It is quite true also that the fourth day of the week is called *dies Mercurii* in Latin, and Wednesday in English; nay, that in Sanskrit the same day is called Budha-dina or Budha-vâra. But the origin of all these names falls within perfectly historical times, and can throw no light whatever on the early growth of mythology and religion.

First of all, we have to distinguish between Budha and Buddha. The two names, though so like each other, and therefore constantly mistaken one for the other, have nothing in common but their root. Buddha with two d's, is the participle of budh, and means awakened, enlightened.[1] It is the name given to those who have reached the highest stage of human wisdom, and it is known most generally as the title of Gotama, Sâkya-muni, the founder of Buddhism, whose traditional era dates from 543 B.C. Budha, on the contrary, with one d, means simply knowing, and it became in later times, when the Hindus received from the Greeks a knowledge of the planets, the name of the planet Mercury.

It is well known that the names of the seven days of the week are derived from the names of the

[1] See *Buddhaghosha's Parables*, translated by Captain Rogers, with an Introduction containing Buddha's Dhammapada, translated from Pâli, by M. M., 1870, p. 110, note.

planets,[1] and it is equally well known that in Europe the system of weeks and week-days is comparatively of very modern origin. It was not a Greek, nor a Roman, nor a Hindu, but a Jewish or Babylonian invention. The Sabbath (Sabbata) was known and kept at Rome in the first century B.C. with many superstitious practices. It is mentioned by Horace, Ovid, Tibullus (*dies Saturni*), Persius, Juvenal. Ovid calls it a day '*rebus minus apta gerendis*.' Augustus (Suet. 'Aug.' c. 76) evidently imagined that the Jews fasted on their Sabbath, for he said, 'Not even a Jew keeps the fast of the Sabbath so strictly as I have kept this day.' In fact, Josephus ('Contra Apion.' ii. 39) was able to say that there was no town, Greek or not Greek, where the custom of observing the seventh day had not spread.[2] It is curious that we

[1] Hare, 'On the Names of the Days of the Week (*Philol. Museum*, Nov. 1831); Ideler, *Handbuch der Chronologie*, p. 177; Grimm, *Deutsche Mythologie*, p. 111.

[2] A writer in the *Index* objects to my representation of what Josephus said with regard to the observance of the seventh day in Greek and barbarian towns. He writes:—

Washington, Nov. 9, 1872.

'The article by Max Müller in the *Index* of this week contains, I think, one error, caused doubtless by his taking a false translation of a passage from Josephus instead of the original. "In fact," says Professor Müller, "Josephus (*Contra Apion.* ii. 39) was able to say that there was no town, Greek or not Greek, where the custom of observing the seventh day had not spread." Mr. Wm. B. Taylor, in a discussion of the Sabbath question with the Rev. Dr. Brown of Philadelphia, in 1853 (*Obligation of the Sabbath*, p. 120), gives this rendering of the passage:—"Nor is there anywhere any city of the Greeks, nor a single barbarian nation, whither the institution of the Hebdomade (*which we mark by resting*) has not travelled;" then in a note Mr. Taylor gives the original Greek of part of the passage, and adds: "Josephus does not say that the Greek and barbarian rested, but that *we* [the Jews] observe it by rest."

'The corrected translation only adds strength to Max Müller's

find the seventh day, the Sabbath, even under its new Pagan name, as *dies Saturni* or *Kronike*, mentioned by Roman and Greek writers, before the names of the other days of the week made their appearance. Tibullus speaks of the day of Saturn, *dies Saturni*; Julius Frontinus (under Nerva, 96–98) says that Vespasian attacked the Jews on the day of Saturn, *dies Saturni*; and Justin Martyr (died 165) states that Christ was crucified the day before the day of Kronos, and appeared to his disciples the day after the day of Kronos. He does not use the names of

position in regard to the very limited extent of Sabbath observance in ancient times; and Mr. Taylor brings very strong historical proof to maintain the assertion (p. 24) that "throughout all history we discover no trace of a Sabbath among the nations of antiquity."'

It seems to me that if we read the whole of Josephus' work, *On the Antiquity of the Jews*, we cannot fail to perceive that what Josephus wished to show towards the end of the second book was that other nations had copied or were trying to copy the Jewish customs. He says: *Τφ' ἡμῶν τε διηνέχθησαν οἱ νόμοι καὶ τοῖς ἄλλοις ἅπασιν ἀνθρώποις, ἀεὶ καὶ μᾶλλον αὐτῶν ζῆλον ἐμπεποιήκασι.* He then says that the early Greek philosophers, though apparently original in their theoretic speculations, followed the Jewish laws with regard to practical and moral precepts. Then follows this sentence: *Οὐ μὴν ἀλλὰ καὶ πλήθεσιν ἤδη πολὺς ζῆλος γέγονεν ἐκ μακροῦ τῆς ἡμετέρας εὐσεβείας, οὐ δ' ἔστιν οὐ πόλις Ἑλλήνων οὐδητισοῦν οὐδὲ βάρβαρος, οὐδὲ ἓν ἔθνος, ἔνθα μὴ τὸ τῆς ἑβδομάδος, ἣν ἀργοῦμεν ἡμεῖς, ἔθος οὐ διαπεφοίτηκε, καὶ αἱ νηστεῖαι καὶ λύχνων ἀνακαύσεις καὶ πολλὰ τῶν εἰς βρῶσιν ἡμῖν οὐ νενομισμένων παρατετήρηται. Μιμεῖσθαι δὲ πειρῶνται καὶ τὴν πρὸς ἀλλήλους ἡμῶν ὁμόνοιαν, κ.τ.λ.* Standing where it stands, the sentence about the *ἑβδομάς* can only mean that 'there is no town of Greeks nor of barbarians, nor one single people, where the custom of the seventh day, on which we rest, has not spread, and where fastings, and lighting of lamps, and much of what is forbidden to us with regard to food are not observed. They try to imitate our mutual concord also, &c.' Hebdomas, which originally meant the week, is here clearly used in the sense of the seventh day, and though Josephus may exaggerate, what he says is certainly 'that there was no town, Greek or not Greek, where the custom of observing the seventh day had not spread.'

Friday and Sunday. Sunday, as *dies Solis*, is mentioned by Justin Martyr ('Apolog.' i. 67), and by Tertullian (died 220), the usual name of that day amongst Christians being the Lord's-day, Κυριακή, *dominica* or *dominicus*. Clemens of Alexandria (died 220) seems to have been the first who used the names of Wednesday and Friday, Ἑρμοῦ καὶ Ἀφροδίτης ἡμέρα.

It is generally stated, on the authority of Cassius Dio, that the system of counting by weeks and week-days was first introduced in Egypt, and that at his time, early in the third century, the Romans had adopted it, though but recently. Be this as it may, it would seem that, if Tibullus could use the name of *dies Saturni* for Saturday, the whole system of week-days must have been settled and known at Rome in his time. Cassius Dio tells us that the names were assigned to each day διὰ τεσσάρων, by fours; or by giving the first hour of the week to Saturn, then giving one hour to each planet in succession, till the twenty-fifth hour became again the first of the next day. Both systems lead to the same result, as will be seen from the following table:—

Planets.	*Latin.*	*French*	*Sanskrit.*
1 Saturn 1	Dies Saturni	Samedi (dies sabbati)	Śani-vāra
2 Jupiter 6	„ Solis	Dimanche (dominicus)	Ravi-vāra
3 Mars 4	„ Lunæ	Lundi	Soma-vāra
4 Sun 2	„ Martis	Mardi	Bhauma-vāra
5 Venus 7	„ Mercurii	Mercredi	Budha-vāra
6 Mercury 5	„ Jovis	Jeudi	Bṛihaspati-vāra
7 Moon 3	„ Veneris	Vendredi	Śukra-vāra

Planets.	*Old Norse.*	*Anglo-Saxon.*	*English.*
1 Saturn 1	laugardagr (washing day)	sätres däg	Saturday
2 Jupiter 6	sunnudagr	sunnan däg	Sunday
3 Mars 4	mânadagr	monan däg	Monday
4 Sun 2	tysdagr	tives däg	Tuesday
5 Venus 7	odhinsdagr	vôdenes däg	Wednesday
6 Mercury 5	thôrsdagr	thunores däg	Thursday
7 Moon 3	friadagr	frige däg	Friday

	Old-High German.	*Middle-High German.*	*German.*
1 Saturn 1	sambaztag (sunnûn âband)	samztac (sunnen âbent)	Samstag (Sonnabend)
2 Jupiter 6	sunnûn dag	sunnen tac	Sonntag
3 Mars 4	mânin tac (?)	mân tac	Montag
4 Sun 2	ziuwes tac (cies dac)	zies tac (eritic)	Dienstag
5 Venus 7	wuotanes tac (?) (mittawecha)	mittwoch	Mittwoch
6 Mercury 5	donares tac	donres tac	Donnerstag
7 Moon 3	fria dag	frîtac	Freitag

After the names of the week-days had once been settled, we have no difficulty in tracing their migration towards the East and towards the West. The Hindus had their own peculiar system of reckoning days and months, but they adopted at a later time the foreign system of counting by weeks of seven days, and assigning a presiding planetary deity to each of the seven days, according to the system described above. As the Indian name of the planet Mercury was Budha, the *dies Mercurii* was naturally called Budha-vâra but never Buddha-vâra; and the fact that the mother of Mercury was called Maia, and the mother of Buddha Mâyâ, could, therefore, have had no bearing whatever on the name assigned to the Indian Wednesday.[1] The very Buddhists, in Ceylon, distinguish between buddha, the enlightened, and budha, wise, and call Wednesday the day of Budha, not of

[1] Grimm, *Deutsche Mythologie*, p. 118, note.

Buddha.[1] Whether the names of the planets were formed in India independently, or after Greek models, is difficult to settle. The name of Budha, the knowing or the clever, given to the planet Mercury, seems, however, inexplicable except on the latter hypothesis.

Having traced the origin of the Sanskrit name of the *dies Mercurii*, Budha-vâra, let us now see why the Teutonic nations, though perfectly ignorant of Buddhism, called the same day the day of Wodan.

That the Teutonic nations received the names of the week-days from their Greek and Roman neighbours admits of no doubt. For commercial and military arrangements between Romans and Germans some kind of *lingua franca* must soon have sprung up, and in it the names of the week-days must have found their place. There would have been little difficulty in explaining the meaning of Sun-day and Mon-day to the Germans, but in order to make them understand the meaning of the other names, some explanations must have been given on the nature of the different deities, in order to enable the Germans to find corresponding names in their own language. A Roman would tell his German friend that *dies Veneris* meant the day of a goddess who represented beauty and love, and on hearing this the German would at once have thought of his own goddess of love, *Freyja*, and have called the *dies Veneris* the day of *Freyja* or Friday.[2]

If *Jupiter* was described as the god who wields

[1] In Singalese Wednesday is Badâ, in Tamil Budau. See Kennet, in *Indian Antiquary*, 1874, p. 90; D'Alwis, *Journal of Ceylon Branch of the Royal Asiatic Society*, 1870, p. 17.

[2] Grimm, *Deutsche Mythologie*, p. 276.

the thunderbolt, his natural representative in German would be *Donar*,[1] the Anglo-Saxon *Thunar*, the Old Norse *Thor*; and hence the *dies Jovis* would be called the day of *Thor*, or Thursday. If the fact that Jupiter was the king of the gods had been mentioned, his proper representative in German would, no doubt, have been *Wuotan* or *Odin*.[2] As it was, *Wuotan* or *Odin* was chosen as the nearest approach to *Mercury*, the character which they share in common, and which led to their identification, being most likely their love of travelling through the air,[3] also their granting wealth and fulfilling the wishes of their worshippers, in which capacity Wuotan is known by the name of *Wunsch*[4] or *Wish*. We can thus understand how it happened that father and son changed places, for while *Mercurius* is the son of *Jupiter*, *Wuotan* is the father of *Donar*. *Mars*, the god of war, was identified with the German *Tiu* or *Ziu*, a name which, though originally the same as *Zeus* in Greek or Dyaus in Sanskrit, took a peculiarly national character among the Germans, and became their god of war.[5]

There remained thus only the *dies Saturni*, the day of Saturn, and whether this was called so in imitation of the Latin name, or after an old German deity of a similar name and character, is a point which for the present we must leave unsettled.

[1] Grimm, *Deutsche Mythologie*, p. 151.

[2] *Ibid.* p. 120.

[3] *Ibid.* pp. 137–148.

[4] *Ibid.* p. 126. Oski in Icelandic, the god Wish, one of the names of the highest god.

[5] Tacit. *Hist.* iv. 64: 'Communibus Diis et præcipuo Deorum Marti grates agimus.'

What, however, is not unsettled is this, that if the Germans, in interpreting these names of Roman deities as well as they could, called the *dies Mercurii*, the same day which the Hindus had called the day of Budha (with one *d*), their day of *Wuotan*, this was not because 'the doctrines of the gentle ascetic existed in the bosom of Odin or his followers, while dwelling near the roots of the Caucasus,' but for very different and much more tangible reasons.

But, apart from all this, by what possible process could Buddha and Odin have ever been brought together in the flesh? In the history of ancient religions, Odin belongs to the same stratum of mythological thought as Dyaus in India, *Zeus* in Greece, *Jupiter* in Italy. He was worshipped as the supreme deity during a period long anterior to the age of the Veda and of Homer. His travels in Greece, and even in Tyrkland,[1] and his half-historical character as a mere hero and a leader of his people, are the result of the latest Euhemerism. Buddha, on the contrary, is not a mythological, but a personal and historical character, and to think of a meeting of Buddha and Odin, or even of their respective descendants, at the roots of Mount Caucasus, would be like imagining an interview between Cyrus and Odin, between Mohammed and Aphrodite.

A comparative study of ancient religions and mythologies, as will be seen from these instances, is not a subject to be taken up lightly. It requires not only an accurate acquaintance with the minutest details of comparative philology, but a knowledge of the history of religions which can hardly be gained

[1] Grimm, *l.c.* p. 148.

without a study of original documents. As long, however, as researches of this kind are carried on for their own sake, and from a mere desire of discovering truth, without any ulterior objects, they deserve no blame, though, for a time, they may lead to erroneous results. But when coincidences between different religions and mythologies are searched out simply in support of preconceived theories, whether by the friends or enemies of religion, the sense of truth, the very life of all science, is sacrificed, and serious mischief will follow without fail. Here we have a right, not only to protest, but to blame. There is on this account a great difference between the books we have hitherto examined, and a work lately published in Paris by M. Jacolliot, under the sensational title of 'La Bible dans l'Inde, Vie de Jeseus Christna.' If this book had been written with the pure enthusiasm of Lieutenant Wilford, it might have been passed by as a mere anachronism. But when one sees how its author shuts his eyes against all evidence that would tell against him, and brings together, without any critical scruples, whatever seems to support his theory that Christianity is a mere copy of the ancient religion of India, mere silence would not be a sufficient answer. Besides, the book has lately been translated into English, and will be read, no doubt, by many people who cannot test the evidence on which it professes to be founded. We learn that M. Jacolliot was some years ago appointed President of the Court of Justice at Chandernagore, and that he devoted the leisure left him from the duties of his position to studying Sanskrit and the holy books of the Hindus. He is said to

have put himself in communication with the Brahmans, who had obtained access to a great number of MSS. carefully stored up in the depths of the pagodas. 'The purport of his book is' (I quote from a friendly critic), 'that our civilisation, our religion, our legends, our gods, have come to us from India, after passing in succession through Egypt, Persia, Judæa, Greece, and Italy.' This statement, we are told, is not confined to M. Jacolliot, but has been admitted by almost all Oriental scholars. The Old and New Testaments are found again in the Vedas, and the texts quoted by M. Jacolliot in support of his theory are said to leave it without doubt. Brahma created Adima (in Sanskrit, the first man) and gave him for companion Heva (in Sanskrit, that which completes life). He appointed the island of Ceylon for their residence. What follows afterwards is so beautifully described that I may be pardoned for quoting it. Only I must warn my readers, lest the extract should leave too deep an impression on their memory, that what M. Jacolliot calls a simple translation from Sanskrit is, as far as I can judge, a simple invention of some slightly mischievous Brahman, who, like the Pandits of Lieutenant Wilford, took advantage of the zeal and credulity of a French judge:—

'Having created the Man and the Woman (*simultaneously*, not one after the other), and animated them with the divine afflatus—the Lord said unto them: "Behold, your mission is to people this beautiful Island [Ceylon], where I have gathered together everything pleasant and needful for your subsistence —the rest of the Earth is as yet uninhabitable, but should your progeny so increase as to render the

bounds of paradise too narrow a habitation, let them inquire of me by sacrifice and I will make known my will."

'And thus saying, the Lord disappeared. . . .

'Then Adam and Eve dwelt together for a time in perfect happiness; but ere long a vague disquietude began to creep upon them. . . . The Spirit of Evil, jealous of their felicity and of the work of Brahma, inspired them with disturbing thoughts;—"Let us wander through the Island," said Adam to his companion, "and see if we may not find some part even more beautiful than this." . . .

'And Eve followed her husband . . wandering for days and for months; . . . but as they advanced the woman was seized with strange and inexplicable terrors: "Adam," said she, "let us go no farther: it seems to me that we are disobeying the Lord; have we not already quitted the place which he assigned us for a dwelling and forbade us to leave?"

'"Fear not," replied Adam; "this is not that fearful wilderness of which he spake to us." . . .

'And they wandered on. . . .

'Arriving at last at the extremity of the Island, they beheld a smooth and narrow arm of the sea, and beyond it a vast and apparently boundless country, connected with their Island only by a narrow and rocky pathway arising from the bosom of the waters.

'The two wanderers stood amazed: the country before them was covered with stately trees, birds of a thousand colours flitting amidst their foliage.

'. . . "Behold, what beautiful things!" cried Adam, "and what good fruit such trees must produce;

. let us go and taste them, and if that country is better than this, we will dwell there."

'Eve, trembling, besought Adam to do nothing that might irritate the Lord against them. "Are we not well here? Have we not pure water and delicious fruits? Wherefore seek other things?"

'"True," replied Adam, "but we will return; what harm can it be to visit this unknown country that presents itself to our view?" . . . And as he approached the rocks, Eve, trembling, followed.

'Placing his wife upon his shoulders, he proceeded to cross the space that separated him from the object of his desires, but no sooner did he touch the shore than trees, flowers, fruits, birds, all that they had perceived from the opposite side, in an instant vanished amidst terrific clamour; . . . the rocks by which they had crossed sunk beneath the waters, a few sharp peaks alone remaining above the surface, to indicate the place of the bridge which had been destroyed by Divine displeasure.

'The vegetation which they had seen from the opposite shore was but a delusive mirage raised by the Spirit of Evil to tempt them to disobedience.

'Adam fell, weeping, upon the naked sands, . . . but Eve throwing herself into his arms, besought him not to despair; . . . "let us rather pray to the Author of all things to pardon us." . . .

'And as she spake there came a voice from the clouds, saying,

'"Woman! *thou* hast only sinned from love to thy husband, whom I commanded thee to love, and thou hast hoped in me.

'"I therefore pardon thee—and I pardon him also

for *thy* sake: . . . but ye may no more return to paradise, which I had created for your happiness: . . . through your disobedience to my commands the Spirit of Evil has obtained possession of the Earth. . . . Your children reduced to labour and to suffer by your fault will become corrupt and forget me. . .

'"But I will send Vishnu, who will be born of a woman, and who will bring to all the hope of a reward in another life, and the means by prayer of softening their sufferings."'

The translator from whom I have quoted exclaims at the end, as well he might:—

'What grandeur and what simplicity is this Hindu legend! and at the same time how simply logical! . . . Behold here the veritable Eve—the true woman.'

But much more extraordinary things are quoted by M. Jacolliot, from the Vedas and the commentaries.

On p. 63 we read that Manu, Minos, and Manes, had the same name as Moses; on p. 73, the Brahmans who invaded India are represented as the successors of a great reformer called Christna. The name of Zoroaster is derived from the Sanskrit Sûryastara (p. 110), meaning 'he who spreads the worship of the Sun.' After it has been laid down (p. 116) that Hebrew was derived from Sanskrit, we are assured that there is little difficulty in deriving Jehovah from Zeus.[1] Zeus, Jezeus, Jesus, and Isis are all declared to be the same name, and later on (p. 130) we learn that 'at present the Brahmans who

[1] P. 125. 'Pour quiconque s'est occupé d'études philologiques, Jéhova dérivé de Zeus est facile à admettre.'

officiate in the pagodas and temples give this title of Jeseus—*i.e.* the pure essence, the divine emanation—to Christna only, who alone is recognised as the Word, the truly incarnated, by the worshippers of Vishnu and the freethinkers among the Brahmans.'

We are assured that the Apostles, the poor fishermen of Galilee, were able to read the Veda (p. 356); and it was their greatest merit that they did not reject the miraculous accounts of the Vedic period, because the world was not yet ripe for freedom of thought. Kristna, or Christna, we read on p. 360, signified in Sanskrit, sent by God, promised by God, holy; and as the name of Christ or *Christos* is not Hebrew, whence could it have been taken except from Krishna, the son of Devakî, or, as M. Jacolliot writes, Devanaguy?

It is difficult, nay, almost impossible, to criticise or refute such statements, and yet it is necessary to do so; for such is the interest, or I should rather say the feverish curiosity, excited by anything that bears on ancient religion, that M. Jacolliot's book has produced a very wide and very deep impression. It has been remarked with some surprise that Vedic scholars in Europe had failed to discover these important passages in the Veda which he has pointed out, or, still worse, that they had never brought them to the knowledge of the public. In fact, if anything was wanting to show that a general knowledge of the history of ancient religion ought to form part of our education, it was the panic created by M. Jacolliot's book. It is simply the story of Lieutenant Wilford over again, only far less excusable

now than a hundred years ago. Many of the words which M. Jacolliot quotes as Sanskrit are not Sanskrit at all; others never have the meaning which he assigns to them; and as to the passages from the Vedas (including our old friend the Bhagaveda-gîta), they are not from the Veda, they are not from any old Sanskrit writer—they simply belong to the second half of the nineteenth century. What happened to Lieutenant Wilford has happened again to M. Jacolliot. He tells us the secret himself:—

'One day,' he says (p. 280), 'when we were reading the translation of Manu, by Sir W. Jones, a note led us to consult the Indian commentator, Kullûka Bhatta, when we found an allusion to the sacrifice of a son by his father prevented by God himself after he had commanded it. We then had only one *idée fixe*—namely, to find again in the dark mass of the religious books of the Hindu, the original account of that event. We should never have succeeded but for "the complaisance" of a Brahman with whom we were reading Sanskrit, and who, yielding to our request, brought us from the library of his pagoda the works of the theologian Ramatsariar, which have yielded us such precious assistance in this volume.'

As to the story of the son offered as a sacrifice by his father, and released at the command of the gods, M. Jacolliot might have found the original account of it from the Veda, both text and translation, in my 'History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature.' He would soon have seen that the story of Sunahsepa being sold by his father in order to be sacrificed in the place of an Indian prince, has very little in common

with the intended sacrifice of Isaac by Abraham. M. Jacolliot has, no doubt, found out by this time that he has been imposed upon; and if so, he ought to follow the example of Colonel Wilford, and publicly state what has happened. Even then, I doubt not that his statements will continue to be quoted for a long time, and that Adima and Heva, thus brought to life again, will make their appearance in many a book and many a lecture-room.

Lest it be supposed that such accidents happen to Sanskrit scholars only, or that this fever is bred only in the jungles of Indian mythology, I shall mention at least one other case which will show that this disease is of a more general character, and that want of caution will produce it in every climate.

Before the discovery of Sanskrit, China had stood for a long time in the place which was afterwards occupied by India. When the ancient literature and civilisation of China became first known to the scholars of Europe, the Celestial Empire had its admirers and prophets as full of enthusiasm as Sir W. Jones and Lieutenant Wilford, and there was nothing, whether Greek philosophy or Christian morality, that was not supposed to have had its first origin among the sages of China. The proceedings of the Jesuit missionaries in China were most extraordinary. They had themselves admitted the antiquity of the writings of Confucius and Lao-tse, both of whom lived in the sixth century B.C.[1] But in their zeal to show that the sacred books of the Chinese contained numerous passages borrowed from

[1] Stanislas Julien, *Le Livre de la Voie et de la Vertu*. Paris, 1842, p. iv.

the Bible, nay, even some of the dogmas of the later Church, they hardly perceived that, taking into account the respective dates of these books, they were really proving that a kind of anticipated Christianity had been accorded to the ancient sages of the Celestial Empire. The most learned advocate of this school was Father Prémare. Another supporter of the same view, Montucci,[1] speaking of Lao-tse's Tao-te-king, says:—

'We find in it so many sayings clearly referring to the triune God, that no one who has read this book can doubt that the mystery of the most holy Trinity was revealed to the Chinese more than five centuries before the advent of Christ. Everybody, therefore, who knows the strong feeling of the Chinese for their own teachers, will admit that nothing more efficient could be found in order to fix the dogmas of the Christian religion in the mind of the Chinese than the demonstration that these dogmas agree with their own books. The study, therefore, and the translation of this singular book (the Tao-te-king) would prove most useful to the missionaries, in order to bring to a happy issue the desired gathering in of the Apostolic harvest.'

What followed is so extraordinary that, though it has often been related, it deserves to be related again, more particularly as the whole problem which was supposed to have been solved once for all by M. Stanislas Julien, has of late been opened again by Dr. von Strauss, in the 'Journal of the German Oriental Society,' 1869.

There is a passage at the beginning of the

[1] Montucci, *De studiis sinicis.* Berolini, 1808.

fourteenth chapter of the Tao-te-king in which Father Amyot felt certain that the three Persons of the Trinity could be recognised. He translated it:—

'He who is as it were visible but cannot be seen is called Khi.

'He whom we cannot hear, and who does not speak to our ear, is called Hi.

'He who is as it were tangible, but cannot be touched, is called Wei.'

Few readers, I believe, would have been much startled by this passage, or would have seen in it what Father Amyot saw. But more startling revelations were in store. The most celebrated Chinese scholar of his time, Abel Rémusat, took up the subject; and after showing that the first of the three names had to be pronounced, not Khi, but I, he maintained that the three syllables I Hi Wei, were meant for Je-ho-vah. According to him, the three characters employed in this name have no meaning in Chinese; they are only signs of sounds foreign to the Chinese language; and they were intended to render the Greek Ἰαώ, the name which, according to Diodorus Siculus, the Jews gave to their God. Rémusat goes on to remark that Lao-tse had really rendered this Hebrew name more accurately than the Greeks, because he had preserved the aspiration of the second syllable, which was lost in Greek. In fact, he entertained no doubt that this word, occurring in the work of Lao-tse, proves an intellectual communication between the West and China, in the sixth century B.C.

Fortunately, the panic created by this discovery did not last long. M. Stanislas Julien published in

1842 a complete translation of this difficult book; and here all traces of the name of Jehovah have disappeared.

'The three syllables,' he writes, 'which Abel Rémusat considered as purely phonetic and foreign to the Chinese language, have a very clear and intelligible meaning, and have been fully explained by Chinese commentators. The first syllable, I, means without colour; the second, Hi, without sound or voice; the third, Wei, without body. The proper translation therefore is:—

'You look (for the Tao, the law) and you see it not: it is colourless.

'You listen and you hear it not: it is voiceless.

'You wish to touch it and you reach it not: it is without body.'

Until, therefore, some other traces can be discovered in Chinese literature, proving an intercourse between China and Judæa in the sixth century B.C., we can hardly be called upon to believe that the Jews should have communicated this one name, which they hardly trusted themselves to pronounce at home, to a Chinese philosopher; and we must treat the apparent similarity between I-Hi-Wei and Jehovah as an accident, which ought to serve as a useful warning, though it need in no way discourage a careful and honest study of Comparative Theology.

XXIII.

ON FREEDOM.

Presidential Address Delivered before the Birmingham Midland Institute, October 20, 1879.

Not more than twenty years have passed since John Stuart Mill sent forth his plea for Liberty.[1]

If there is one among the leaders of thought in England who, by the elevation of his character and the calm composure of his mind, deserved the so often

[1] Mill tells us that his Essay *On Liberty* was planned and written down in 1854. It was in mounting the steps of the Capitol in January, 1855, that the thought first arose of converting it into a volume, and it was not published till 1859. The author, who in his Autobiography speaks with exquisite modesty of all his literary performances, allows himself one single exception when speaking of his Essay *On Liberty*. 'None of my writings,' he says, 'have been either so carefully composed or so sedulously corrected as this.' Its final revision was to have been the work of the winter of 1858 to 1859, which he and his wife had arranged to pass in the South of Europe, a hope which was frustrated by his wife's death. 'The *Liberty*,' he writes, 'is likely to survive longer than anything else that I have written (with the possible exception of the *Logic*), because the conjunction of her mind with mine has rendered it a kind of philosophic textbook of a single truth, which the changes progressively taking place in modern society tend to bring out into stronger relief: the importance, to man and society, of a large variety of character, and of giving full freedom to human nature to expand itself in innumerable and conflicting directions.'

misplaced title of Serene Highness, it was, I think, John Stuart Mill.

But in his Essay 'On Liberty,' Mill for once becomes passionate. In presenting his Bill of Rights, in stepping forward as the champion of individual liberty, he seems to be possessed by a new spirit. He speaks like a martyr, or the defender of martyrs. The individual human soul, with its unfathomable endowments, and its capacity of growing to something undreamt of in our philosophy, becomes in his eyes a sacred thing, and every encroachment on its world-wide domain is treated as sacrilege. Society, the arch-enemy of the rights of individuality, is represented like an evil spirit, whom it behoves every true man to resist with might and main, and whose demands, as they cannot be altogether ignored, must be reduced at all hazards to the lowest level.

I doubt whether any of the principles for which Mill pleaded so warmly and strenuously in his Essay 'On Liberty' would at the present day be challenged or resisted, even by the most illiberal of philosophers, or the most conservative of politicians. Mill's demands sound very humble to *our* ears. They amount to no more than this, 'that the individual is not accountable to society for his actions so far as they concern the interests of no person but himself, and that he may be subjected to social or legal punishments for such actions only as are prejudicial to the interests of others.'

Is there any one here present who doubts the justice of that principle, or who would wish to reduce the freedom of the individual to a smaller measure? Whatever social tyranny may have existed twenty

years ago, when it wrung that fiery protest from the lips of John Stuart Mill, can we imagine a state of society, not totally Utopian, in which the individual man need be less ashamed of his social fetters, in which he could more freely utter all his honest convictions, more boldly propound all his theories, more fearlessly agitate for their speedy realisation; in which, in fact, each man can be so entirely himself as the society of England, such as it now is, such as generations of hard-thinking and hard-working Englishmen have made it, and left it as the most sacred inheritance to their sons and daughters?

Look through the whole of history, not excepting the brightest days of republican freedom at Athens and Rome, and you will not find one single period in which the measure of liberty accorded to each individual was larger than it is at present, at least in England. And if you wish to realise the full blessings of the time in which we live, compare Mill's plea for Liberty with another written not much more than two hundred years ago, and by a thinker not inferior either in power or boldness to Mill himself. According to Hobbes, the only freedom which an individual in his ideal state has a right to claim is what he calls 'freedom of thought,' and that freedom of thought consists in our being able to think what we like—so long as we keep it to ourselves. Surely, such freedom of thought existed even in the days of the Inquisition, and we should never call thought free, if it had to be kept a prisoner in solitary and silent confinement. By freedom of thought we mean freedom of speech, freedom of the press, freedom of action, whether individual or associated, and of that freedom

the present generation, as compared with all former generations, the English nation, as compared with all other nations, enjoys, there can be no doubt, a good measure, pressed down, and shaken together, and sometimes running over.

It may be said that some dogmas still remain in politics, in religion, and in morality; but those who defend them claim no longer any infallibility, and those who attack them, however small their minority, need fear no violence, nay, may reckon on an impartial and even sympathetic hearing, as soon as people discover in their pleadings the true ring of honest conviction and the warmth inspired by an unselfish love of truth.

It has seemed strange therefore to many readers of Mill, particularly on the Continent, that this plea for liberty, this demand for freedom for every individual to be what he is, and to develop all the germs of his nature, should have come from what is known as the freest of all countries, England. We might well understand such a cry of indignation if it had reached us from Russia; but why should English philosophers, of all others, have to protest against the tyranny of society? It is true, nevertheless, that in countries governed despotically, the individual, unless he is obnoxious to the Government, enjoys far greater freedom, or rather licence, than in a country like England, which governs itself. Russian society, for instance, is extremely indulgent. It tolerates in its rulers and statesmen a haughty defiance of the simplest rules of social propriety, and it seems amused rather than astonished or indignant at the vagaries, the frenzies, and outrages, of those who in

brilliant drawing-rooms or lecture-rooms preach the doctrines of what is called Nihilism or Individualism,[1] —viz., 'that society must be regenerated by a struggle for existence and the survival of the strongest, processes which Nature has sanctioned, and which have proved successful among wild animals.' If there is danger in these doctrines the Government is expected to see to it. It may place watchmen at the doors of every house and at the corner of every street, but it must not count on the better classes coming forward to enrol themselves as special constables, or even on the co-operation of public opinion which in England would annihilate that kind of Nihilism with one glance of scorn and pity.

In a self-governed country like England, the resistance which society, if it likes, can oppose to the individual in the assertion of his rights, is far more compact and powerful than in Russia, or even in Germany. Even where it does not employ the arm of the law, society knows how to use that quieter, but more crushing pressure, that calm, Gorgon-like look which only the bravest and stoutest hearts know how to resist.

It is against that indirect repression which a well-organised society exercises, both through its male and female representatives, that Mill's demand for liberty seems directed. He does not stand up for unlimited individualism; on the contrary, he would have been the most strenuous defender of that balance of power between the weak and the strong on which

[1] Herzen defined Nihilism as 'the most perfect freedom from all settled concepts, from all inherited restraints and impediments which hamper the progress of the Occidental intellect with the historical drag tied to its foot.'

all social life depends. But he resents those smaller penalties which society will always inflict on those who disturb its dignified peace and comfort:—avoidance, exclusion, a cold look, a stinging remark. Had Mill any right to complain of these social penalties? Would it not rather amount to an interference with individual liberty to deprive any individual or any number of individuals of those weapons of self-defence? Those who themselves think and speak freely, have hardly a right to complain, if others claim the same privilege. Mill himself called the Conservative party the stupid party *par excellence*, and he took great pains to explain that it was so, not by accident, but by necessity. Need he wonder if those whom he whipped and scourged used their own whips and scourges against so merciless a critic?

Freethinkers—and I use that name as a title of honour for all who, like Mill, claim for every individual the fullest freedom in thought, word, or deed, compatible with the freedom of others—are apt to make one mistake. Conscious of their own honest intentions, they cannot bear to be misjudged or slighted. They expect society to submit to their often very painful operations as a patient submits to the knife of the surgeon. This is not in human nature. The enemy of abuses is always abused by his enemies. Society will never yield one inch without resistance, and few reformers live long enough to receive the thanks of those whom they have reformed. Mill's unsolicited election to Parliament was a triumph not often shared by social reformers; it was as exceptional as Bright's admission to a seat in

the Cabinet, or Stanley's appointment as Dean of Westminster. Such anomalies will happen in a country fortunately so full of anomalies as England; but, as a rule, a political reformer must not be angry if he passes through life without the title of Right Honourable; nor should a man, if he will always speak the truth, the whole truth, and nothing but the truth, be disappointed if he dies a martyr rather than a Bishop.

But even granting that in Mill's time there existed some traces of social tyranny, where are they now? Look at the newspapers and the journals. Is there any theory too wild, any reform too violent, to be openly defended? Look at the drawing-rooms or the meetings of learned societies. Are not the most eccentric talkers the spoiled children of the fashionable world? When young lords begin to discuss the propriety of limiting the rights of inheritance, and young tutors are not afraid to propose curtailing the long vacation, surely we need not complain of the intolerance of English society.

Whenever I state these facts to my German and French and Italian friends, who from reading Mill's Essay On Liberty have derived the impression that, however large an amount of political liberty England may enjoy, it enjoys but little of intellectual freedom, they are generally willing to be converted so far as London, or other great cities, are concerned. But look at your Universities, they say, the nurseries of English thought! Compare their mediæval spirit, their monastic institutions, their scholastic philosophy, with the freshness and freedom of the Con-

tinental Universities! Strong as these prejudices about Oxford and Cambridge have long been, they have become still more intense since Professor Helmholtz, in an inaugural address which he delivered at his installation as Rector of the University of Berlin, lent to them the authority of his great name. 'The tutors,' he says,[1] 'in the English Universities cannot deviate by a hair's-breadth from the dogmatic system of the English Church, without exposing themselves to the censure of their Archbishops and losing their pupils.' In German Universities, on the contrary, we are told that the extreme conclusions of materialistic metaphysics, the boldest speculations within the sphere of Darwin's theory of evolution, may be propounded without let or hindrance, quite as much as the highest apotheosis of Papal infallibility.

Here the facts on which Professor Helmholtz relies are entirely wrong, and the writings of some of our most eminent tutors supply a more than sufficient refutation of his statements. Archbishops have no official position whatsoever in English Universities, and their censure of an Oxford tutor would be resented as impertinent by the whole University. Nor does the University, as such, exercise any very strict control over the tutors, even when they lecture not to their own College only. Each Master of Arts at Oxford claims now the right to lecture (*venia docendi*), and I doubt whether they would submit to

[1] *Ueber die Akademische Freiheit der Deutschen Universitäten*, Rede beim Antritt des Rectorats an der Friedrich-Wilhelms-Universität in Berlin, am October 15, 1877, gehalten von Dr. H. Helmholtz.

those restrictions which, in Germany, the Faculty imposes on every *Privat-docent*. *Privat-docents* in German Universities have been rejected by the Faculty for incompetence, and silenced for insubordination. I know of no such cases at Oxford during my residence of more than thirty years, nor can I think it likely that they should ever occur.

As to the extreme conclusions of materialistic metaphysics, there are Oxford tutors who have grappled with the systems of such giants as Hobbes, Locke, or Hume, and who are not likely to be frightened by Büchner and Vogt.

I know comparisons are odious, and I should be the last man to draw comparisons between English and German Universities unfavourable to the latter. But with regard to freedom of thought, of speech, and action, Professor Helmholtz, if he would spend but a few weeks at Oxford, would find that we enjoy it in fuller measure here than the Professors and *Privat-docents* in any Continental University. The publications of some of our professors and tutors ought at least to have convinced him that if there is less of brave words and turbulent talk in their writings, they display throughout a determination to speak the truth, which may be matched, but could not easily be excelled, by the leaders of thought in France, Germany, or Italy.

The real difference between English and Continental Universities is that the former govern themselves, the latter are governed. Self-government entails responsibilities, sometimes restraints and reticences. I may here be allowed to quote the words of another eminent Professor of the University of

Berlin, Du Bois Reymond, who, in addressing his colleagues, ventured to tell them,[1] 'We have still to learn from the English how the greatest independence of the individual is compatible with willing submission to salutary, though irksome, statutes.' That is particularly true when the statutes are self-imposed. In Germany, as Professor Helmholtz tells us himself, the last decision in almost all the more important affairs of the Universities rests with the Government, and he does not deny that in times of political and ecclesiastical tension, a most ill-advised use has been made of that power. There are, besides, the less important matters, such as raising of salaries, leave of absence, scientific missions, even titles and decorations, all of which enable a clever Minister of Instruction to assert his personal influence among the less independent members of the University. In Oxford the University does not know the Ministry, nor the Ministry the University. The acts of the Government, be it Liberal or Conservative, are freely discussed, and often powerfully resisted by the academic constituencies, and the personal dislike of a Minister or Ministerial Councillor could as little injure a professor or tutor as his favour could add one penny to his salary.

But these are minor matters. What gives their own peculiar character to the English Universities is a sense of power and responsibility: power, because they are the most respected among the numerous

[1] *Ueber eine Akademie der Deutschen Sprache*, p. 34. Another keen observer of English life, Dr. K. Hillebrand, in an article in the October number of the *Nineteenth Century*, remarks: 'Nowhere is there greater individual liberty than in England, and nowhere do people renounce it more readily of their own accord.'

corporations in the country; responsibility, because the higher education of the whole country has been committed to their charge. Their only master is public opinion as represented in Parliament, their only incentive their own sense of duty. There is no country in Europe where Universities hold so exalted a position, and where those who have the honour to belong to them may say with greater truth, *Noblesse oblige.*

I know the dangers of self-government, particularly where higher and more ideal interests are concerned, and there are probably few who wish for a real reform in schools and Universities who have not occasionally yielded to the desire for a Dictator, of a Bismarck or a Falk. But such a desire springs only from a momentary weakness and despondency; and no one who knows the difference between being governed and governing oneself, would ever wish to descend from that higher though dangerous position to a lower one, however safe and comfortable it might seem. No one who has tasted the old wine of freedom would ever really wish to exchange it for the new wine of external rule. Public opinion is sometimes a hard master, and majorities can be great tyrants to those who want to be honest to their own convictions. But in the struggle of all against all, each individual feels that he has his rightful place, and that he may exercise his rightful influence. If he is beaten, he is beaten in fair fight; if he conquers, he has no one else to thank. No doubt, despotic Governments have often exercised the most beneficial patronage in encouraging and rewarding poets, artists, and men of science. But

men of genius who have conquered the love and admiration of a whole nation are greater than those who have gained the favour of the most brilliant Courts; and we know how some of the fairest reputations have been wrecked on the patronage which they had to accept at the hands of powerful Ministers or ambitious Sovereigns.

But to return to Mill and his plea for Liberty. Though I can hardly believe that, were he still among us, he would claim a larger measure of freedom for the individual than is now accorded to every one of us in the society in which we move, yet the chief cause on which he founded his plea for Liberty, the chief evil which he thought could be remedied only if society would allow more elbow-room to individual genius, exists in the same degree as in his time—aye, even in a higher degree. The principle of individuality has suffered more at present than perhaps at any former period of history. The world is becoming more and more gregarious, and what the French call our *nature moutonnière*, our tendency to leap where the sheep in front of us has leapt, becomes more and more prevalent in politics, in religion, in art, and even in science. M. de Tocqueville expressed his surprise how much more Frenchmen of the present day resemble one another than did those of the last generation. The same remark, adds John Stuart Mill, might be made of England in a greater degree. 'The modern *régime* of public opinion,' he writes, 'is in an unorganised form what the Chinese educational and political systems are in an organised; and unless individuality shall be able successfully to assert itself against this yoke, Europe, notwithstanding its noble

antecedents and its professed Christianity, will tend to become another China.'

I fully agree with Mill in recognising the dangers of uniformity, but I doubt whether what he calls the *régime* of public opinion is alone, or even chiefly, answerable for it. No doubt there are some people in whose eyes uniformity seems an advantage rather than a disadvantage. If all were equally strong, equally educated, equally honest, equally rich, equally tall, or equally small, society would seem to them to have reached the highest ideal. The same people admire an old French garden, with its clipped yew-trees, forming artificial walls and towers and pyramids, far more than the giant yews which, like large serpents, clasp the soil with their coiling roots, and overshadow with their dark green branches the white chalk cliffs of the Thames. But those French gardens, unless they are constantly clipped and prevented from growing, soon fall into decay. As in nature, so in society, uniformity means but too often stagnation, while variety is the surest sign of health and vigour. The deepest secret of nature is its love of continued novelty. Its tendency, if unrestrained, is towards constantly creating new varieties, which, if they fulfil their purpose, become fixed for a time, or, it may be, for ever; while others, after they have fulfilled their purpose, vanish to make room for new and stronger types.

The same is the secret of human society. It consists and lives in individuals, each meant to be different from all the others, and to contribute his own peculiar share to the common wealth. As no tree is like any other tree, and no leaf on the same tree like

any other leaf, no human being is, or is meant to be, exactly like any other human being. It is in this endless, and to us inconceivable, variety of human souls that the deepest purpose of human life is to be realised; and the more society fulfils that purpose, the more it allows free scope for the development of every individual germ, the richer will be the harvest in no distant future. Such is the mystery of individuality that I do not wonder if even those philosophers who, like Mill, confine the use of the word *sacred* within the very smallest compass, see in each individual soul something sacred, something to be revered, even where we cannot understand it, something to be protected against all vulgar violence.

Where I differ from Mill and his school is on the question as to the quarter from whence the epidemic of uniformity springs which threatens the free development of modern society. Mill points to the society in which we move; to those who are in front of us, to our contemporaries. I feel convinced that our real enemies are at our back, and that the heaviest chains which are fastened on us are those made, not by the present, but by past generations—by our ancestors, not by our contemporaries.

It is on this point, on the trammels of individual freedom with which we may almost be said to be born into the world, and on the means by which we may shake off these old chains, or at all events learn to carry them more lightly and gracefully, that I wish to speak to you this evening.

You need not be afraid that I am going to enter upon the much discussed subject of heredity, whether in its physiological or psychological aspects. It is a

favourite subject just now, and the most curious facts have been brought together of late to illustrate the working of what is called heredity. But the more we know of these facts, the less we seem able to comprehend the underlying principle. Inheritance is one of those numerous words which by their very simplicity and clearness are so apt to darken our counsel. If a father has blue eyes and the son has blue eyes, what can be clearer than that he inherited them? If the father stammers and the son stammers, who can doubt but that it came by inheritance? If the father is a musician and the son a musician, we say very glibly that the talent was inherited. But what does *inherited* mean? In no case does it mean what *inherited* usually means—something external, like money, collected by a father, and, after his death, secured by law to his son. Whatever else inherited may mean, it does not mean that. But unfortunately the word is there, it seems almost pedantic to challenge its meaning, and people are always grateful if an easy word saves them the trouble of hard thought.

Another apparent advantage of the theory of heredity is that it never fails. If the son has blue, and the father black, eyes, all is right again, for either the mother, or the grandmother, or some historic or prehistoric ancestor, may have had blue eyes, and atavism, we know, will assert itself after hundreds and thousands of years.

Do not suppose that I deny the broad facts of what is called by the name of heredity. What I deny is that the name of heredity offers any scientific solution of a most difficult problem. It is a name, a metaphor, quite as bad as the old metaphor of *innate*

ideas; for there is hardly a single point of similarity between the process by which a son may share the black eyes, the stammering, or the musical talent of his father, and that by which, after his father's death, the law secures to the son the possession of the pounds, shillings, and pence which his father held in the Funds.

But whatever the true meaning of heredity may be, certain it is that every individual comes into the world heavy-laden. Nowhere has the consciousness of the burden which rests on each generation as it enters on its journey through life found stronger expression than among the Buddhists. What other people call by various names, 'fate or providence,' 'tradition or inheritance,' 'circumstances or environment,' they call *Karman*, deed—what has been done, whether by ourselves or by others, the accumulated work of all who have come before us, the consequences of which we have to bear, both for good and for evil. Originally this *Karman* seems to have been conceived as personal, as the work which we ourselves have done in our former existences. But, as personally we are not conscious of having done such work in former ages, that kind of *Karman*, too, might be said to be impersonal. To the question how *Karman* began, what was the nucleus of that accumulation which forms the condition of present existence, Buddhism has no answer to give, any more than any other system of religion or philosophy. The Buddhists say it began with *avidyâ*, and *avidyâ* means ignorance.[1] They are much more deeply interested in the question how *Karman* may

[1] Spencer Hardy, *Manual of Buddhism*, p. 391.

be annihilated, how each man may free himself from the influence of *Karman*, and Nirvâna, the highest object of all their dreams, is often defined by Buddhist philosophers as 'freedom from *Karman*.'[1]

What the Buddhists call by the general name of *Karman*, comprehends all influences which the past exercises on the present, whether physical or mental.[2] It is not my object to examine or even to name all these influences, though I confess nothing is more interesting than to look upon the surface of our modern life as we look on a geological map, and to see the most ancient formations cropping out everywhere under our feet. Difficult as it is to colour a geological map of England, it would be still more difficult to find a sufficient variety of colours to mark the different ingredients of the intellectual condition of her people.

That all of us, whether we speak English or German, or French or Russian, are really speaking an ancient Oriental tongue, incredible as it would have sounded a hundred years ago, is now recognised by everybody. Though the various dialects now spoken in Europe have been separated many thousands of years from the Sanskrit, the ancient classical language of India, yet so close is the bond that holds the West and East together, that in many cases an intelligent Englishman might still guess the mean-

[1] Spencer Hardy, *Manual of Buddhism*, p. 39.

[2] 'As one generation dies and gives way to another, the heir of the consequences of all its virtues and all its vices, the exact result of pre-existent causes, so each individual, in the long chain of life, inherits all, of good or evil, which all its predecessors have done or been, and takes up the struggle towards enlightenment precisely where they left it.'—Rhys Davids, *Buddhism*, p. 104.

ing of a Sanskrit word. How little difference is there between Sanskrit sûnu and English *son*, between Sanskrit duhitar and English *daughter*, between Sanskrit vid, to know, and English *to wit*, between Sanskrit vaksh, to grow, and English *to wax*! Think how we value a Saxon urn, or a Roman coin, or a Celtic weapon! how we dig for them, clean them, label them, and carefully deposit them in our museums! Yet what is their antiquity compared with the antiquity of such words as *son* or *daughter*, *father* and *mother*? There are no monuments older than those collected in the handy volumes which we call Dictionaries, and those who know how to interpret those English antiquities—as you may see them interpreted, for instance, in Grimm's Dictionary of the German, in Littré's Dictionary of the French, or in Professor Skeats' Etymological Dictionary of the English Language — will learn more of the real growth of the human mind than by studying many volumes on logic and psychology.

And as by our language we belong to the Aryan stratum, we belong through our letters to the Hamitic. We still write English in hieroglyphics; and in spite of all the vicissitudes through which the ancient hieroglyphics have passed in their journey from Egypt to Phœnicia, from Phœnicia to Greece, from Greece to Italy, and from Italy to England, when we write a capital F , when we draw the top line and the smaller line through the middle of the letter, we really draw the two horns of the cerastes, the horned serpent, which the ancient Egyptians used for representing the sound of f. They

write the name of the king whom the Greeks called *Cheops*, and they themselves *Chu-fu*, like this:[1]

Here the first sign, the sieve, is to be pronounced *chu*; the second, the horned serpent, *fu*, and the little bird, again, *u*. In the more cursive or Hieratic writing the horned serpent appears as ; in the later Demotic as and . The Phœnicians, who borrowed their letters from the Hieratic Egyptian, wrote and . The Greeks, who took their letters from the Phœnicians, wrote . When the Greeks, instead of writing, like the Phœnicians, from right to left, began to write from left to right, they turned each letter, and as became , our k, so , vau, became F, the Greek so-called Digamma, , the Latin F.

The first letter in *Chu-fu*, too, still exists in our alphabet, and in the transverse line of our H we may recognise the last remnant of the lines which divide the sieve. The sieve appears in Hieratic as , in Phœnician as , in ancient Greek as , which occurs on an inscription found at Mycenæ and elsewhere as the sign of the spiritus asper, while in Latin it is known to us as the letter H.[2] In the same manner the undulating line of our capital still recalls very strikingly the bent back of the crouching

[1] Bunsen, *Egypt*, ii. pp. 77, 150.

[2] *Mémoire sur l'Origine Egyptienne de l'Alphabet Phénicien*, par E. de Rougé, Paris, 1874.

lion, , which in the later hieroglyphic inscriptions represents the sound of L.

If thus in our language we are Aryan, in our letters Egyptian, we have only to look at our watches to see that we are Babylonian. Why is our hour divided into sixty minutes, our minute into sixty seconds? Would not a division of the hour into ten, or fifty, or a hundred minutes have been more natural? We have sixty divisions on the dials of our watches simply because the Greek astronomer Hipparchus, who lived in the second century B.C., accepted the Babylonian system of reckoning time, that system being sexagesimal. The Babylonians knew the decimal system, but for practical purposes they counted by *sossi* and *sari*, the *sossos* representing 60, the *saros* 60×60, or 3,600. From Hipparchus that system found its way into the works of Ptolemy, about 150 A.D., and thence it was carried down the stream of civilisation, finding its last resting-place on the dial-plates of our clocks.

And why are there twenty shillings to our sovereign? Again the real reason lies in Babylon. The Greeks learnt from the Babylonians the art of dividing gold and silver for the purpose of trade. It has been proved that the current gold piece of Western Asia was exactly the sixtieth part of a Babylonian *mná*, or *mina*. It was nearly equal to our sovereign. The difficult problem of the relative value of gold and silver in a bi-metallic currency had been solved to a certain extent in the ancient Mesopotamian kingdom, the proportion between gold and silver being fixed at 1 to $13\frac{1}{3}$. The silver shekel currrent in Babylon was heavier than the gold shekel in the proportion of $13\frac{1}{3}$

to 10, and had therefore the value of one-tenth of a gold shekel; and the half silver shekel, called by the Greeks a drachma, was worth one-twentieth of a gold shekel. The drachma, or half silver shekel, may therefore be looked upon as the most ancient type of our own silver shilling in its relation of one-twentieth of our gold sovereign.[1]

I shall mention only one more of the most essential tools of our mental life—namely, our *figures*, which we call Arabic, because we received them from the Arabs, but which the Arabs called Indian, because they received them from the Indians—in order to show you how this nineteenth century of ours is under the sway of centuries long past and forgotten; how we are what we are, not by ourselves, but by those who came before us, and how the intellectual ground on which we stand is made up of the detritus of thoughts which were first thought, not on these isles nor in Europe, but on the shores of the Oxus, the Nile, the Euphrates, and the Indus.

Now you may well ask *Quorsum hæc omnia?*—What has all this to do with freedom and with the free development of individuality? Because a man is born the heir of all the ages, can it be said that he is not free to grow and to expand, and to develop all the faculties of his mind? Are those who came before him, and who left him this goodly inheritance, to be called his enemies? Is that chain of tradition which connects him with the past really a galling fetter, and not rather the leading-strings without which he would never learn to walk straight?

Let us look at the matter more closely. No one

[1] See Brandis, *Das Münzwesen.*

would venture to say that every individual should begin life as a young savage, and be left to form his own language, and invent his own letters, numerals, and coins. On the contrary, if we comprehend all this and a great deal more, such as religion, morality, and secular knowledge, under the general name of *education*, even the most advanced defenders of individualism would hold that no child should enter society without submitting, or rather without being submitted, to education. Most of us would even go further, and make it criminal for parents or even for communities to allow children to grow up uneducated. The excuse of worthless parents that they are at liberty to do with their children as they like, has at last been blown to the winds, and among the principal advocates of compulsory education, and of the necessity of curtailing the freedom of savage parents of savage children, have been Mill and his friends, the apostles of liberty and individualism.[1] I remember the time when pseudo-Liberals were not ashamed to say that, whatever other nations, such as the Germans, might do, England would never submit to compulsory education; but that faint-hearted and mischievous cry has at last been silenced. A new era may be said to date in the history of every nation from the day on which 'compulsory education' becomes part of its statute-book; and I may congratulate the most Liberal town in England on having proved itself the most inexorable tyrant in carrying it into effect.

[1] 'Is it not almost a self-evident axiom, that the State should require and compel the education, up to a certain standard, of every human being who is born its citizen? Yet who is there that is not afraid to recognise and assert this truth?'—*On Liberty*, p. 188.

But do not let us imagine that compulsory education is without its dangers. Like a powerful engine, it must be carefully watched, if it is not to produce, what all compulsion will produce, a slavish receptivity, and, what all machines do produce, monotonous uniformity.

We know that all education must in the beginning be purely dogmatic. Children are taught language, religion, morality, patriotism, and afterwards at school, history, literature, mathematics, and all the rest, long before they are able to question, to judge, or choose for themselves, and there is hardly anything that a child will not believe, if it comes from those in whom the child believes.

Reading, writing, and arithmetic, no doubt, must be taught dogmatically, and they take up an enormous amount of time, particularly in English schools. English spelling is a national misfortune, and in the keen international race among all the countries of Europe, it handicaps the English child to a degree that seems incredible till we look at statistics. I know the difficulties of a Spelling Reform, I know what people mean when they call it impossible; but I also know that personal and national virtue consists in doing so-called impossible things, and that no nation has done, and has still to do, so many impossible things as the English.

But, granted that reading, writing, and arithmetic occupy nearly the whole school time and absorb the best powers of the pupils, cannot something be done in play-hours? Is there not some work that can be turned into play, and some play that can be turned into work? Cannot the powers of observation be

called out in a child while collecting flowers, or stones, or butterflies? Cannot his judgment be strengthened either in gymnastic exercises, or in measuring the area of a field or the height of a tower? Might not all this be done without a view to examinations or payment by results, simply for the sake of filling the little dull minds with one sunbeam of joy, such sunbeams being more likely hereafter to call hidden precious germs into life than the deadening weight of such lessons as, for instance, that *th-ough* is though, *thr-ough* is through, *en-ough* is enough. A child who believes that will hereafter believe anything. Those who wish to see Natural Science introduced into elementary schools frighten schoolmasters by the very name of Natural Science. But surely every schoolmaster who is worth his salt should be able to teach children a love of Nature, a wondering at Nature, a curiosity to pry into the secrets of Nature, an acquisitiveness for some of the treasures of Nature, and all this acquired in the fresh air of the field and the forest, where, better than in frouzy lecture-rooms, the edge of the senses can be sharpened, the chest widened, and that freedom of thought fostered which made England what it was even before the days of compulsory education.

But in addressing you here to-night it was my intention to speak of higher rather than of elementary education.

All education—as it now exists in most countries of Europe—may be divided into three stages—*elementary*, *scholastic*, and *academical*; or call it *primary*, *secondary*, and *tertiary*.

Elementary education has at last been made com-

pulsory in most civilised countries. Unfortunately, however, it seems impossible to include under compulsory education anything beyond the very elements of knowledge—at least for the present; though I know from experience that, with proper management, a well-conducted elementary school can afford to provide instruction in extra subjects—such as natural science, modern languages, and political economy—and yet, with the present system of Government grants, be self-supporting.[1]

The next stage above the elementary is *scholastic* education, as it is supplied in grammar schools, whether public or private. According as the pupils are intended either to go on to a university, or to enter at once on leaving school on the practical work of life, these schools are divided into two classes. In the one class, which in Germany are called *Real-schulen*, less Latin is taught, and no Greek, but more of mathematics, modern languages, and physical science; in the other, called *Gymnasia* on the Continent, classics form the chief staple of instruction.

It is during this stage that education, whether at private or public schools, exercises its strongest levelling influence. Little attention can be paid at large schools to individual tastes or talents. In Germany—even more, perhaps, than in England—it is the chief object of a good and conscientious master to have his class as uniform as possible at the end of the year; and he receives far more credit from the official examiner if his whole class marches well and keeps pace together, than if he can parade a few

[1] *Times*, January 25, 1879.

brilliant and forward boys, followed by a number of straggling laggards.

And as to the character of the teaching at school, how can it be otherwise than authoritative or dogmatic? The Socratic method is very good if we can find the *viri Socratici* and leisure for discussion. But at school, which now may seem to be called almost in mockery σχολή, or leisure, the true method is, after all, that patronised by the great educators of the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries. Boys at school must turn their mind into a row of pigeon-holes, filling as many as they can with useful notes, and never forgetting how many are empty. There is an immense amount of positive knowledge to be acquired between the ages of ten and eighteen—rules of grammar, strings of vocables, dates, names of towns, rivers, and mountains, mathematical formulas, etc. All depends here on the receptive and retentive powers of the mind. The memory has to be strengthened, without being overtaxed, till it acts almost mechanically. Learning by heart, I believe, cannot be too assiduously practised during the years spent at school. There may have been too much of it when, as the Rev. H. C. Adams informs us in his 'Wykehamica' (p. 357), boys used to say by heart 13,000 and 14,000 lines, when one repeated the whole of Virgil, nay, when another was able to say the whole of the English Bible by rote:—'Put him on where you would, he would go fluently on, as long as anyone would listen.'

No intellectual investment, I feel certain, bears such ample and such regular interest as gems of English, Latin, or Greek literature deposited in the

memory during childhood and youth, and taken up from time to time in the happy hours of solitude.

One fault I have to find with most schools, both in England and on the Continent. Boys do not read enough of the Greek and Roman classics. The majority of our masters are scholars by profession, and they are apt to lay undue stress on what they call accurate and minute scholarship, and to neglect wide and cursory reading. I know the arguments for minute accuracy, but I also know the mischief that is done by an exclusive devotion to critical scholarship before we have acquired a real familiarity with the principal works of classical literature. The time spent in our schools in learning the rules of grammar and syntax, writing exercises, and composing verses, is too large. Look only at our Greek and Latin grammars, with all their rules and exceptions, and exceptions on exceptions! It is too heavy a weight for any boy to carry; and no wonder that when one of the thousand small rules which they have learnt by heart is really wanted, it is seldom forthcoming. The end of classical teaching at school should be to make our boys acquainted, not only with the language, but with the literature and history, the ancient thought of the ancient world. Rules of grammar, syntax, or metre, are but means towards that end; they must never be mistaken for the end itself. A young man of eighteen, who has probably spent on an average ten years in learning Greek and Latin, ought to be able to read any of the ordinary Greek or Latin classics without much difficulty; nay, with a certain amount of pleasure. He might have to consult his dictionary now and then, or guess the

meaning of certain words; he might also feel doubtful sometime whether certain forms came from ἵημι, I send, or εἶμι, I go, or εἰμί, I am, particularly if preceded by prepositions. In these matters the best scholars are least inclined to be pharisaical; and whenever I meet in the controversies of classical scholars the favourite phrase, 'Every schoolboy knows, or ought to know, this,' I generally say to myself, 'No, he ought not.' Anyhow, those who wish to see the study of Greek and Latin retained in our public schools ought to feel convinced that it will certainly not be retained much longer, if it can be said with any truth that young men who leave school at eighteen are in many cases unable to read or to enjoy a classical text, unless they have seen it before.

Classical teaching, and all purely scholastic teaching, ought to be finished at school. When a young man goes to a University, unless he means to make scholarship his profession, he ought to be free to enter upon a new career. If he has not learnt by that time so much of Greek and Latin as is absolutely necessary in after-life for a lawyer, or a student of physical science, or even a clergyman, either he or his school is to blame. I do not mean to say that it would not be most desirable for everyone during his University career to attend some lectures on classical literature, on ancient history, philosophy, or art. What is to be deprecated is, that the University should have to do the work which belongs properly to the school.

The best colleges at Oxford and Cambridge have shown by their matriculation examinations what the standard of classical knowledge ought to be at

eighteen or nineteen. That standard can be reached by boys while still at school, as has been proved both by the so-called local examinations, and by the examinations of schools held under the Delegates appointed by the Universities. If, therefore, the University would reassert her old right, and make the first examination, called at Oxford Responsions, a general matriculation examination for admission to the University, not only would the public schools be stimulated to greater efforts, but the teaching of the University might assume, from the very beginning, that academic character which ought to distinguish it from mere schoolboy work.

Academic teaching ought to be not merely a continuation, but in one sense a correction of scholastic teaching. While at school instruction must be chiefly dogmatic, at the University is it to be Socratic? for I find no better name for that method which is to set a man free from the burden of purely traditional knowledge; to make him feel that the words which he uses are often empty, that the concepts he employs are, for the most part, mere bundles picked up at random; that even where he knows facts, he does not know the evidence for them; and where he expresses opinions, they are mostly mere dogmas, adopted by him without examination.

But for the Universities, I should indeed fear that Mill's prophecies might come true, and that the intellect of Europe might drift into dreary monotony. The Universities always have been, and, unless they are diverted from their original purpose, always will be, the guardians of the freedom of thought, the protectors of individual spontaneity; and it was

owing, I believe, to Mill's want of acquaintance with true academic teaching that he took so desponding a view of the generation growing up under his eyes.

When we leave school, our heads are naturally brimful of dogma—that is, of knowledge and opinions at second-hand. Such dead knowledge is extremely dangerous, unless it is sooner or later revived by the spirit of free inquiry. It does not matter whether our scholastic dogmas be true or false. The danger is the same. And why? Because to place either truth or error above the reach of argument is certain to weaken truth and to strengthen error. Secondly, because to hold as true on the authority of others anything which concerns us deeply, and which we could prove ourselves, produces feebleness, if not dishonesty. And, thirdly, because to feel unwilling or unable to meet objections by argument is generally the first step towards violence and persecution.

I do not think of religious dogmas only. They are generally the first to rouse inquiry, even during our schoolboy days, and they are by no means the most difficult to deal with. Dogma often rages where we least expect it. Among scientific men the theory of evolution is at present becoming, or has become, a dogma. What is the result? No objections are listened to, no difficulties recognised, and a man like Virchow, himself the strongest supporter of evolution, who has the moral courage to say that the descent of man from any ape whatsoever is, as yet, before the tribunal of scientific zoology, 'not proven,' is howled down in Germany in a manner worthy of Ephesians and Galatians. But at present I am thinking not so much of any special dogmas, but

rather of that dogmatic state of mind which is the almost inevitable result of the teaching at school. I think of the whole intellect, what has been called the *intellectus sibi permissus*, and I maintain it is the object of academic teaching to rouse that intellect out of its slumber by questions not less startling than when Galileo asked the world whether the sun was really moving and the earth stood still; or when Kant asked whether time and space were objects, or necessary forms of our sensuous intuition. Till our opinions have thus been tested and stood the test, we can hardly call them our own.

How true this is with regard to religion has been boldly expressed by Bishop Beveridge.

'Being conscious to myself, he writes in his 'Private Thoughts on Religion,' 'how great an ascendant Christianity holds over me beyond the rest, as being that religion whereinto I was born and baptised; that which the supreme authority has enjoined and my parents educated me in; that which every one I meet withal highly approves of, and which I myself have, by a long-continued profession, made almost natural to me: I am resolved to be more jealous and suspicious of this religion than of the rest, and be sure not to entertain it any longer without being convinced, by solid and substantial arguments, of the truth and certainty of it.'

This is bold and manly language from a Bishop, nearly two hundred years ago, and I certainly think that the time has come when some of the divinity lecturers at Oxford and Cambridge might well be employed in placing a knowledge of the sacred books of other religions within the reach of undergraduates.

Many of the difficulties—most of them of our own making—with regard to the origin, the handing down, the later corruptions and misinterpretations of sacred texts, would find their natural solution, if it was shown how exactly the same difficulties arose and had to be dealt with by theologians of other creeds. If some—aye, if many—of the doctrines of Christianity were met with in other religions also, surely that would not affect their value, or diminish their truth; while nothing, I feel certain, would more effectually secure to the pure and simple teaching of Christ its true place in the historical development of the human mind than to place it side by side with the other religions of the world. In the series of translations of the 'Sacred Books of the East,' of which the first three volumes have just appeared,[1] I wished myself to include a new translation of the Old and New Testaments; and when that series is finished it will, I believe, be admitted that nowhere would these two books have had a grander setting, or have shone with a brighter light, than surrounded by the Veda, the Zendavesta, the Buddhist Tripiṭaka, and the Qur'ân.

But as I said before, I was not thinking of religious dogmas only, or even chiefly, when I maintained that the character of academic teaching must be Socratic, not dogmatic. The evil of dogmatic teaching lies much deeper, and spreads much further.

Think only of language, the work of other people, not of ourselves, which we pick up at random in our

[1] *Sacred Books of the East*, edited by M. M., vols. i. to ix.; Clarendon Press, Oxford, 1879 and 1880.

race through life. Does not every word we use require careful examination and revision? It is not enough to say that language assists our thoughts or colours them, or possibly obscures them. No, language and thought are indivisible. It was not from poverty of expression that the Greeks called reason and language by the same word, λόγος. It was because they knew that, though we may distinguish between thought and speech, as we distinguish between force and function, it is as impossible to tear the one by violence away from the other as it is to separate the concave side of a lens from its convex side. This is something to learn and to understand, for, if properly understood, it will supply the key to most of our intellectual puzzles, and serve as the safest thread through the whole labyrinth of philosophy.

'It is evident,' as Hobbes remarks,[1] 'that truth and falsity have no place but amongst such living creatures as use speech. For though some brute creatures, looking upon the image of a man in a glass, may be affected with it, as if it were the man himself, and for this reason fear it or fawn upon it in vain; yet they do not apprehend it as true or false, but only as like; and in this they are not deceived. Wherefore, as men owe all their true ratiocination to the right understanding of speech, so also they owe their errors to the misunderstanding of the same; and as all the ornaments of philosophy proceed only from man, so from man also is derived the ugly absurdity of false opinion. For speech has something in it like to a spider's web (as it was said of old of Solon's laws), for by contexture of words tender and

[1] *Computation or Logic*, t. iii., viii., p 36.

delicate wits are ensnared or stopped, but strong wits break easily through them.'

Let me illustrate my meaning by at least one instance.

Among the words which have proved spider's webs, ensnaring even the greatest intellects of the world from Aristotle down to Leibniz, the terms *genus*, *species*, and *individual* occupy a very prominent place. The opposition of Aristotle to Plato, of the Nominalists to the Realists, of Leibniz to Locke, of Herbart to Hegel, turns on the true meaning of these words. At school, of course, all we can do is to teach the received meaning of *genus* and *species*; and if a boy can trace these terms back to Aristotle's γένος and εἶδος, and show in what sense that philosopher used them, every examiner would be satisfied.

But the time comes when we have to act as our own examiners, and when we have to give an account to ourselves of such words as *genus* and *species*. Some people write, indeed, as if they had seen a *species* and a *genus* walking about in broad daylight; but a little consideration will show us that these words express subjective concepts, and that, if the whole world were silent, there would never have been a thought of a *genus* or a *species*. There are languages in which we look in vain for corresponding words; and if we had been born in the atmosphere of such a language, these terms and thoughts would not exist for us. They came to us, directly or indirectly, from Aristotle. But Aristotle did not invent them, he only defined them in his own way, so that, for instance, according to him, all living beings would constitute a *genus*, men a *species*, and Socrates an *individual*.

No one would say that Aristotle had not a perfect right to define these terms, if those who use them in his sense would only always remember that they are thinking the thoughts of Aristotle, and not their own. The true way to shake off the fetters of old words, and to learn to think our own thoughts, is to follow them up from century to century, to watch their development, and in the end to bring ourselves face to face with those who first found and framed both words and thoughts. If we do this with *genus* and *species*, we shall find that the words which Aristotle defined—viz., γένος and εἶδος—had originally a very different and far more useful application than that which he gave to them. Γένος, *genus*, meant generation, and comprehended such living beings only as were believed to have a common origin, however they might differ in outward appearance, as, for instance, the spaniel and the bloodhound, or, according to Darwin, the ape and the man. Εἶδος or species, on the contrary, meant appearance, and comprehended all such things as had the same form or appearance, whether they had a common origin or not, as if we were to speak of a species of four-footed, two-footed, horned, winged, or blue animals.

That two such concepts, as we have here explained, had a natural justification we may best learn from the fact that exactly the same thoughts found expression in Sanskrit. There, too, we find *gâti*, generation, used in the sense of *genus*, and opposed to âkr*i*ti, appearance, used in the sense of *species*.

So long as these two words or thoughts were used independently (much as we now speak of a genea-

logical as independent of a morphological classification) no harm could accrue. A family, for instance, might be called a γένος, the *gens* or clan was a γένος, the nation (*gnatio*) was a γένος, the whole human kith and kin was a γένος; in fact, all that was descended from common ancestors was a true γένος. There is no obscurity of thought in this.

On the other side, taking εἶδος or species in its original sense, one man might be said to be like another in his εἶδος or appearance. An ape, too, might quite truly be said to have the same εἶδος or species or appearance as a man, without any prejudice as to their common origin. People might also speak of different εἴδη or forms or classes of things, such as different kinds of metals, or tools, or armour, without committing themselves in the least to any opinion as to their common descent.

Often it would happen that things belonging to the same γένος, such as the white man and the negro, differed in their εἶδος or appearance; often also that things belonging to the same εἶδος, such as eatables, differed in their γένος, as, for instance, meat and vegetables.

All this is clear and simple. The confusion began when these two terms, instead of being co-ordinate, were subordinated to each other by the philosophers of Greece, so that what from one point of view was called a *genus*, might from another be called a species, and *vice versâ*. Human beings, for instance, were now called a *species*, all living beings a *genus*, which may be true in logic, but is utterly false in what is older than logic—viz., language, thought, or fact. According to language, according to reason, and

according to nature, all human beings constitute a γένος, or generation, so long as they are supposed to have common ancestors; but with regard to all living beings we can only say that they form an εἶδος—that is, agree in certain appearances, until it has been proved that even Mr. Darwin was too modest in admitting at least four or five different ancestors for the whole animal world.[1]

In tracing the history of these two words, γένος and εἶδος, you may see passing before your eyes almost the whole panorama of philosophy, from Plato's 'ideas' down to Hegel's *Idee*. The question of *genera*, their origin and subdivision, occupied chiefly the attention of natural philosophers, who, after long controversies about the origin and classification of *genera* and *species*, seem at last, thanks to the clear sight of Darwin, to have arrived at the old truth which was prefigured in language—namely, that Nature knows nothing but *genera*, or generations, to be traced back to a limited number of ancestors, and that the so-called *species* are only *genera*, whose genealogical descent is *as yet* more or less obscure.

But the question as to the nature of the εἶδος became a vital question in every system of philosophy. Granting, for instance, that women in every clime and country formed one species, it was soon asked what constituted a species? If all women shared a common form, what was that form? Where was it? So long as it was supposed that all women descended from Eve, the difficulty might be slurred

[1] Lectures on Mr. Darwin's 'Philosophy of Language,' *Fraser's Magazine*, June 1873, p. 26.

over by the name of heredity. But the more thoughtful would ask even then how it was that, while all individual women came and went and vanished, the form in which they were cast remained the same?

Here you see how philosophical mythology springs up. The very question what *εἶδος* or species or form was, and where these things were kept, changed those words from predicates into subjects. Εἶδος was conceived as something independent and substantial, something within or above the individuals participating in it, something unchangeable and eternal. Soon there arose as many *εἴδη* or forms or types as there were general concepts. They were considered the only true realities of which the phenomenal world is only as a shadow that soon passeth away. Here we have, in fact, the origin of Plato's ideas, and of the various systems of idealism which followed his lead, while the opposite opinion that ideas have no independent existence, and that the one is nowhere found except in the many (*τὸ ἓν παρὰ τὰ πολλά*), was strenuously defended by Aristotle and his followers.[1]

The same red thread runs through the whole philosophy of the Middle Ages. Men were cited before councils and condemned as heretics because they declared that *animal*, *man*, or *woman* were mere names, and that they could not bring themselves to believe in an ideal animal, an ideal man, an ideal woman as the invisible, supernatural, or metaphysical types of the ordinary animal, the individual man, the single woman. Those philosophers, called *Nominalists*, in opposition to the *Realists*, declared that

[1] Prantl, *Geschichte der Logik*, vol. i. p. 121.

all general terms were *names only*, and that nothing could claim reality but the individual.

We cannot follow this controversy further, as it turns up again between Locke and Leibniz, between Herbart and Hegel. Suffice it to say that the knot, as it was tied by language, can be untied by the science of language alone, which teaches us that there is and can be no such thing as 'a name only.' That phrase ought to be banished from all works on philosophy. A name is and always has been the subjective side of our knowledge, but that subjective side is as impossible without an objective side as a key is without a lock. It is useless to ask which of the two is the more real, for they are real only by being, not two, but one. Realism is as one-sided as Nominalism. But there is a higher Nominalism, which might better be called the Science of Language, and which teaches us that, apart from sensuous perception, all human knowledge is by names and by names only, and that the object of names is always the general.

This is but one out of hundreds and thousands of cases to show how names and concepts which come to us by tradition must be submitted to very careful snuffing before they will yield a pure light. What I mean by academic teaching and academic study is exactly this process of snuffing, this changing of traditional words into living words, this tracing of modern thought back to ancient primitive thought, this living, as it were, once more, so far as it concerns us, the whole history of human thought ourselves, till we are as little afraid to differ from Plato or Aristotle as from Comte or Darwin.

Plato and Aristotle are, no doubt, great names; every schoolboy is awed by them, even though he may have read very little of their writings. This, too, is a kind of dogmatism that requires correction. Now, at his University, a young student might chance to hear the following, by no means respectful, remarks about Aristotle, which I copy from one of the greatest English scholars and philosophers :—'There is nothing so absurd that the old philosophers, as Cicero saith, who was one of them, have not some of them maintained; and I believe that scarce anything can be more absurdly said in natural philosophy than that which now is called Aristotle's Metaphysics; or more repugnant to government than much of that he hath said in his Politics; nor more ignorantly than a great part of his Ethics.' I am far from approving this judgment, but I think that the shock which a young scholar receives on seeing his idols so mercilessly broken is salutary. It throws him back on his own resources; it makes him honest to himself. If he thinks the criticism thus passed on Aristotle unfair, he will begin to read his works with new eyes. He will not only construe his words, but try to reconstruct in his own mind the thoughts so carefully elaborated by that ancient philosopher. He will judge of their truth without being swayed by the authority of a great name, and probably in the end value what is valuable in Aristotle, or Plato, or any other great philosopher far more highly and honestly than if he had never seen them trodden under foot.

Do not suppose that I look upon the Universities as purely iconoclastic, as chiefly intended to teach us

how to break the idols of the schools. Far from it! But I do look upon them as meant to supply a fresher atmosphere than we breathed at school, and to shake our mind to its very roots, as a storm shakes the young oaks, not to throw them down, but to make them grasp all the more firmly the hard soil of fact and truth! '*Stand upright on thy feet*' ought to be written over the gate of every college, if the epidemic of uniformity and sequacity which Mill saw approaching from China, and which since his time has made such rapid progress Westward, is ever to be stayed.

Academic freedom is not without its dangers; but there are dangers which it is safer to face than to avoid. In Germany—so far as my own experience goes—students are often left too much to themselves, and it is only the cleverest among them, or those who are personally recommended, who receive from the professors that individual guidance and encouragement which should and could be easily extended to all.

There is too much time spent in the German Universities in mere lecturing, and often in simply retailing to a class what each student might read in books in a far more perfect form. Lectures are useful if they teach us how to teach ourselves; if they stimulate; if they excite sympathy and curiosity; if they give advice that springs from personal experience; if they warn against wrong roads; if, in fact, they have less the character of a show-window than of a workshop. Half an hour's conversation with a tutor or a professor often does more than a whole course of lectures in giving the right direction

and the right spirit to a young man's studies. Here I may quote the words of Professor Helmholtz, in full agreement with him. 'When I recall the memory of my own University life,' he writes, 'and the impression which a man like Johannes Müller, the professor of physiology, made on us, I must set the highest value on the personal intercourse with teachers from whom one learns how thought works in independent heads. Whoever has come in contact but once with one or several first-class men will find his intellectual standard changed for life.'

In English Universities, on the contrary, there is too little of academic freedom. There is not only guidance, but far too much of constant personal control. It is often thought that English undergraduates could not be trusted with that amount of academic freedom which is granted to German students, and that most of them, if left to choose their own work, their own time, their own books, and their own teachers, would simply do nothing. This seems to me unfair and untrue. Most horses, if you take them to the water, will drink; and the best way to make them drink is to leave them alone. I have lived long enough in English and in German Universities to know that the intellectual fibre is as strong and sound in the English as in the German youth. But if you supply a man, who wishes to learn swimming, with bladders—nay, if you insist on his using them—he will use them, but he will probably never learn to swim. Take them away, on the contrary, and depend on it, after a few aimless strokes and a few painful gulps, he will use his arms and his legs, and he will swim. If young men do not learn

to use their arms, their legs, their muscles, their senses, their brain, and their heart too, during the bright years of their University life, when are they to learn it? True, there are thousands who never learn it, and who float happily on through life buoyed up on mere bladders. The worst that can happen to them is that some day the bladders may burst, and they may be left stranded or drowned. But these are not the men whom England wants to fight her battles. It has often been pointed out of late that many of those who, during this century, have borne the brunt of the battle in the intellectual warfare in England, have not been trained at our Universities, while others who have been at Oxford and Cambridge, and have distinguished themselves in after-life, have openly declared that they attended hardly any lectures in college, or that they derived no benefit from them. What can be the ground of that? Not that there is less work done at Oxford than at Leipzig, but that the work is done in a different spirit. It is free in Germany; it has now become almost compulsory in England. Though an old professor myself, I like to attend, when I can, some of the professorial lectures in Germany; for it is a real pleasure to see hundreds of young faces listening to a teacher on the history of art, on modern history, on the science of language, or on philosophy, without any view to examinations, simply from love of the subject or of the teacher. No one who knows what the real joy of learning is, how it lightens all drudgery and draws away the mind from mean pursuits, can see without indignation that what ought to be the freest and happiest years in a man's life

should often be spent between cramming and examinations.

And here I have at last mentioned the word, which to many friends of academic freedom, to many who dread the baneful increase of uniformity, may seem the cause of all mischief, the most powerful engine for intellectual levelling—*Examination.*

There is a strong feeling springing up everywhere against the tyranny of examinations, against the cramping and withering influence which they are supposed to exercise on the youth of England. I cannot join in that outcry. I well remember that the first letters which I ventured to address to the *Times*, in very imperfect English, were in favour of examinations. They were signed *La Carrière ouverte*, and were written before the days of the Civil Service Commission! I well remember, too, that the first time I ventured to speak, or rather to stammer, in public, was in favour of examinations. That was in 1857, at Exeter, when the first experiment was made, under the auspices of Sir T. Acland, in the direction of what has since developed into the Oxford and Cambridge Local Examinations. I have been an examiner myself for many years, I have watched the growth of that system in England from year to year, and, in spite of all that has been said and written of late against it, I confess I do not see how it would be possible to abolish it, and return to the old system of appointment by patronage.

But though I have not lost my faith in examinations, I cannot conceal the fact that I am frightened by the manner in which they are conducted, and by the results which they produce. As you are interested

yourselves at this Midland Institute in the successful working of examinations, you will perhaps allow me in conclusion to add a few remarks on the safeguards necessary for the efficient working of examinations.

All examinations are a means to ascertain how pupils have been taught; they ought never to be allowed to become the end for which pupils are taught. Teaching with a view to them lowers the teacher in the eyes of his pupils; learning with a view to them is apt to produce shallowness and dishonesty.

Whatever attractions learning possesses in itself, and whatever efforts were formerly made by boys at school from a sense of duty, all this is lost if they once imagine that the highest object of all learning is to gain marks in a competition.

In order to maintain the proper relation between teacher and pupil, all pupils should be made to look to their teachers as their natural examiners and fairest judges, and therefore in every examination the report of the teacher ought to carry the greatest weight. This is the principle followed abroad in examining candidates at public schools; and even in their examination on leaving school, which gives them the right to enter the University, they know that their success depends far more on the work which they have done during the years at school, than on the work done on the few days of their examination. There are outside examiners appointed by Government to check the work done at schools and during the examinations; but the cases in which they have to modify or reverse the award of the master are extremely rare, and they are felt to reflect

seriously on the competency or impartiality of the school authorities.

To leave examinations entirely to strangers reduces them to the level of lotteries, and fosters a cleverness in teachers and taught often akin to dishonesty. An examiner may find out what a candidate knows *not*, he can hardly ever find out all he knows; and even if he succeeds in finding out *how much* a candidate knows, he can seldom find out *how* he knows it. On these points the opinion of the masters who have watched their pupils for years is indispensable for the sake of the examiner, for the sake of the pupils, and for the sake of their teachers.

I know I shall be told that it would be impossible to trust the masters, and to be guided by their opinion, because they are interested parties. Now, first of all, there are far more honest men in the world than dishonest, and it does not answer to legislate as if all schoolmasters were rogues. It is enough that they should know that their reports would be scrutinised, to keep even the most reprobate of teachers from bearing false witness in favour of their pupils.

Secondly, I believe that unnecessary temptation is now being placed before all parties concerned in examinations. The proper reward for a good examination should be honour, not pounds, shillings, and pence. The mischief done by pecuniary rewards offered in the shape of scholarships and exhibitions at school and University, begins to be recognised very widely. To train a boy of twelve for a race against all England is generally to overstrain his faculties, and often to impair his usefulness in later

life; but to make him feel that by his failure he will entail on his father the loss of a hundred a year, and on his teacher the loss of pupils, is simply cruel at that early age.

It is said that these scholarships and exhibitions enable the sons of poor parents to enjoy the privilege of the best education in England, from which they would otherwise be debarred by the excessive costliness of our public schools. But even this argument, strong as it seems, can hardly stand, for I believe it could be shown that the majority of those who are successful in obtaining scholarships and exhibitions at school or at the University are boys whose parents have been able to pay the highest price for their children's previous education. If all these prizes were abolished, and the funds thus set free used to lessen the price of education at school and in college, I believe that the sons of poor parents would be far more benefited than by the present system. It might also be desirable to lower the school fees in the case of the sons of poor parents, who were doing well at school from year to year; and, in order to guard against favouritism, an examination, particularly *vivâ voce*, before all the masters of a school, possibly even with some outside examiner, might be useful. But the present system bids fair to degenerate into mere horse-racing, and I shall not wonder if, sooner or later, the two-year olds entered for the race have to be watched by their trainer that they may not be overfed or drugged against the day of the race. It has come to this, that schools are bidding for clever boys in order to run them in the races, and in France, I read, that parents actually extort money

from schools by threatening to take away the young racers that are likely to win the Derby.[1]

If we turn from the schools to the Universities we find here, too, the same complaints against over-examination. Now it seems to me that every University, in order to maintain its position, has a perfect right to demand two examinations, but no more: one for admission, the other for a degree. Various attempts have been made in Germany, in Russia, in France, and in England to change and improve the old academic tradition, but in the end the original, and, as it would seem, the natural system, has generally proved its wisdom and reasserted its right.

If a University surrenders the right of examining those who wish to be admitted, the tutors will often have to do the work of schoolmasters, and the professors can never know how high or how low they should aim in their public lectures; and the result will be a lowering of the standard at the Universities, and consequently at the public schools. Some Universities, on the contrary, like over-anxious mothers, have multiplied examinations so as to make quite sure, at the end of each term or each year, that the pupils confided to them have done at least some work. This kind of forced labour may do some good to the incorrigibly idle, but it does the greatest harm to all the rest. If there is an examination at the end of each year, there can be no freedom left for any independent work. Both teachers and taught will be guided by the same pole-star—examinations; no deviation from the beaten track will be considered safe, and all the pleasure derived from work done for

[1] L. Noiré, *Pädagogisches Skizzenbuch*, p. 157; 'Todtes Wissen.'

its own sake, and all the just pride and joy, which those only know who have ever ventured out by themselves on the open sea of knowledge, must be lost.

We must not allow ourselves to be deceived by the brilliant show of examination papers.

It is certainly marvellous what an amount of knowledge candidates will produce before their examiners; but those who have been both examined and examiners know best how fleeting that knowledge often is, and how different from that other knowledge which has been acquired slowly and quietly, for its own sake, for our own sake, without a thought as to whether it would ever pay at examinations or not. A candidate, after giving most glibly the dates and the titles of the principal works of Cobbett, Gibbon, Burke, Adam Smith, and David Hume, was asked whether he had ever seen any of their writings, and he had to answer, No. Another who was asked which of the works of Pheidias he had seen, replied that he had only read the first two books. That is the kind of dishonest knowledge which is fostered by too frequent examinations. There are two kinds of knowledge, the one that enters into our very blood, the other which we carry about in our pockets. Those who read for examinations have generally their pockets cram full; those who work on quietly and have their whole heart in their work are often discouraged at the small amount of their knowledge, at the little life-blood they have made. But what they have learnt has really become their own, has invigorated their whole frame, and in the end they have often proved the strongest and happiest men in the battle of life.

Omniscience is at present the bane of all our knowledge. From the day he leaves school and enters the University a man ought to make up his mind that in many things he must either remain altogether ignorant, or be satisfied with knowledge at second-hand. Thus only can he clear the decks for action. And the sooner he finds out what his own work is to be, the more useful and delightful will be his life at the University and later. There are few men who have a passion for all knowledge; there is hardly one who has not a hobby of his own. Those so-called hobbies ought to be utilised, and not, as they are now, discouraged, if we wish our Universities to produce more men like Faraday, Carlyle, Grote, or Darwin. I do not say that in an examination for a University degree a minimum of what is now called general culture should not be insisted on; but in addition to that, far more freedom ought to be given to the examiner to let each candidate produce his own individual work. This is done to a far greater extent in Continental than in English Universities, and the examinations are therefore mostly confided to the members of the *Senatus Academicus*, consisting of the most experienced teachers, and the most eminent representatives of the different branches of knowledge in the University. Their object is not to find out how many marks each candidate may gain by answering a larger or smaller number of questions, and then to place them in order before the world like so many organ pipes. They want to find out whether a man, by the work he has done during his three or four University years, has acquired that vigour of thought, that maturity of judg-

ment, and that special knowledge, which fairly entitle him to an academic degree, with or without special honours. Such a degree confers no material advantages;[1] it does not entitle its holder to any employment in Church or State; it does not vouch even for his being a fit person to be made an Archbishop or Prime Minister. All this is left to the later struggle for life; and in that struggle it seems as if those who, after having surveyed the vast field of human knowledge, have settled on a few acres of their own and cultivated them as they were never cultivated before, who have worked hard and have tasted the true joy and happiness of hard work, who have gladly listened to others, but always depended on themselves, were, after all, the men whom great nations delighted to follow as their royal leaders in the onward march towards greater enlightenment, greater happiness, and greater freedom.

To sum up, no one can read Mill's Essay 'On Liberty' at the present moment without feeling that even during the short period of the last twenty years the cause which he advocated so strongly and passionately, the cause of individual freedom, has made rapid progress—aye, has carried the day. In no country *may* a man be so entirely himself, so true to himself, and yet loyal to society, as in England.

But, although the enemy whose encroachments Mill feared most and resented most has been driven back and forced to keep within his own bounds—though such names as Dissenter and Nonconformist, which were formerly used in society as fatal darts, seem to have lost all the poison which they once con-

[1] Mill, *On Liberty*, p. 193.

tained—Mill's principal fears have nevertheless not been belied, and the blight of uniformity which he saw approaching with its attendant evils of feebleness, indifference, and sequacity, has been spreading more widely than ever.

It has even been maintained that the very freedom which every individual now enjoys has been detrimental to the growth of individuality; that you must have an Inquisition if you want to see martyrs, that you must have despotism and tyranny to call forth heroes. The very measures which the friends of individual development advocated so warmly, compulsory education and competitive examinations, are pointed out as having chiefly contributed to produce that large array of pass-men, that dead level of uninteresting excellence, which is the *beau idéal* of a Chinese Mandarin, while it frightened and disheartened such men as Humboldt, Tocqueville, and John Stuart Mill himself.

There may be some truth in all this, but it is certainly not the whole truth. Education, as it has to be carried on, whether in elementary or in public schools, is no doubt a heavy weight which might well press down the most independent spirit; it is, in fact, neither more nor less than placing, in a systematised form, on the shoulders of every generation the ever-increasing mass of knowledge, experience, custom, and tradition that has been accumulated by former generations. We need not wonder, therefore, if in some schools all spring, all vigour, all joyousness of work is crushed out under that load of names and dates, of anomalous verbs and syntactic rules, of mathematical formulas and geometrical theories

which boys are expected to bring up for competitive examinations.

But a remedy has been provided, and we are ourselves to blame if we do not avail ourselves of it to the fullest extent. Europe erected its Universities, and called them the homes of the Liberal Arts, and determined that between the mental slavery of the school and the physical slavery of busy life every man should have at least three years of freedom. What Socrates and his great pupil Plato had done for the youth of Greece,[1] these new academies were to do for the youth of Italy, France, England, Spain, and Germany; and, though with varying success, they have done it. The mediæval and modern Universities have been from century to century the homes of free thought. Here the most eminent men have spent their lives, not in retailing traditional knowledge, as at school, but in extending the frontiers of science in all directions. Here, in close intercourse with their teachers, or under their immediate guidance, generation after generation of boys, fresh from school, have grown up into men during the three years of their academic life. Here, for the first time, each man has been encouraged to dare to be himself, to follow his own tastes, to depend on his own judgment, to try the wings of his mind, and, lo, like young eagles thrown out of their nest, they could fly. Here the old knowledge accumulated at school was tested, and new knowledge acquired straight from the fountain-head. Here knowledge ceased to be a mere burden, and became

[1] Zeller, *Ueber den wissenschaftlichen Unterricht bei den Griechen*, 1878, p. 9.

a power invigorating the whole mind, like snow which during winter lies cold and heavy on the meadows, but when it is touched by the sun of spring melts away, and fertilises the ground for a rich harvest.

That was the original purpose of the Universities; and the more they continue to fulfil that purpose, the more will they secure to us that real freedom from tradition, from custom, from mere opinion and superstition, which can be gained by independent study only; the more will they foster that 'human development in its richest diversity' which Mill, like Humboldt, considered as the highest object of all society.

Such academic teaching need not be confined to the old Universities. There is many a great University that sprang from smaller beginnings than your Midland Institute. Nor is it necessary, in order to secure the real benefits of academic teaching, to have all the paraphernalia of a University, its colleges and fellowships, its caps and gowns. What is really wanted is the presence of men who, having done good work in their life, are willing to teach others how to work for themselves, how to think for themselves, how to judge for themselves. That is the true academic stage in every man's life, when he learns to work, not to please others, be they schoolmasters or examiners, but to please himself, when he works from sheer love of work, and for the highest of all purposes, the quest of truth. Those only who have passed through that stage know the real blessings of work. To the world at large they may seem mere drudges—but the world does not know

the triumphant joy with which the true mountaineer, high above clouds and mountain walls that once seemed unsurpassable, drinks in the fresh air of the High Alps, and away from the fumes, the dust, and the noises of the city, revels alone, in freedom of thought, in freedom of feeling, and in the freedom of the highest faith.

INDEX.

The numerals i. and ii. refer to the volumes, the figures to the pages.

A, pronunciation of, i. 295.
Abd, servant, ii. 419.
Abd-allah, servant of God, ii. 419.
Abdallah ibn Almokaffa, author of Kalilah and Dimnah, i. 514, 550, 556, 557.
Abderrhaman, i. 519.
Abeillard, i. 56.
Abhidharma, by-law, ii. 177, 178, 214, 284, 286 n., 302; metaphysics of the Buddhists, 214, 284; compiled by Kâsyapa, 284; propounded by Buddha, when he was fifty-one years old, 286 n.
— in China, ii. 327.
— in Japan, ii. 341.
Abhiǵñas, the five, ii. 348 n.
Ablative as a general locat. case, i. 235.
— in as, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in d, i. 201.
— in toh, as infinitive, i. 167.
Ablatives in d, with meaning of locative, i. 228.
— origin of d in, i. 230.
— in ê, ei, i, ĕ, i. 232.
— identical with datives, i. 233.
— in od, i. 246.
— as accusatives, i. 248.
Abraham, Abram, i. 5, 6, 21; ii. 155, 409, 429, 436, 439.
— faith of, ii. 433, 434.
— friend of God, ii. 433.
Absolute, ii. 249, 263.
— forms of the, ii. 249.
A-buddha, not enlightened, ii. 220.
Abulfarâg, old Arabic prayer mentioned by, ii. 439.
Accusative in am, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in tum, as infinitive, i. 167.
— with the infinitive, i. 147.
Achæmenian dynasty, ii. 262.
— inscriptions, ii. 262.
Acheron, i. 375 n.
Achilles, i. 414, 415, 580.
Acosta, Historia natural y moral, ii. 381.
Âd, â in Latin, i. 239.
Adam, ii. 413, 419.
— and Adima, ii. 455.
Ἀδελφός, ἀδελφή, i. 323.
Adelung's Mithridates, ii. 130.
Adi Brahmo Somaj, ii. 80, 86.
Adima and Heva, ii. 469–472.
Aditi, the sun called face of, i. 391.
Âditya, ii. 153, 157.
— the sun, i. 441.
— class of gods, ii. 57.
Adjetatig of Wabojeeg, ii. 376.
Adonis (Lord), Deity in Phenicia, ii. 425.
Adrammelech, ii. 406.
Ad-venire, = l'avenir, i. 146.
Adverb, the infinitive as an, i. 140.
— ἐπίῤῥημα, i. 139.
Adverbs in d as ablatives, i. 242.
— previous to Aryan separation, i. 104.
Æ, for æs, i. 234.
Ædes, temple, and house, ii. 238.
Αἰόλιοι, i. 330.
Æmilius Paulus, i. 245.

Æolic, i. 354.
Æquor, i. 350, 385.
Æs, æris, i. 348.
Æsopus alter, i. 525.
Aëthlios, king of Elis, i. 384.
Aëtius, i. 418.
Affixing languages, i. 50.
African dialect, Betshuana, i. 389.
After (eastern) Han dynasty, ii. 318.
— *Khin* dynasty, ii. 324.
Agâ, she-goat, i. 344.
Agamemnon, i. 580.
Agâtasatru, murderer of his father, the king of Magadha, ii. 202.
Agathon, i. 313.
Ager, i. 345.
Agesilaos, Leader of the people, ii. 262.
Ἀγγέλλω, = *ἀναγαρίω*, i. 57 n.
Agglutinative languages, i. 44.
Agneh, for agre, i. 336.
Agni, fire, i. 408, 441, 442, 443, 445; ii. 136, 137, 138, 147, 237, 240, 420, 428.
— hymn to, ii. 142.
— horses of, i. 443.
— god of fire, i. 157.
Agra, field, ager, i. 345.
Agricola, not agrum-cola, i. 102.
Ἀγρός, i. 345.
Ahan, day, i. 396.
Ahanâ, name for dawn, i. 397, 607; ii. 237.
— same as Daphne, i. 510.
Aheneus (ahes), i. 348.
Ahi, serpent, i. 343, 479.
Ahmi (Zend), I am, i. 317.
Ahrens, De Dialecto Dorica, i. 477 n.
Ahriman, the evil power, i. 479.
— Azhi dahâka, offspring of, i. 479.
Ahtau (Gothic), i. 354.
Ahura mazda, ii. 133, 134.
— the supreme Deity of Zoroaster, ii. 134.
Ai, emperor, ii. 317.
Aida, the son of Idâ, i. 408.
Aighe (Irish), i. 344.
Ain-lif, i. 354.
Ains, i. 354.
Airgiod, i. 348.
Airya, i. 214.
Ais, i. 348.
Aisvarikas, followers of Buddha, ii. 222.
Αἴξ, i. 344.
Ak, the root, i. 135.
Akrisios, i. 476.
Âkriti, species, ii. 513.
Akr-s, i. 345.
Akshan, or ak-an, i. 133.
Akshi, eye, i. 133-136.
Akudunnia, i. 498 n.
Alam, with infinitive, i. 158.
Ἀλεῖφα, i. 498 n.
Alexander the Great, i. 338 n.; ii. 123, 233.
— conquest and invasion of India, ii. 235.
Alexander's conquest, brings Greek stories to India, i. 511.
Alexandria, Clemens of, i. 21, 22; ii. 222 n.
— ad Caucasum, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Ἀλεξίκακος, name of Apollo and Zeus, i. 394.
Alfonso the Wise, i. 525.
Alfred, Anglo-Saxon of, ii. 130.
Ali, the son of Alshah Faresi, i. 516.
Alilat, translated by Herodotos by Οὐρανίη, ii. 438.
Alkimenes, i. 482.
Alkinoos, palace of, i. 308.
Allah, ii. 433, 439.
Allahabad, i. 422, 433.
Allat, ii. 438.
Alpha privativum, i. 189.
Alphabet, Pitman's, i. 267, 268, 295.
Altaic languages, i. 205.
Al Uzza, ii. 438.
Âma-ad, i. 346.
Amalaberg, niece of Theodoric, i. 418.
Ambagapitya, ii. 176.
America, Central, ii. 374, 381, 386.
— North, ii. 373, 374.
— Russian, ii. 398.
— South, ii. 381, 386.
— ancient inhabitants, natives, aboriginal races of, ii. 386, 387, 391.
— Popul Vuh (history of the civilised races in C. A.), ii. 372, 401.

America, hieroglyphics in N. A., ii. 373, 384.
— scrawls of the wandering tribes of N. A., ii. 374.
American antiquities, ii. 384, 385.
— hieroglyphic manuscripts of the, ii. 384, 385.
— Manuscrit Pictographique Américain, ii. 372 n.
— Mythes of A. antiquity, *see* Popul Vuh.
— traditions, ii. 392.
American, polysynthetic dialects, i. 34.
Amitâbha vyûha, ii. 343.
— repetition of the word, ii. 363.
— sûtra, ii. 346, 346 n., 347, 365.
— doctrine of, ii. 364 n., 367.
Amitâbhâs, ii. 357, 362 n., 363.
Amitâyus, ii. 357.
Amorite, gods of the, ii. 429.
Amphitryo, i. 419.
Amravati, sculptures at, ii. 32.
Ἄμυκός, i. 499.
Amulius, i. 476.
An, a suffix, i. 142.
Ânanda, compiler of the first Basket (the Sûtras) of the Tripiṭaka, ii. 284, 342, 343.
Anâthapiṇḍada, ii. 193, 202.
Ἀνατολαί, i. 385.
Anaxagoras, i. 580.
Anaximenes, i. 580.
Ancient India, life in, ii. 257.
Andanemja, Gothic, to be accepted, i. 61.
Ἀνδράδελφος, ἀνδραδέλφη, i. 330.
Andvari, the dwarf, i. 415.
Ane, dative in, i. 143.
Ἀ-νεψιός, i. 331.
Angenehm, agreeable, to be accepted, i. 61.
Angi-s, i. 343.
Anglo-Saxon, i. 344; ii. 130.
— of Alfred, ii. 130.
— chair of, i. 120.
— MSS. collected, i. 120.
Anglo-Saxons, Aryan by language, ii. 496.
— Hamitic by letters, ii. 496.
Anguilla, i. 343.
Anguis, i. 343.
Angury-s, i. 343.
Anguttara, ii. 327.
Animals, names of domestic, i. 343, 344.
Anira, i. 211.
Aniruddha, i. 446.
An-Iswara, lord-less, atheistic, ii. 283.
Annamelech, ii. 406.
Anser, i. 344.
An-shi-ko, An-shi-kao, and Ngan-shai-ko, ii. 321 n.
Antarikshaprâ, i. 407.
An-ti, those and he, i. 81.
Antiquary, the, ii. 20.
Anvari-Suhaili, by Husain ben Ali, i. 524.
Anxious, i. 275.
Anyataḥplaksha, lake, i. 409.
Ap, âpas, ii. 136.
Ἀπαρέμφατον (ῥῆμα), i. 139.
Apatê, or fraud, or Nyx, i. 369 382.
Apavarga, release, ii. 283.
Aphorisms, Kapila's, ii. 216 n.
Aphrodite, i. 407, 446.
Apollo, Apollon, i. 371, 373, 378, 379, 389, 394, 406 n., 467, 473, 606; ii. 139, 240, 241, 420, 426, 449.
— Δήλιος, i. 378.
— Delphian, i. 419.
— Etymology of A. not yet found, i. 467.
— Αυκηγένης, son of Light, i. 378; oracle of A. at Pytho, i. 373.
— mythe of A. and Daphne, i. 398, 399, 467.
Apollodorus, i. 388.
Apollonic theology, i. 456.
Apophasis, daughter of Epimetheus, i. 375.
Aquilonia, i. 498 n.
Ar (Sansk.), earth, i. 210, 212.
Ar, root (for ploughing), i. 345.
Ar (Gaelic), i. 345.
Arab, i. 403, 406.
— branch of the Semitic family, ii. 406.
Arabia, ii. 433, 438.
— idolatry of the Semitic tribes of, ii. 433, 438.

Arabia, Premohammedan ideas of the Nomads of the Arabian peninsula, i. 6.
Arabic, lectureship of, i. 119.
— not aided by Henry VIII, i. 119.
— supported by Archbishop Laud, i. 119.
— MSS. collected by Laud, i. 119.
— translation of fables, i. 516, 556, 557.
— Old A. prayer, ii. 439.
Ἀράχνη, i. 347.
Arad, aradyr, i. 345.
Aradar, i. 345.
Arago, Freycinet and Arago's Voyage to the Eastern Ocean, ii. 375.
Aranea, i. 347.
Arāre, i. 213, 345.
Aratrum, i. 345.
Arbhu, i. 435.
Arbuda, i. 491.
Ardhr, i. 345.
Arg, ii. 132 n.
Argentum, i. 348.
Argonauts, i. 473.
Argos, i. 419.
— worship of Here in, i. 420.
Ἄργυρος, i. 348.
Arhat (rahat), ii, 289, 349, 349 n.
Ariana, i. 214.
Aristotle, i. 303, 376, 512, 513, 516, 518, 579, 587; ii. 11, 238.
— his knowledge of language, i. 29.
— Metaphysics of, i. 382 n.
— St.-Hilaire, translator of, ii. 166.
Arjan, i. 345.
Arkla-s, i. 345.
Ἄρκτος, i. 345.
Armenia from Arya, i. 214.
Arnyia dialects, ii. 34.
Ἄροτρον, i. 345.
Ἀρούν, i. 345.
Ἄρουρα, i. 345.
Arsak, ii. 321.
Art, i. 343.
Artha, ii. 205.
Arti (Lith.), i. 213, 345.
Aruna, i. 443 n.
Arus, i. 443 n.
Arusha (the young sun, the child of Dyaus), i. 441, 447.
Arushî (cow), i. 441, 447.
Arvas (N. arvān), Fem. árushî, i. 440.
Arvat (N. arvâ), Fem. arvatî, i. 440, 441, 446, 447 n.
Arvum, i. 345.
Ârya, Ârya, ii. 192.
— opposed to Śûdra, i. 209.
— title of the three upper castes, i. 209.
— spread of name westward, i. 213, 215.
Arya-avarta, i. 206.
Aryan, the term, i. 204.
— ancestors of the, race, i. 349.
— and non-Aryan myths, likeness between, i. 614, 615.
— and Semitic languages, common origin of, i. 63.
— civilisation, i. 329.
— conquerors of India, i. 484.
— dialects, i. 318, 321, 322, 342; ii. 417, 418.
— inflectional, i. 44.
— family, i. 34, 35, 205, 320, 322, 459; ii. 496.
— language, seven periods of, i. 86.
— first period, i. 87.
— second period, i. 92.
— third period, i. 92.
— fourth period, i. 97.
— fifth period, i. 100.
— sixth period, i. 104.
— seventh period, i. 104.
— no word for law in, i. 197.
— life, i. 332, 355.
— mythology, i. 389, 400, 449, 450.
— nations, Benfey's protest against their Eastern origin, i. 188.
— numerals, i. 352, 353.
— origin of word, i. 205.
— religions, three historical, ii. 47.
— separation (dispersion) of the, tribes, i. 460, 492.
— suffixes, i. 142.
— the Veda, the theogony of the, races, i. 381.
— three strata only, i. 105.
— words, i. 357, 440.
— words found in Zend and not in Sanskrit, i. 225.

Aryans, Southern division of, i. 188.
Aryas, i. 206.
As, to be, i. 318.
Asail, i. 344.
Asaukumâryam, i. 485.
Ascoli, i. 602 n.
— on gutturals, i. 70.
Ashima, ii. 406.
Ashtaroth, ii. 406.
Asi, sword, i. 348.
-ασι for -αντι, i. 80.
Asia, Central, ii. 202 n., 232.
— barbarians of C. A., ii. 246.
— civilisation among the tribes of C. A., ii. 270.
— intellectual intercourse between the Indian peninsula and the northern continent of, ii. 258.
— languages of, ii. 131.
Asiatic Society of Bengal, ii. 169.
— Calcutta, i. 121; ii. 182.
— London, ii. 169, 182, 343.
— Paris, ii. 169, 183, 344.
Asila-s, i. 344.
Asilu, i. 344.
Asinus, i. 344.
Asita's prophecy about Buddha, i. 537.
Asmi, i. 317, 366.
Asoka, i. 17; ii. 22, 179, 211, 212, 253.
— the Constantine of India, i. 17; ii. 122, 299.
— the Buddhist Constantine, ii. 211.
— Edicts of A. preserved on the rocks of Dhauli, Girnar and Kapurdigiri, ii. 256.
Aspa, i. 344.
Asru, i. 396.
Assyrian, ii. 113.
— dynasties, ii. 113.
Astagiri mountain, ii. 291.
Asterodia, name of Selene, i. 384.
Ἀστερόεις, i. 371.
Asti, i. 617.
— with infinitive, i. 158.
Astori dialects of Shinâ, ii. 34.
Ἄστυ, i. 341.
Astyages (corruption of Azhi dahâka), i. 476, 479, 480.
Asu, breath, i. 366.
Âsu (asva), i. 344.
Asuras, ii. 296.
Asurya, i. 488.
Asva (ἵππος), i. 344.
Âsvâ, the mare, name for Dawn, i. 439.
Asvaghosha's Buddhacarita, ii. 191 n.
Asvais, = equis, i. 50.
Asvaka or Assaka, ii. 322.
Âsvalâyana, ii. 123.
Asvebhis, = equobus. i. 50.
Asvins, the two, i. 398.
Asyn, i. 344.
Aszua, fem., i. 344.
Atê, i. 376.
Athair (Irish), i. 320.
Atharva-veda, ii. 117, 124, 150 n, 157.
— the Ath. intended for the Brahman, or overseer of the sacrifice, ii. 118.
— Hymn taken from the Ath., ii. 150.
Atheism, Buddhism ends in, ii. 294, 295, 300.
Athene, i. 400 n., 580.
Ἀθήνη, i. 492.
Athenodoros, i. 375 n.
Athens, ii. 111, 271.
Atithigva, ii. 142.
Atli, i. 417, 418.
Âtman (self), ii. 302.
Atropos, i. 463.
Aṭṭhakathâs, commentaries brought by Mahinda to Ceylon, ii. 172, 180.
Attic future, i. 60 n.
Attila, i. 418, 419.
Aubin, collection of American antiquities, ii. 384.
Augâ, O. H. G., i. 134.
Αὐγή, i. 133.
Augment, in Greek and Sanskrit, i. 82.
Auhsan, i. 344.
Αὖω, i. 447 n.
Αὔριον, i. 447 n.
Aurnavâbha, i. 486.
Aurora (Ushâsâ), i. 348, 438, 447 n.
Aurum, i. 348, 447 n.
Aurusha, i. 443 n.
Aus (present), ii. 419.

Aus-alla, ii. 419.
Australia, i. 329; ii. 151.
Australasian, the Nibelunge derived by some from the A. history, i. 418.
Αὐτόχθονες, i. 374.
Auxiliary verbs, i. 316, 317, 365.
Avadhûta, sect of the, ii. 65.
Avalokitesvara, ii. 367.
Avenir, the future, ad-venire, i. 146.
Avi, i. 344.
Avidyâ (ignorance), ii. 251, 494.
Avi-str, i. 344.
Avranches, Bishop of, on Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 545.
Avunculus, i. 331.
Avus, i. 332.
Axe, i. 348.
Ayas, i. 348.
Ayase, to go, i. 145.
Âyu, ii. 142.
Âyus, i. 433.
Ayuta, ii. 350.
Azdehak, i. 480.
Azhi dahâka, i. 479, 480.
— Astyages corruption of, i. 479.
Aztec, ii. 372, 392.

BAAL (Bel), Lord, ii. 406, 425, 426, 431, 438, 440.
— servants of, ii. 438.
Baal-peor, ii. 406.
Baal-zebub, ii. 406.
Babel, Tower of, ii. 398.
Babylon, i. 6; ii. 113, 131, 270, 440.
— cuneiform inscriptions of, ii. 440.
Babylonia, ii. 113.
Bacchus, ii. 438.
Bacon, observations on the disposition of men for philosophy and science, i. 63.
Bactria, ii. 269, 271, 275.
— Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Bactrian fire-worship, ii. 271.
Baddha (conditioned), i. 217.
Balas, the five, ii. 355 n.
Balasan, ii. 325.
Balbutire, i. 484.
Balder, Baldr, i. 414, 415; ii. 242.
Baldo, his translation of Kalila and Dimnah, i. 525.
Balkh, ii. 271.
Ballantyne, Dr., ii. 216 n.
Bântu family of language, i. 34.
Barahut, Buddhist remains at, ii. 31.
Barbara, i. 484, 485.
Barbaratâ, i. 485.
Barbarians, i. 21, 303, 346; ii. 162.
Βάρβαρος, i. 484, 485.
Βαρβαρόφωνοι, Κᾶρες, i. 485.
Barbarossa, Emperor, i. 480.
Barbarottha (Sandal-wood), i. 484.
Barbarous, i. 275.
Barbati filius, inscription of, i. 240.
Barham, Francis, ii. 280, 286.
Barlaam and Joasaph, i. 533.
Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 543.
— changed into Christian saints, i. 543.
— Laboulaye, Liebrecht, Beal, on, i. 542, 543.
— Leo Allatius on, i. 544.
— Billius and Bellarminus on, i. 544.
— Bishop of Avranches on, i. 545.
Barzuyeh or Barzôî, author of Pehlevi translation of fables, i. 515, 551, 557.
Βασιλεῦ, vocative, i. 223.
Βασιλεύει, ἥλιος, i. 380.
Basilius, i. 12.
Basilius and Gregorius Nazianzenus, quoted by author of Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 534.
Bask, derivative adjectives in, i. 61 n.
Βάθος, i. 350 n.
Bauddha, (Buddha), ii. 211, 285.
Bayard, i. 56.
Beal, on the story of Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 542.
Beal's translation of Fahian's travels, ii. 315, 321.
— catalogue of Buddhist Tripitaka, ii. 365.
Bear, i. 343.
Beasts, different names of the wild, i. 343, 344.
Becker, die inschriftlichen Ueberreste der Keltischen Sprache, ii. 132 n.
Beel-samin (Lord of Heaven), ii. 425.
Behar or Magadha, ii. 200.
Beieinander, Das, in the development of language, i. 142.

Being, Absolute, ii. 216, 219, 251.
— Divine, ii. 253, 283.
— Immaterial supernatural, ii. 416.
Beitrüge zur vergleichenden Sprachforschung, ii. 132 n.
Bekker, on the Digamma in Homer, i. 201, 229.
Bel (Baal), image of, i. 6.
— worshippers of, ii. 406.
Belial, son of, i. 460.
Belle au Bois, i. 566.
Bellerophon, i. 482–499.
Bellerophontes, i. 482.
Belleros, i. 482, 489, 491.
Benares, i. 10, 18; ii. 201, 262.
Benfey, his discovery of the old Syriac translation of the fables, i. 548, 555.
— his history of the Science of Language, ii. 9.
— his protest against the eastern origin of the Aryan nation, i. 188.
Bengal, i. 11 n.
— Asiatic Society of, ii. 169.
Bengali, plural in, i. 38.
Βένθος, i. 350.
Berghaus, Physical Atlas, religious statistics, ii. 225.
Bern (Verona), Dietrich von, i. 418.
Bernard, derivation of the word, i. 55.
Bernhard, bearminded, i. 54.
Berosus, ii. 385.
Besmah, Rajah of, Giriprasâdasinha, ii. 20.
Bethel, ii. 480.
Betshuana, i. 389.
Bhadrâs, i. 439.
Bhagavat, ii. 192, 194, 291, 342, 343, 346, 348.
Bhaginî, sister, in Sanskrit, i. 78 n.
Bhaiami, maker or cutter out, ii. 27.
Bhandarkar, Prof., ii. 20.
Bhao Daji, Dr., ii. 19.
Bharadvâga, i. 436.
Bhava, i. 378.
Bhikshu (mendicant), ii. 170, 199, 348, 349 n.
Bhikshuka, ii. 193.
Bhrâtar, i. 320, 323.
Bhû, to be, i. 366.
Bhûmidhara sâstra, ii. 328.
Bible dans l'Inde, ii. 468.
— translation of the B. into the Massachusetts language, ii. 379.
Bickell, Prof., i. 551, 555.
Bidpai, mentioned by Ali, i. 516.
— or Sindebar, i. 522.
Bigandet, Life of Gaudama, ii. 207, 294.
Billius, on Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 544.
Bimbisâra, king of Magadha, ii. 201.
Biot, ii. 168, 260.
Birch-bark, Sanskrit MSS. on, ii. 334, 335, 335 n.
Birma, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Bitto, epigram on, i. 309.
Bkah-hgyur (Kanjur), ii. 171.
Blackie, Prof., on Comparative Mythology, i. 618, 622.
Bleda, i. 418.
Bleek, Dr., ii. 29.
Blödelin, i. 418.
Bo, i. 344.
Bochart's Geographia Sacra, ii. 442.
Bodhidharma, ii. 328, 329, 370.
Bodhiruki, ii. 328.
Bodhisattva, ii. 192, 193, 276, 287, 288, 330, 350, 357, 362 n.
— corrupted to Youdasf and Youasaf, i. 542.
Bodhisattva-dhâranî, ii. 193.
Bodhyanga, the seven, ii. 355 n.
Bodleian Library, ii. 344.
Boeckh, on Comparative Grammar, i. 184.
Bohemian, i. 340, 344, 346.
Bohinî, Bengali, for sister, i. 78 n.
Bologna, University of, i. 118.
Bombay, Parsis of, ii. 96.
Bonaventura des Periers, his Contes et Nouvelles, i. 530.
Book of Sindbad, i. 531.
Book-religions, ii. 92.
Bopp, i. 342, 392, 396.
— his derivation of Arya, i. 208.
— his Comparative Grammar, i. 124, 318; ii. 4.
— Glossarium, i. 351.

Boreas, i. 299, 300, 468, 469.
Bos, bôves, i. 326, 344.
Boturini, collector of American MSS. and antiquities, ii. 384.
Boû, vocative, i. 223.
Bouddha et sa Religion (Par Barthélemy Saint-Hilaire), ii. 160 n.
Βουκολέω, i. 326.
Boûs, βόες, i. 326, 344.
Βούσταθμον, i. 328.
Bouvet, i. 9.
Brahma, i. 11; ii. 194, 245, 262, 298; *see* Brahman, n.
— as the Supreme Spirit, ii. 106.
Brahma-Samaj, ii. 21, 66, 67, 78.
— schism in, ii. 68, 78.
— of India, ii. 78 n.
Brahmacarya, ii. 194.
Brahman, n., force, prayer; n. m. god, ii. 218, 219, 255, 425, 426.
— the, and the rice, i. 504.
Brahmân, priest, overseer, i. 5, 11, 14, 17, 18, 25, 312, 334, 335, 336, 354, 457; ii. 116, 122, 128, 132, 134, 164, 200, 201, 206, 207, 211, 213, 217, 218, 222, 243, 244, 248, 283, 284 n., 285.
— Sacred Hymns of the, i. 1; ii. 217.
— the, in the Indian Drama, i. 422.
Brahman stories and Old Testament events, ii. 444.
Brâhmana, for Brahman, priest, ii. 194.
— theological tracts, i. 408, 410, 435; ii. 120, 121, 123, 124, 126, 211, 245.
Brahmanic ancestors of the Zoroastrians, ii. 436.
Brahmanism, i. 8, 13; ii. 122, 132, 158, 186, 211, 213, 235, 253.
— re-establishment of, ii. 213.
— its vitality, ii. 87, 100.
Brahmans, their sacred cord, ii. 69.
— do not proselytise, ii. 49, 99 n.
— sent to Benares to copy Vedas, ii. 44.
— ancient, original principles of the, ii. 445.
Brahmo-Dharma, the, ii. 79.
Brâhmyas, followers of Brahmâ, ii. 194.
Brasseur de Bourbourg, editor of the 'Popol Vuh,' ii. 372 n., 386-90, 393.
Brat', brâtar, brathair, i. 320, 323.
Breath, i. 594.
Breathe, to, i. 617.
Brech, i. 343.
Bribu, admitted into the Brahmanic community, i. 436.
— leader of the Rathakaras, ii. 99.
Brihaddevatâ, i. 337.
Brihaddivâ, i. 407.
Brihat-kathâ, i. 421.
Brockhaus, Professor, ii. 37.
Βροντᾷ (he thunders), ii. 418, 419.
Brossard, i. 56.
Brother, i. 320.
Brother-in-law, i. 330, 356.
Brunehault, Brunhilt, Brynhild, i. 415-19.
Brunnhofer, i. 172.
Bruth-faths (bridegroom), i. 338.
Brvat, Zend, brow, i. 227.
Bstan-hgyur (Tanjur), ii, 171.
Bücheler, i. 245.
Bud Periodeutes, his translation of fables, i. 548, 551.
Buddha, i. 17, 19; ii. 348, 367.
— an Atheist, ii. 295.
— appears after death, ii. 222 n.
— country, ii. 355-358.
— ten commandments of, ii. 247.
— death of, ii. 191, 203.
— devoured by tigers, ii. 248.
— disciples of, ii. 76, 350 n.
— discourses or Sûtras of, ii. 177, 318.
— doctrines of, ii. 168, 257, 367.
— dust of, ii. 275.
— his driver, i. 541.
— his four drives, i. 537; ii. 197.
— his interview with Mâra, ii. 77.
— identity with Josaphat, i. 540, 546.
— life of (*see* Lalita Vistara), i. 537; ii. 191 n., 195, 258.
— earliest Chinese translation of, ii. 191 n.
— on the old Gods, ii. 295.

Buddha, Pratyeka (Supreme), ii. 192, 289.
— repetition of the name of, ii. 364.
— shadow of, ii. 273, 274.
— simple teaching of, ii. 367.
— statues of, ii. 275, 319.
— Sûtras (discourses) of, ii. 177.
— the enlightened, ii. 195, 201, 205, 220, 245.
— and Wodan, ii. 457 n.
Budha and Buddha, ii. 460, 464.
— vâra, dies Mercurii, ii. 464.
Buddhabhadra, ii. 325, 341.
Buddhaghosha, ii. 180, 180 n., 304.
Buddhas, Favour of all, ii. 359, 360.
Buddhasiṁha, ii. 323, 324.
Buddhâvataṁsaka vaipulya-sûtra, ii. 325, 327, 341.
Buddhayasas, ii. 327.
Buddhism in Ceylon, China, Kashmir, Tibet, ii. 257, 316, 317, 322, 326, 328.
— area of, ii. 236 n.
— and Scandinavian mythology, ii. 458.
— and Wodanism, ii. 459.
— Ceylon, chief seat of, ii. 274.
— countries professing it, ii. 60.
— canonical books of, ii. 440.
— in Russia and Sweden, ii. 233.
— its history, ii. 50.
— of the Shamans, i. 17.
— persecuted in China, ii. 327-8, 337.
— in Corea, ii. 340.
— in Japan, ii. 339, 340, 365.
— religious statistics of, ii. 224.
— State religion of China, ii. 257.
Buddhist books in Chinese, ii. 316, 317, 320, 321, 326, 329.
— canonical books of the, ii. 111, 132, 164, 281, 289.
— canon, i. 17; ii. 168, 170, 171, 179, 183, 191, 201, 221, 222, 284.
— Tibetan translation of the B. Canon, ii. 170.
— Chinese translations of the B. literature of India, ii. 316, 317, 320, 321, 326, 329, 330, 343.
— council (first and third), i. 17; ii. 255, 248, 336.
Buddhist ethics and metaphysics, ii. 254 n.
— fables, i. 502.
— carried by Mongolians to Russia, i. 511.
— female devotees, ii. 202.
— legends and theories of the — (Hardy), ii. 175 n.
— literature, ii. 169, 173, 183, 190, 213, 262, 275.
— in China eleven classes of, ii. 330-332.
— Magadha, holy country of the, ii. 274.
— MSS. in Paris, ii. 176.
— MSS. worshipped in China, ii. 333, 337.
— MSS. in Japan, ii. 339, 340, 342.
— metaphysics (Abhidharma), ii. 214, 284 n.
— Missionaries, ii. 175, 258.
— Missionaries, sent to Cashmere, etc., ii. 51.
— Monastery, ii. 266, 333, 337.
— Monks in China, ii. 322.
— Northern, ii. 222, 231, 289.
— number of the, ii. 228, 229.
— enormous numbers used by the, ii. 350 n.
— original of the Pañkatantra, i. 558.
— philosophical schools among the, in India, ii. 282.
— pilgrims, ii. 122, 234-279.
— priests, names adopted by, ii. 320 n.
— reform, its moral code, ii. 207, 209.
— similarities between the Roman Catholic and the B. ceremonial, ii. 168.
— Southern, ii. 289.
— canon of Southern B., ii. 184.
— Sûtras, ii. 177, 318, 319, 319 n.
Buddhists in China from Ceylon, ii. 328.
— manners and customs of Indian, ii. 368.
— in Japan, ii. 338.
— in China, ii. 260.
— divided into ten sects, ii. 339.
Buffon, his view of plants, i. 198.

Bugge, his derivation of pœna, i. 193 n.
Bühler, Dr., ii. 30, 132 n.
Building of altars, ii. 15.
Bundobel, for Bidpay, i. 525.
Bunsen, i. 1, 2; ii. 2, 4, 115.
— his views on German professors, i. 179.
— his Christianity and Mankind, ii. 4.
Burgess, Mr., ii. 20.
Burgundy (kings of), i. 417, 418.
Burmah, ii. 169, 175, 176, 236.
— Buddhists of, ii. 221.
Burmese, ii. 186.
— MSS. written in B. characters, ii. 196.
Burnell, Dr., ii. 30.
Burning of widows, i. 332–337; ii. 94.
Burnouf, Eugène, ii. 2, 43, 114, 167, 169, 174, 263, 289, 295.
— his views on Sûtras, ii. 362 n.
— the Lankâvatâra translated by, ii. 284 n.
— Introduction à l'histoire du Buddhisme, ii. 185, 281.
— Lotus de la bonne loi, ii. 252 n., 257, 281.
Bushby, H. T., on widow-burning, i. 337 n.
Bushmen, their traditional literature, ii. 29.
— their language, ii. 29.

C for G in stone of Luceria, i. 246.
Cabbar, i. 344.
Cabul, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Cacus, i. 491.
Cadaver, i. 132.
Cakchiquel Codex, ii. 387.
Calcutta, ii. 171, 184.
— Asiatic society at, ii. 182.
— city of Kali, ii. 59.
— its goddess, ii. 101.
Caldwell, Dr., i. 39 n.
— on Infinitive, i. 173.
Calf, i. 344.
Call, to, not from calare, i. 71.
Callaway, Remarks on the Zulu language, i. 91 n.
Cambridge University Library, ii. 344.
Campbell, Sir George, on the Hindu religion, ii. 89.
Canarese translation of the Pañcatantra, i. 503.
Canis, i. 344.
Caper, i. 344.
Cap-so, i. 60 n.
Caput = Haubida, i. 135.
Care, not from cura, i. 71.
Carlyle, Thomas, on Mythology, i. 435.
Carolina Islands, native of the, ii. 375.
Carta, papier, i. 320.
Carthaginians, i. 6.
Case-terminations, traced back, i. 100.
Cashmere, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Caskets, story of the, in Merchant of Venice, i. 536 n.
Castigare, i. 193.
Castrèn, i. 7.
— on Finnish Mythology, ii. 236 n.
Catalogue of Buddhist books in China, A.D. 606, ii. 329.
Catalogues of MSS. still existing in India, ii. 30.
Catechism of the Adi Brahma-Samâj, ii. 86.
— of the Shamans, ii. 247 n., 285.
Cattle, i. 344.
Causa, cause, i. 368.
Celibacy and Fellowships, i. 116.
Celtic languages, i. 110.
— most closely united with Latin (Newman, Schleicher), i. 191.
— mythology, i. 5.
— religion of the C. race, ii. 131, 237.
Cendrillon and Sodewa-Bai, i. 565.
Centum, i. 354.
Cerastes, ii. 496.
Ceres, ii. 422, 449.
Cerno, to distinguish, i. 194.
Ceylon, Buddhism in, ii. 257.
— Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
— history of Buddhism in, ii. 182.
— Buddhist literature of, ii. 174, 185.
— chief seat of Buddhism, ii. 274.

Ceylon, Mahâvansa, or history of, ii. 174.
— Pâli and Singhalese works of, ii. 289.
— sacred and historical books of, ii. 174.
Ceylonese æra, ii. 190.
Χαίρω, i. 447 n.
Chaldaic lectureship, i. 118.
Chalmers, Origin of Chinese, i. 72.
Chamen (*Sramana*), ii. 262.
Champollion, i. 7; ii. 385.
— discoveries of, i. 109.
Chandaka, or Sanna, Buddha's driver, i. 541.
Change of 'd' to 'l' in Greek, i. 447 n., 498.
Channing, ii. 105.
Chaos, ii. 306.
Χαρά, χαρίεις, χαρίζομαι, i. 447 n.
Charis, chief, Aphrodite, i. 446.
— etymology of, i. 447 n.
Charites, i. 406, 408 n., 439–446, 143 n.
Χάριτες, i. 492.
Charlemagne, i. 519.
Charles V, Rabelais' satire on, i. 526.
Chāvah, ii. 457.
Chemosh, ii. 406.
Χήν, i. 344.
Cheops, ii. 497.
Che-wei (*Sravasti*), ii. 262, 263.
Chichimecs, migrations of the, ii. 391.
Chief Rabbi in London, ii. 95.
Childers, Mr., Essay on the Plural in Singhalese, i. 39 n.
Χίλιοι, i. 354.
Chilperic, i. 418.
Chimalpopoca, Codex, ii. 386.
China, Buddhism, state religion in, ii. 257, 315.
— Buddhists in, ii. 185, 232.
— early civilisation of, ii. 270.
— Jesuit missionaries, ii. 475.
— number of inhabitants, ii. 232.
— religion of, i. 9.
— Roman Catholic missionaries in, i. 9.
— view of Nirvâna in, ii. 291.
Chinese alphabet, ii. 260.
— belongs to the isolating languages, i. 44.
Chinese, dead and live words, i. 42 n.
— dialects of, i. 69–72.
— full and empty words, i. 42.
— Grammar, i. 41.
— history, ii. 316, 318.
— language, ii. 131, 261.
— pilgrims, ii. 186, 235, 260, 319.
— Professorships of, i. 110.
— translations, ii. 192 n., 258, 314, 330, 343, 345, 365.
— words in Mongolian, i. 73.
— worship, i. 7, 9.
Chitaû and Chitatau, ii. 341.
Χι-ών = hi-ma, hiems, i. 226.
Χοῖρος, i. 344.
Chose, i. 368.
Christ, Lecture on, by Keshub Chundu Sen, ii. 82.
— and other masters, i. 17.
— carried by St. Christopher, i. 475.
Christian ideas, ii. 392.
— missionaries, i. 312.
— mysticism of Eckhardt and Tauler, ii. 281.
— number of Christians, ii. 228.
— religion, i. 587.
Christianity, countries professing, ii. 60.
Christians of St. Thomas in India, i. 551.
Christna, ii. 472, 473.
Christos, the Anointed, ii. 205.
Χρῶμα, i. 487.
Chronology of the Indo-Germanic languages, by Prof. Curtius, i. 86.
Χρόνος, i. 461.
Χρυσόθρονος, i. 380.
Χρύσος, i. 348.
Chrysorrhoas (St. John of Damascus), i. 533.
Chu-fu-lan, ii. 191 n., 258.
Chuning, i. 340.
Chuo, pl. chuowi, i. 326, 344.
Chwegrwn, chwegyr, i. 330.
Cicero, his spelling, i. 258.
Circumflex in the vocative of Ζεύς, i. 186.
— in Sanskrit, i. 223.
Classical and comparative philology, i. 229, 250.

Classical reproduction of Sakuntala, by Sir W. Jones, ii. 7.
Classification of languages, i. 34.
— applied to religions, ii. 48.
Clemens of Alexandria, Stromata, i. 21, 22, 582 n.; ii. 222 n.
Clement V and his proposals for founding Lectureships, i. 118.
Clemm, Die neusten Forschungen auf dem Gebiet der Griechischen Composita, i. 102.
Clothes, name of, i. 347.
Cluere, to hear, i. 195.
Cluo (*κλέος*, sravas), ii. 263.
Çnish, Zend, to snow, i. 227.
Codardo, coward, i. 56.
Codex Cakchiquel, Chimalpopoca, ii. 386, 387.
Cœurdoux, le Père, i. 122.
Colden, ii. 374.
Colebrooke, H. T., ii. 167.
— Duties of a faithful Widow, i. 334 n.
Colhuas, migrations of the, ii. 391.
Colonies and colonial governments, Oriental studies have a claim on, ii. 24.
Colour, difference in, i. 488.
Columna Rostrata, i. 240.
Combination traced to juxta-position, i. 79.
Combinatory stage, i. 84.
Commandments of Kabir, ii. 65.
Common origin of the Aryan and Semitic languages, i. 63.
Comparative mythology, i. 299–451; ii. 448, 455, 467, 580.
— and classical philology, i. 229.
— mythology, Prof. Blackie on, i. 618–622.
— Sir G. W. Cox on, i. 618–622.
— Philology, chair of, i. 121.
— Isolating period, i. 126.
— Syncretistic period, i. 124.
Comparative spirit, the truly scientific spirit, ii. 12.
Comparative Theology, first attempt at, i. 535.
Comparetti, i. 477 n.
— on the Book of Sindbad, i. 531.
Competition-wallah, i. 56.
Compulsory education, ii. 501, 502.
Comtian epochs, i. 3.
Conde Lucanor, by Don Juan Manuel, i. 530.
Confucius, i. 7, 9; ii. 165, 266.
— doctrines of, ii. 273.
Confusion of tongues, Hebrew and American tradition of, ii. 397, 399.
— Esthonian legend of, ii. 398, 399.
Congress of Orientalists, the International, ii. 1.
Consilium (considium) i. 325.
Consobrinus, i. 332.
Controversial missionary, ii. 63.
— missions, small success of, ii. 108.
Convention, language made by, i. 38.
Conway's Sacred Anthology, ii. 14.
Copto-African languages, i. 203.
Corea, Buddhism in, ii. 340,
Corpus Juris of Gagannâtha, i. 334.
Corssen, his studies in Latin, i. 125.
Cortes, ii. 385, 387.
Cosmas, an Italian monk, i. 532.
Cosquin, on Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 544 n.
Cottier, his translation of fables into French from Tuscan, i. 523 n.
Cotton, Bishop of Calcutta, ii. 66, 71.
Couard, i. 56.
Council, Early councils of Christianity, i. 19.
— Buddhist, ii. 255, 284.
Cousin, ii. 245.
Cow, i. 344.
Coward, i. 56.
Cox, G. W., Manual of Mythology, i. 465, 481.
— on Comparative Mythology, i. 618–622.
Crane, clan, ii. 376.
Creation, Quiche account of, ii. 393–397.
— Tahitian tradition of, ii. 455.
Credo, ii. 151.
Creed of the Brahma-Samâj, ii. 68.
Creuzer, i. 452; ii. 280–282.
— Symbolik of, ii. 282.
Criard, a crier, i. 56.
Cribrum, i. 194.
Crimen, i. 194.

Crudus, crudelis, i. 226.
Crusaders, Persian and Arabic stories brought back by the, i. 511.
Crusades, interchange of eastern and western ideas during the, i. 531.
Crusta, i. 226.
Csoma de Körös, ii. 171, 173, 343, 346.
Çtaman, Zend, = *στόμα*, i. 228.
Cu, i. 344.
Cugino, i. 332.
Cuneiform, ii. 113, 263, 270, 385, 440.
— inscriptions (of Babylon and Nineveh), ii. 262, 385, 440.
— Oppert's theory on the invention of — letters, ii. 270.
— translation of — inscriptions, ii. 262.
Cupid, i. 448.
— and Sanskrit Dipuc, i. 129.
Curtius, Professor G., i. 86, 399 n., 447 n., 477 n.
— his Greek studies, i. 125.
— on Lautverschiebung, i. 68 n.
— on the Chronology of the Indo-Germanic Languages, i. 79, 86.
Cyrus, i. 476–80; ii. 113.
— religion of, ii. 57.
Czartoryski, Prince, letter to, ii. 8.

D, final of the ablative, i. 238.
— of the ablative, i. 201, 230.
— time of Plautus, i. 241.
— expressing whence or whereby, i. 242.
— in ancient Latin MSS., i. 244.
— and l interchangeable, i. 479 n.
— when dropped, i. 231.
-da, Zend, = *οἰκόν-δε*, i. 227.
Dabshelim, King, i. 516.
Dadala, ii. 176.
Daeges eâge, i. 428 n.
Δαήρ, i. 330, 356. 497 n.
Δᾶερ, vocative, i. 222.
Daeva, ii. 134.
Daga, dagian, i. 397.
Dagon, ii. 406.
Dah (to burn), i. 396.
Dahyu, i. 498.
Daigs, dough, i. 132.
Daimh, i. 341.
Δαῖος, i. 499.
Daisy, mythe of, i. 428 n.
Daiti, Zend, *δόσις*, dôs, i. 227.
Δάκρυ, i. 396, 497 n.
Dala, meaning of, i. 38 n.
— Bengali, same as Dravidian tala or dal*a*, i. 39 n.
Dalton, Colonel, Ethnology of Bengal, ii. 32.
Dama, i. 341.
Dâ-mane, to give, f. 142.
Dâmi, Zend, creation, *θέμις*, i. 227.
Damnare, i. 71.
Dan*d*apâ*n*i, father of Buddha's wife, ii. 196, 204.
Daniel, i. 480.
Dankwart, i. 418.
Δαός, i. 499.
Daphne and Apollo, i. 398, 399, 607, 608.
— name of the dawn, i. 467, 468.
— same as Ahanâ, i. 516.
Δάφνη, i. 399 n., 477 n.
Δαφνηφόρος, i. 394.
Daqyu, i. 498.
Dardistan, Dr. Leitner's labours in, ii. 34.
Dardus, the, their customs, ii. 34.
Darius, i. 339, 498.
— religion of, ii. 57.
— the Median, i. 480.
Das, to perish, i. 499.
Dasa, ten, i. 354.
Dâsa, people, enemy, i. 339, 177 n., 497–499.
Dasabhûmi Sutra, ii. 321.
Dasabhûmika sâstra, ii. 328.
Dâsahantâ, i. 177 n., 497, 499.
Dâsa-pati, i. 339, 499.
Dâsápati, *gâ*spati, dámpati, i. 222.
Dâsa-patnî, i. 395, 499.
Dâsas, i. 206.
Δασύτης, i. 485.
Dâsya, i. 477 n.
Dâsya-narî, i. 395.
Dasyu, i. 339, 489, 497, 498.
— = dâsa, people, i. 339
Dasyuhan, dasyuhantâ, i. 497.
Dasyuhatyâya, i. 411.
Dâtâ vásûnâm, i. 224.

Dative in *e*, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in *ai*, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in *tvâya*, as infinitive, i. 167.
— in *âya*, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in *âyai*, as infinitive, i. 163.
— in *aye*, as infinitive, i. 163.
— in *taye*, as infinitive, i. 164.
— in *se*, as infinitive, i. 162.
— in *tyai*, as infinitive, i. 164.
— in *dhai* and *dhyai*, as infinitive, i. 167.
— in *ase*, Latin ere, as infinitive, i. 164.
— in *mane*, Greek *μεναι*, as infinitive, i. 165.
— in *vane*, as infinitive, i. 166.
— in *ane*, as infinitive, i. 166.
— in *tave* and *tavai*, i. 167.
Daughter, i. 320, 324, 325; ii. 496.
Daughter-in-law, i. 330.
Daur, i. 341.
Dautia, i. 498 n.
Dâ-váne, to give, i. 142.
David Sahid of Ispahan, his Livre des Lumières, i. 524.
Dawe, day, i. 397.
Dawn, i. 386, 393, 396-408, 411, 413, 414, 435, 436, 438, 439, 443, 447, 462; ii. 237.
— the, and Red Riding Hood, i. 564.
— mythes of, i. 386.
— names of, ii. 237 (Ushas, Urvasî, Ahanâ, Sûryâ), i. 406, 438, 439 (asvâ).
Day, i. 396, 447 n.
De and di, i. 250.
Δε, in *οἰκόνδε*, i. 227.
Dea, i. 332.
Dead and dying religions, ii. 57.
— and live words (ssè-tsé and sing-tsé) in Chinese, i. 42 n.
Dean of St. Paul's Lectures, ii. 37.
Dear, Ir., i. 320.
Debendranath Tagore, ii. 67, 104.
— had the Vedas copied, ii. 40.
Decem, i. 354.
Dechak, Dehak (ten evils), i. 480.
Dedicare (delicare), i. 497 n.
Deha, body, i. 131.
Dehî, wall, i. 130.
Deianeira, i. 395.
Deich, i. 130.
Deiga, i. 498 n.
Deig-an, to knead, i. 130.
Δειμός, i. 447 n.
Deism, ii. 437.
Deity, names of the Semitic, ii. 425, 435, 436.
Δέκα, i. 354.
Del governo dei regni, i. 521.
Deliades, i. 482.
Δήλιος, i. 378.
Δῆλος, i. 447 n.
Delphos, i. 375.
Demagogos, ii. 262.
Demeter, i. 622 n.; ii. 428.
Δήμητερ, vocative, i. 222.
Demokritos, i. 29.
Demon, ii. 420.
Demonstrative roots, i. 90.
Denotsum (Kangur), ii. 171.
Δεωφόντης, i. 498.
Der ez Záferân, Jacobite Cloister of, i. 553.
Derivative roots, second period of Aryan language, i. 92.
Δέσποινα, δεσπότης, i. 339, 499.
Δέσποτα, vocative, i. 222.
Deszimt, i. 354.
Determinatives, i. 91.
Deukalion, i. 310.
Deus, Greek Θεός, i. 185; ii. 134, 240, 428.
Deutsch, E., i. 568.
Deutsche Monatsschrift, ii. 142 n.
Deva, bright, divine, god, i. 402; ii. 134, 237, 428, 436.
Devadatta or Theudas, i. 376, 542.
Devanâgarî MSS., ii. 345.
— letters, ii. 367.
Devar, devara, i. 330, 357, 498 n.
Devas, ii. 350.
Devil, i. 128.
Dew, i. 392, 393, 411.
Deweris, i. 330.
Dewyni, i. 354.
Dhammakkhanda, ii. 170.
Dhammapadam (a Pali work on Buddhist ethics), ii. 186, 208, 254 n.
Dhâranî, ii. 197.
Dharma, ii. 177.

Dharma law, the general name of the second and third baskets of the Tripiṭaka, i. 197; ii. 177, 302.
— as settled in the first and second Councils, ii. 178.
— the nine, ii. 183.
Dharmalatsin, ii. 325 n.
Dharmanandin, ii. 327.
Dharmapâla, ii. 341.
Dharmaraksha, ii. 323.
— the second, ii. 325.
Dharma-samudra-kosha Sûtra, ii. 321.
Dharmayasas, ii. 327.
Dhava, man, i. 218, 332, 333 n.
Dhi, to twinkle or to shine, i. 218.
Dhûrv-ane, in order to hurt, i. 143.
Dhyâni-buddhas, ii. 363 n.
Diadochi, reigns of the, i. 511.
Διάκτορος and διάκτωρ, i. 100.
Διάκτωρ, διάκτορος, i. 443.
Dialects, English, i. 32.
— Chinese, i. 67.
— of the Mundas or the Koles, ii. 33.
— of languages and religions must be studied, ii. 92.
Dialectic (period), i. 308.
Dialectical study of phonetics, i. 290, 294.
Dialogus Creaturarum, the, i. 527, 529 n.
Dick-ard, a thick fellow, i. 55.
Dic-se, i. 162.
Dîdyânah, i. 389.
Diespiter, ii. 449.
Dietrich von Bern, i. 418.
Dieu-donné, ii. 205.
Dig, plural suffix, i. 38 n.
Digamma (aeolicum), i. 393 n., 483.
— in Homer, Bekker on the, i. 201, 229.
Dih, the root, i. 131, 498 n.
Dilli-vâlâ, man of Delhi, i. 56.
Dina, i. 447 n.
Dingua, i. 497 n.
Dionysos, i. 371.
Δῖος = divya, i. 216.
Dîpavansa (history of Buddhism in Ceylon), ii. 182.
Dipuc, and Cupid, i. 129.
Directorium humanæ vitæ, i. 522, 556.
Dîrghâgama-sûtra, ii. 327.
Disciples of Buddha, ii. 76.
Discrimen, i. 194.
Δίσκος, i. 479 n., 497 n.
Diumpais, i. 489 n.
Div, i. 459 n.
Diva, i. 447 n.
Divaspati, ii. 449.
Divâ vihârâya, ii. 355.
Divine origin claimed for the Vedas, ii. 67.
Division of time, ii. 498.
Div-yâ-s, divinus, i. 61 n.
Divyâs, i. 216, 218.
Doctor, symbolic emblem of the, ii. 377.
Δώδεκα, i. 354.
Dog, i. 344.
Dogs of Hell, i. 493 n.
Δοιϝός or δειϝός = deva, i. 216.
Dolichocephalic grammar, i. 187.
Döllinger, Dr., ii. 105.
Dom in kingdom, i. 39.
Domenech, Abbé Em., ii. 372, 373.
— Manuscrit Pictographique Américain by, ii. 372 n., 373.
Dominica, Lord's Day, ii. 463.
Dominican, religious zeal of the — and Franciscan friars, ii. 383.
Δόμος, domŭ, domus, i. 341.
Doni, his Italian translation of fables, i. 523.
Donkey, i. 344.
Doom, not from damnare, i. 71.
Dor, i. 341.
Dôs, dôtis, δόσις, i. 227.
Dosho, ii. 341.
Δώ-σω, i. 60.
Double Procession, question of the, ii. 105.
Doubtful Buddhist books in China, ii. 330.
Dough, i. 132.
Δοῦναι, i. 142.
Dravidian family, i. 34.
— languages, ii. 33.
Dṛibhika, i. 491.
Dronk-ard, drunkard, i. 55.
Dsungaria, ii. 269.
Du (two), i. 354.
Du (to burn), i. 499.

Dughdhar, i. 320.
Duh (to milk), root of duhitar, i. 324.
Duhitâ, duhitáram, i. 78, 222.
Duhitar, i. 320, 324, 328.
Duilian column, the, i. 240.
— inscription, i. 240.
Dukte, ii. 496.
Dum, i. 320.
Δύμη, i. 385 n.
Δύω (two), i. 354.
Δύω (to dive into), i. 385.
Duo, i. 354.
Duodecim, i. 354.
Δυσμαὶ ἡλίου, i. 385.
Dvâdasa, i. 354.
Dvar, dvâras, i. 341.
Dvarka Náth Tagore, ii. 43, 44.
— his visit to Eugène Burnouf, ii. 43.
— unable to read his own sacred Books, ii. 43.
Dvau, i. 354.
Dwi-deszimti, i. 354.
Dwi-lika, i. 354.
Dyaus, Ζεύς, Jupiter, Zio, Tyr, i. 185.
— (deus, the bright), i. 378, 398, 447, 447 n., 492, 616; ii. 419, 420, 424, 426, 428.
— Arusha, child of, i. 445, 447.
Dyav-an, i. 469.
Dyotanâ, i. 397.
Dyu (Jupiter, sky, day), ii. 237.
Dyu (to be brilliant), i. 396, 447 n., 469.
Dyu-gat, going to the sky, i. 102.
Dyu-ksha, dwelling in the sky, i. 102.

Ê and ĕ, ablatives in, i. 232.
Ἐά = vasavî or vasavyâ, i. 224.
Eáige, A.S., i. 134.
Ἐάων = vasûnâm, i. 224.
Ear, to, i. 345.
Earth, i. 406, 414, 446.
— no. of inhabitants, ii. 224, 228, 233.
— Erinyes, daughters of, i. 463.
Earth-holding sâstra, ii. 328.
East, all important religions sprung up in the, ii. 164, 292.
East India Company, i. 1; ii. 115, 167, 169, 278.
— Directors of the, ii. 36.
— Veda published under the patronage of the, ii. 116.
Eastern Church, feast days of SS. Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 543.
Eastern Han dynasty, ii. 347.
— Tsin, the, ii. 326 n., 327.
Eating, representation of, ii. 377.
Eberhard, the great Duke of Würtemburg, orders the German translation of fables, i. 522.
Eburhart, boar-minded, i. 54.
Ech, i. 344.
Echidna, i. 479, 495, 497.
Ἔχις, i. 344.
Echo, i. 468.
Ἔχω, i. 366.
Eckhardt and Tauler, Christian mysticism of, ii. 281, 306.
Edda, i. 382, 415, 416, 418.
Edkins' Trip to Ning-po, ii. 333, 364.
— Buddhist monasteries, ii. 337.
— MS. from Japan, ii. 338. 345.
— on Chinese dialects, i. 68, 72.
Education, purely dogmatic at first, ii. 501.
— elementary, ii. 502.
— scholastic, ii. 503, 506.
— academic, ii. 507.
Educational statistics in England, i. 262, 263.
Ἠεροφοῖτις, i. 461.
Ἔγχελυς, i. 344.
Eyin-hart, fierce-minded, i. 54.
Ἐγώ, i. 64.
-ειν, infinitive, i. 143.
Egypt, i. 6; ii. 113, 165, 210, 211. 381.
— early Civilisation of, ii. 270.
Egyptian priests on the Ganges, ii. 450.
Ei, ablatives in, i. 232.
Eichhoff, i. 351 n.
Eid, oldest form of ablative, i. 232.
Eidolon, ii. 420.
Εἶδος, ii. 513, 516.
Εἰδώς, εἰδυῖα, i. 443.
Εἴκοσι, i. 354.

Εἰλιόνες, εἰνάτερες, i. 330.
Εἶνατερ, vocative, i. 222.
Εἶρος, i. 485.
Ekadasa, i. 354.
Ekas, i. 354.
Ekottarâgama-sûtra, ii. 327.
El (strong), ii. 425, 426, 438.
Elgin, Lord, ii. 30.
Eliot, Translator of the Bible into the Massachusets language, ii. 379.
Eliun (highest), ii. 425, 435.
Elkosh, near Mossul, i. 551.
Ἕλλερα, τά, i. 482.
Eloah, ii. 436.
Elohim, ii. 406, 420, 431, 435–437.
Elysian field, ii. 222, 306.
Em, i. 317.
Empedocles, i. 580.
Ἔμφασις, i. 139.
Empirical knowledge of grammar, i. 137.
Empty word in Chinese (hiu-tsé), i. 42.
-εναι, infinitive, i. 142.
Ἐνάλιος, i. 350.
Ἔνδιος, i. 447 n.
Ἔνδυμα, i. 385.
Endymion, i. 385–390.
— mythe of Selene and, i. 385.
Ἐνδύω, i. 385.
Engil-hart, angel-minded, i. 54.
English language, i. 256, 257.
— number of words in, i. 32.
— universities, ii. 22.
— spelling, i. 259, 260.
— — still changing, i. 260.
— — a national misfortune, i. 262.
— elementary education, i. 262.
— dialects, i. 32.
Ἐννέα, i. 354.
Ensis, i. 348.
Eod for eodem, i. 245.
Eoh, i. 344.
Ἔοργα, ῥέζω = Zend varez, i. 228.
Eorosh, i. 443.
Eos (Ushas, Ἠώς), i. 380, 382. 389–394, 406, 412, 447 n., 467, 606; ii. 306, 421, 423.
Ἠώς, i. 492.
Epic age of literature, ii. 125
Epicharmos, i. 579.
Epimetheus, i. 375.
Epo-s, i. 344.
Equus, i. 344.
Er, Irish, i. 215, 348.
Ἔραμαι, ἐράω, i. 447 n.
Eran, ii. 142 n.
Eranian, i. 205.
Ἐρατός, ἐρατεινός, i. 447 n.
Ἐρεείνω, i. 461.
Erestheus, i. 212.
Erezataêna, Zend = argentinus, i. 226.
Erida, i. 345.
Ἐριννύειν, i. 447 n., 461.
Ἐριννύς, Ἐρινύς, i. 447 n., 492.
Erinnys, Erinys, i. 375 n., 462, 463.
Erinyes, daughters of the Earth, i. 463, 622.
— of Skotos, i. 463.
Ἔριον, i. 485.
Eris, i. 369.
Ἔρις (strife), i. 461.
Eros, i. 313, 375, 383, 437–439, 443, 447 n., 449.
— son of Aphrodite, i. 446.
— oldest of the Greek gods, i. 447 n.
— is the dawning sun, i. 438.
— child of Zeus, i. 445.
Ἔρος, i. 447 n.
Ἔρση, i. 393 n.
Ἐρυθρός, i. 408.
Esmi, i. 317.
Esquimaux legend of the sun, i. 609, 610.
Est, esti, i. 617.
Ἐσθής, i. 347.
Esthonian legend, confusion of tongues, ii. 398, 399.
Esus, ii. 132.
Été (statum), i. 366.
Ethnological Society, Transactions of the, ii. 152 n.
— Survey of India, ii. 32.
Etruscan grammar, ii. 26.
Etymological consciousness, i. 276.
— spelling, i. 280, 281.
— often misleading, i. 277.
Eudemos, i. 375 n.
Eumæus, Swineherd, i. 310.
Eumenides, O. Müller's Essay on the, i. 375 n.
Europe, name of, i. 349, 406 n.

European languages, Great, i. 256.
Eurydike, i. 406, 435, 436, 570.
Eurymede, i. 406.
Eurynome, i. 375 n., 406.
Euryphaëssa, i. 406, 606.
Εὐρύς, i. 371, 406.
Eurystheus, i. 420.
Ἐύς = vasus, i. 224.
Eva (Sanskrit), i. 227.
Eve, or Ive, ii. 456.
Evenos, i. 374.
Ewald, i. 70.
Ewe, i. 344.
Examinations, evils of, ii. 522–527.
Exemplario contra los engaños, i. 523 n.
Ex-im-i-us, to be taken out, i. 61.
Ex Oriente Lux, ii. 10.
Extinction, Nirvâna means, ii. 303.
Ex villa, i. 234.

F, capital, ii. 496, 497.
F, instead of ph, i. 275.
Fables, migration of, i. 500.
— Aesop's, i. 501.
— animal, i. 502.
— Arabic translation, i. 516–519.
— Buddhist, i. 502.
— common Aryan, i. 507.
— German translation, i. 522.
— Greek translation, i. 520.
— Hebrew translation, i. 522.
— Latin translation, i. 521.
— Italian, by Firenzuola and Doni, i. 523.
— La Fontaine's, i. 500, 501.
— of Phaedrus and Horace, i. 501.
— in Sanskrit, i. 501, 502.
— Syriac translation of, found by Professor Benfey, i. 548.
— the Hitopadesa, i. 503.
— the Pañkatantra, i. 502.
Fac-se, i. 162.
Facso, i. 60 n.
Fad, i. 342.
Fa-fang (Dharmalatsin), ii. 325 n.
Fafnir, the serpent, i. 415, 479.
Fahian, ii. 200 n., 205, 258, 266, 315, 325, 345.
Fa-hsi, ii. 327.
Fâ-hwa, ii. 324.
Failhu, i. 344.
Fâ-lanlan, Dharma + x, ii. 320.
Familiâi, familiâis, i. 236.
Families of languages, i. 34.
Fan, Fan-lon-mo (Brahma), ii. 262.
Fan-yeh, ii. 318.
Farah, i. 344.
Fâ-shang, ii. 324.
Fassradh, i. 347.
Fasti Juliani, i. 245.
Fate, ii. 242.
Father, i. 320, 340.
Father-in-law, i. 330.
Faths, i. 338.
Fausböll, ii. 167, 186, 254 n.
Faut, il me, i. 368.
Fa-yang-king, ii. 325.
Feï-to (Veda), ii. 262.
Feld, i. 345.
Fellowships, how to restore them to their original purpose, i. 113.
— made into a career for life, i. 116.
— prize, i. 115.
— and celibacy, i. 116.
Fellows of Colleges, work for, i. 112.
Feminine bases in *â*, i. 154.
Feoh, A. S., i. 325.
Feram, instead of ferem, i. 59.
Ferem, in the sense of a future, i. 59.
Fergusson, Mr., ii. 32.
Feridun, i. 479.
Ferre, = fer-se, i. 162.
Fides, trust, i. 148.
Fido, I trust, i. 148.
Fidus, trusty, i. 148.
Fidvôr, i. 354.
Field, i. 345.
Fifth period of the Aryan language, i. 100.
Figures, ii. 499.
— Our figures borrowed from the Arabs, ii. 499.
— discovered, according to the Arabs, by the Indians, ii. 499.
Fihu, i. 344.
Fi-hwa, ii. 323.
Filia (suckling), i. 324.
Filosofo, i. 275.
Final s in Latin, i. 234, 235.

Final dental of *tad*, i. 152.
Fingere, i. 130.
Finland, ii. 234 n.
Finnish Mythology, ii. 236 n.
Finns, i. 7; ii. 236 n.
Firdusi, i. 23, 479.
Firenzuola, his Italian edition of fables, i. 523.
Fire-worshippers as disciples of Buddha, ii. 76.
First period of the Aryan Language, i. 87.
Fithal, i. 344.
Fléchier, fletcher, i. 52.
Flos, floris, i. 438.
Fly, i. 344.
Fo (Buddha), i. 7; ii. 319.
Foal, i. 344.
Foe Koue Ki, ii. 265.
Foedus, a truce, i. 148.
Fo-hen-hing-king (Sûtra), ii. 321.
Folda, i. 345.
Fo-pen-king, ii. 191 n.
Formal things once material, i. 62.
Formation of themes, i. 98.
Former *Khin* dynasty, ii. 324.
Fo-to, Fo (Buddha), ii. 262.
Foucaux, ii. 191, 258.
Fouquet, i. 9.
Four drives of Buddha, the, i. 537; ii. 197.
— stages of meditation preparing to Nirvâṇa, ii. 251.
— verities of Buddha, ii. 249.
Fourth period of the Aryan language, i. 97.
Fox, old name for, i. 55.
Fraêsta, Zend, πλεῖστος, i. 227.
Franciscan, religious zeal of Dominican and F. friars, ii. 383.
Fratelmo, i. 86.
Frater, i. 320.
Fratri-cida, not fratrem-cida, i. 102.
Fredegond, i. 418.
Freedom of thought, ii. 481.
— intellectual, ii. 485.
Freethinkers, ii. 484.
Freycinet and Arago's Voyage to the Eastern Ocean, ii. 375.
Friday, ii. 463, 465.
Frigere, frost, frus, i. 392.
Frons, Zend brvat, i. 227.
Frontenac, Count de, ii. 374.
Fui, i. 366.
Fu-*khi*en, sovereign of the Fûs, ii. 324.
Fula, i. 344.
Full words in Chinese (shi-tsé), i. 42, 88.
Fulvus (harit), red, i. 66.
Fundare, i. 246.
Future, terminations of, i. 60.
— so-called Attic, i. 60 n.
— Skuld, τὰ μέλλοντα, i. 316, 462.

G for C in old Latin, i. 240.
Gabet and Huc, ii. 264.
Gæa, i. 371, 375 n.
Γάλως, i. 330.
Gama's collection of American hieroglyphic MSS., ii. 384.
Gâmâtar, i. 330, 331.
Γαμβρός, i. 330, 331.
Gan, root to *ganitar*, genitor, γενετήρ, i. 322, 340.
Gana, plural suffix, i. 38 n.
Ganaka, father, king, i. 340.
Gandharvas, i. 408–410; ii. 297.
Ganesa, god of success, ii. 59, 101.
— and Janus, i. 129; ii. 449.
Ganges, ii. 262.
Gani, *ganî* (mother), i. 340.
Ganitár, *ganitrî*, i. 322.
Ganra, i. 344.
Ganymedes and Kanvamedhâtithi, or Kanvamesha, i. 129.
Gaô, i. 344.
Garanh, γέρας, i. 227.
Gards, i. 341.
Gargantua, Rabelais', i. 526.
Garudas, ii. 297.
Garutmat, ii. 138, 448.
Gaspadorus, i. 340.
Gâspati, i. 156 n., 340.
Gâspatyam, i. 156 n.
Gâtaka, Sûtra, ii. 321.
Gâtakas, ii. 336, 337.
Gâti, genus, ii. 513.
Gâti, plural suffix, i. 38 n.
Gaud-i-um, i. 61.
Gaujan, i. 212.

Gautama *S*âkya-muni (Buddha), son of *S*uddhodana, ii. 288.
— clan of the Gautamas, ii. 195.
— story of, i. 537; ii. 195 et seq.
Gavesh, to inquire, i. 327.
Gaveshana, research, i. 327.
Gavishti, battle, i. 327.
Gâyatrî, the, ii. 128.
Gę, Old Norse, cold, snow, i. 226.
Gems, the four, ii. 352.
— the seven in Pâli, ii. 352 n.
— in Sanskrit, ii. 352 n.
Gener, i. 330, 331.
Genera, ii. 515.
General expressions, in languages not highly developed, i. 90.
Genesis, ii. 399.
Γενικώτατον (ῥῆμα), i. 139.
Genitive in *as*, as infinitive, i. 161.
— to*h*, as infinitive, i. 167.
— and locative identical in the dual in Sk., i. 235.
Genitor, genitrix, i. 322.
Γένος, ii. 513, 516.
Gens, ii. 514.
Genus and Species, ii. 512–516.
Genziô (Hiouen-thsang), ii. 241.
Geometric Science, first impulse given to, ii. 15.
Gêrard, a miser, i. 55, 56.
Geras, i. 369.
Γέρας, = garanh, i. 227.
Gerhard, Paul, sacred songs of, ii. 111.
— Prof. (Greek Mythology), i. 454.
German most closely united with Celtic (Ebel, Lottner), i. 191.
— professor's life, Niebuhr and Bunsen's views of, i. 179.
— translation of fables, i. 522.
Ger-men, growing, i. 66.
Gerundive participle in Sanskrit, i. 60.
Geryones (Γηρυονής), i. 495.
Gesetz, meaning of, i. 196.
Getæ, ii. 317, 318 n.
Getavana, ii. 193.
Géver, i. 330.
Gharma, i. 416.
Ghási Dás, the prophet, ii. 106.
Ghilghiti dialect of Shinâ, ii. 34.
Ghrishvi, i. 344.
Ghritâkis, ghritasnâs, i. 439.
Ghrita-pratika, i. 218.
Gibbon, on the Roman religion of the second Century, ii. 102.
Gignere, locative from gigno, i. 144.
Gill, Rev. W., introduced writing among his converts, i. 257.
Gilvus, *flavus*, yellow, i. 66.
Gird, i. 341 n.
Giriprasâda-sinha, Rajah of Besmah, ii. 20.
Girna, mill-stone, pl. girnôs, hand-mill, i. 346.
Girnar, Edicts of Asoka on the rocks of, ii. 256.
Gishe, *geshe*, infinitive, i. 162.
Givâse, in order to live, i. 144.
Gjö, Norw., nix autumni recens, i. 227.
Glacies, gelacies, i. 226.
Gloaming, i. 472, 473.
Glos, i. 330.
Gnaivod, i. 154, 237.
Gnâ-s, the Vedic, i. 155.
Gnâspati, i. 156 n.
Gnatio, ii. 514.
Γνώμων, i. 141.
Gnosticism, ii. 253.
Go, pl. gâvas, ox, cow, i. 326, 344.
Goa, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Goat, i. 344.
Gobharana, ii. 320.
Gobi, ii. 257.
God, Adam, son of, ii. 413.
— German word, its derivation, i. 458.
— Hostanes and Plato about the existence of one invisible, i. 22.
— Names of, ii. 417–421, 424–428, 430–432.
God-hâd, i. 54.
Godhead, i. 39.
Gogerly, Dr. I., ii. 175.
Go-go-yuga, i. 326.
Gold colour, mark of a Buddha, ii. 318 n.
Goldstücker, Professor, ii. 30.
Gonds, language of the, ii. 33.
Goose, i. 344.
Gopa (cowherd), i. 326.

Gopâ (cowherdess), wife of Buddha, ii. 196, 204.
Gopâla, ii. 449.
Gopayati, i. 326.
Gorgon, i. 300, 450, 491.
Gorod, i. 341.
Gosh*th*a (cow-pen, stable), i. 328.
Gosh*th*î (assembly), i. 328.
Goshu-yudh, i. 327.
Gospod, gospodin, gospodar, i. 340.
Gospodarz, i. 340.
Gotama Sanghadeva, ii. 327.
Gothart, God-minded, i. 54.
Gothic system, ii. 447.
Gotra (originally hurdle), i. 326, 327.
Gotrâ, herd of kine, i. 326.
Go-válá, cowherd, i. 56.
Govedar (cowherd), i. 326.
Govjado (herd), i. 326, 344.
Gow, i. 344.
Gôws (cow), i. 326, 344.
Goyuga, i. 326.
Grammar, dolichocephalic, i. 187.
— empirical knowledge of, i. 137.
— rational knowledge of, i. 137.
Grammatica Celtica of Zeuss, i. 125.
Granth, ii. 160.
Granum, i. 345.
Greaves, Professor of Arabic, i. 120.
Greece, gods and heroes of G. identical with those of India, ii. 466.
— heroes of, i. 378.
— History of (Grote), i. 301.
— mythological Language of, i. 435.
— worship of nature in, i. 457.
Greek philosophy, i. 587, 588.
— form of the Pot au Lait, i. 520, 559.
— gods, i. 382 n., 459; (Eros, oldest of the Gr. g.), i. 313, 447 n.
— heretics, ii. 428.
— months, names of, i. 385.
— most closely united with Sanskrit (Grassman, Sonne, Kern), i. 191.
— of Homer, ii. 130.
— or Macedonian workmen in India, ii. 35.
— Oxford chair of, i. 119.
— religion, i. 587.
Greek stories carried to India by Alexander's conquests, i. 511.
— studies of Curtius in, i. 125.
— the Augment in, i. 82.
Green (Sk. hari), i. 66.
Greenaway, Rev. C., ii. 27.
Grey, Sir George, ii. 28.
Griffith, Mr., i. 11; ii. 20.
Grimblot, ii. 176, 179.
Grimhild, i. 416.
Grimm, i. 351 n., 367, 373, 458; ii. 397, 398.
— Burning of the Dead, i. 335 n.
— Essay on the origin of Language, ii. 397.
— his Teutonic studies, i. 125.
— on the words God and good, i. 458.
— on German (Teutonic) Mythology, i. 373.
Grimm's Law, i. 67 n., 396.
Grînîshâni, i. 163.
Gris, grîs, i. 344.
Grod, i. 341.
Grote (History of Greece), i. 301, 311, 371, 372, 374.
Guatemala, ii. 381, 386-389, 390, 391.
— Popol Vuh, sacred book of the people of, ii. 386.
Gudrun, i. 416-418.
Gulth, i. 348.
Guma, i. 212.
Γύναι, vocative, i. 222.
Gundaharius, Gundicarius, i. 417.
Γυνή, i. 340.
Gunnar (mythe of), i. 416, 417, 419.
Gunther, i. 417, 420.
Gválá, cowherd, i. 56.
Gwisk, i. 347.

H, capital, ii. 497.
Habere, i. 365.
Hâd, A. S. state, i. 53.
Hades, i. 375 n.
Hafr, i. 344.
Hagene, i. 415.
Ἅγιος, holy, i. 61.
Haims, i. 341.

Hairda, i. 327 n.
Hall, Dr. FitzEdward, ii. 215.
Ἅλς, i. 350.
Hamitic stratum, ii. 496.
Hamsa, i. 341.
Han, dynasty of, ii. 257, 317, 322, 343, 345.
Han, to kill; hantâ, i. 483.
Har-at, i. 348.
Hard, hardy, i. 54.
Hardwick's Christ and other Masters, ii. 129.
Hardy, Spence, ii. 175, 190, 208, 214, 254 n., 282, 289.
— Manual of Buddhism, ii. 175, 282.
Hari, i. 488.
Hari, green, i. 66.
Harit, fulvus, red, i. 66.
Harit, Haritas (Seven Sisters), i. 348, 439, 441, 442, 447, 447 n., 492.
Harley, Lord, address to, i. 399.
Hart, strong, i. 54.
Harun al Raschid, i. 519.
Haubida, caput, i. 135.
Havet, M., his translation of the Rede Lecture, i. 27 n.
Head, different ways of spelling, i. 260 n.
Head in Godhead, i. 39.
Heaven, heart of, ii. 393, 394, 399.
Hebe, i. 395.
Ἑβδομος, and ἑπτά, i. 219.
Hebrew, i. 307; ii. 119, 131, 181.
— lectureship proposed, i. 118.
— Oxford chair of, i. 119.
— Pardés, i. 130.
— form of the Kalilag and Dimnag, i. 559.
Hecate, Hekate, i. 380; ii. 424, 450.
Ἥδιον and ἡδίαν, i. 221.
Hegel, i. 449; ii. 129, 286, 307.
Hegel's Philosophy of Religion, ii. 129.
Hegelian laws of thought, i. 3.
Heifer, i. 344.
Εἷς, i. 354.
Ἑκατόν, i. 354.
Ἑκατος, Ἑκατήβολος, i. 380.
Hektor, i. 580.
Ἑκυρός, ἑκυρά, i. 330.
Helena, i. 318.
Helios, i. 378, 384, 467, 604, 605, 606.
— cattle of (days), i. 474.
Ἥλιος, i. 380.
Hell, ii. 157.
— unknown in the Buddha country, ii. 355.
Hellas, i. 449, 457.
Hellen, i. 374, 375.
Hemera, i. 382.
Ἕνδεκα, i. 354.
Heng-ho (Ganges), ii. 262.
Henotheism, ii. 137, 412, 415.
Henry VIII, and the Oxford chairs of Greek and Hebrew, i. 118.
— did nothing for Arabic, i. 119.
Heord, A. S., i. 327 n.
Ἑως, i. 438.
Ἑπτά, i. 354.
Hêrâ, Hêrê, (worship in Argos), i. 420, 489, 580.
Herakleitos (Heraklitus), i. 21, 29, 310, 580, 583, 588.
Herakles, i. 394, 395, 419, 420, 455, 456, 495; ii. 241.
— twofold character of — as a god and a hero, ii. 241.
— death of, i. 394, 415.
— myth of, i. 419, 420.
— names of, i. 394.
— a real Vritrahan, i. 497.
Ἡρακλες, vocative, i. 222.
Herbalist, symbolic emblem for an, ii. 377.
Heredity, ii. 492–494.
Hermanfried, i. 418.
Hermann, Gottfried, i. 140, 184.
Hermanricus, i. 419.
Ἑρμηνεύω, i. 447 n.
Hermes, i. 314, 456, 497; ii. 426, 431.
— Trismegistus, i. 23.
Ἑρμῆς, Ἑρμείας, i. 347 n.
Ἕρπετον, i. 344.
Herse (dew), i. 391, 393 and n.
Ἕρση, i. 393 n.
Hesiod, theogony of, i. 496.
Hesperides (Evening Star), i. 369.
Ἑστία, i. 147 n., 393 n.

Hesus (Esus), ii. 132 n.
Ἑξ, i. 354.
Hiatus in Latin, i. 243.
— in Sanskrit, i. 243.
Hieroglyphic MSS. of America, ii. 384, 385.
Hieroglyphics, ii. 496.
— Mexican, i. 381.
Ἱκετέσιος, Ζεύς, i. 376.
Himâla, forest of, ii. 289.
Himalayan countries, ii. 257.
— mountains, ii. 258.
Himil, A. S., vault, sky, i. 227.
Himyaritic inscriptions, ii. 438.
Hînayâna school represented in China, ii. 327.
— in Japan, ii. 341.
Hindu reckoning of time, ii. 464.
— widows, the supposed Vaidik authority for the burning of, (Wilson), i. 334.
— religion, not missionary, ii. 99 n.
Hiörð, i. 337 n.
Hiouen-shi period, ii. 326 n.
Hiouen-thsang, ii. 122, 186, 190, 200 n., 205, 234, 235, 248, 254, 259, 264–278, 313, 315, 336, 337, 338, 341, 348, 368.
— biography of, ii. 234.
— 740 books in 1,335 volumes, translated by, ii. 276, 316.
Ἱπποβούκολος, i. 326.
Hipponoos, i. 483.
Ἵππος, i. 344.
Hiranyam, i. 348.
Ἵστωρ, i. 393 n.
Historical character of language lost in phonetic spelling, i. 274.
— spelling, i. 279, 280.
— religions, ii. 47.
— — number of, ii. 47.
History of Central America, ii. 374.
— of the Christian Church (Neander), ii. 282.
— of Christianity (Dean Milman), ii. 286.
— of Greece (Grote), i. 301.
— of the Science of Language, Benfey's, ii. 9.
— of the Five Nations (Colden), ii. 374.
History of Ancient Sanskrit literature, (Max Müller), ii. 109 n.
Hitopadesa, the, i. 503.
— fable of the Brâhman and the rice, i. 504.
Hi-wei-tao, ii. 477, 478.
Hliumunt, and sromata, i. 195.
Hlûd, A. S. loud, i. 195.
Hoang-ho (Yellow River), ii. 267.
Hobbes' view of freedom, ii. 481.
— view of man, i. 198.
Hodgson, Brian Houghton, ii. 168–170, 182–185, 281.
Hoeili, ii. 234 n.
Hoei-seng, travels of, ii. 259.
Hog, i. 344.
Hogarth, meaning of, i. 54.
Högni, i. 417.
Hôgo, ii. 348.
Ὅλοι, i. 483.
Home, i. 341.
Homer, i. 365, 381, 396, 451, 460, 461, 474; ii. 130, 135.
— digamma in, i. 201.
— and Hesiod responsible for Greek superstitions, i. 582.
— — not the only feeders of religious life in Greece, i. 588.
Homines, i. 212.
Homonymes, i. 282, 377.
Homoousia, the, i. 105.
Horace's fables, i. 501.
Horae, i. 362.
Hôriuji, temple of, ii. 368, 369.
— treasures of, ii. 370.
Horse, i. 344, 438–442.
Hospodar, i. 340.
Hossô sect, ii. 241.
Hostanes, i. 32.
Hostes, i. 498.
Hottentot legend of the moon, i. 610, 611.
— stories, i. 611 n.
— language, ii. 29.
Hrîm, rime, i. 226.
Hruom, Old High German, i. 195.
Hsiang-yang, ii. 324.
Hsiâo-pin Sûtra, ii. 322.
Hsien-Kieh hill, ii. 319.
Hsin-ye, ii. 324.
Hsî-phing period, ii. 328.

Huc, Abbé, ii. 168 n., 264, 280, 285.
Huet, friend of La Fontaine, i. 513.
Huet's Demonstratio Evangelica, ii. 443.
Hugihart, wise-minded, i. 54.
Huiz, i. 346.
Human beings without language, ii. 26.
Humboldt (Alex. and Wilh. v.), ii. 234, 260, 384.
Hund, i. 344.
Hung-shi period, ii. 324, 326 n.
Huns, ii. 317.
— of Attila, i. 418.
Hunt, Professor of Arabic, i. 120.
Hunter (Annals of Rural Bengal), i. 11.
Hurdle, i. 327 n.
Hus, i. 344.
Husain ben Ali, his Anvári Suhaili, i. 524.
Husson, on ancient mythology in popular tales, i. 564-567.
Hvaitei, hveit, hvît, i. 346.
Hwan, the emperor, ii. 321.
Hwang-Khu period, ii. 322.
Hwâ-yen Sûtra, ii. 327.
Hwei-ynan, ii. 364 n.
Hwen Tsang, ii. 314.
Ὑει, Ζεύς, i. 378.
Ὑγρὰ κέλευθα, i. 349.
Ὑιός, i. 328 n.
Hyde, Professor of Arabic, i. 120.
Hymn (Mantra), ii. 119, 121, 122, 124, 127, 128, 135, 138 et seq.
— to Agni, ii. 143.
— from the Atharvaveda, ii. 150.
— to Indra, ii. 140.
— to the Maruts (Rudras), ii. 143.
— to Ushas, ii. 145.
— to Varuṇa, ii. 148, 153.
Hyperion, i. 605, 606.
Hyperionis, i. 605, 606.
Ὑπέρμορον, ii. 242.
Ὑφαίνω, i. 347.
Hypnos, i. 369, 371.
Ὑπό, i. 330 n.
Ὑς, i. 344.
I, Latin locative in, i. 230.
Jacob, ii. 430.
Jacolliot, La Bible dans l'Inde, ii. 468 et seq.
Jains, ii. 160, 228.
Jakumio, ii. 368.
Iambics, ii. 125.
Janus, ii. 449.
— and Ganesa, i. 129; ii. 449.
Japan, ii. 168.
— Buddhism in, ii. 339, 340.
— — corrupted, ii. 365.
— Chinese translations in, ii. 325 n.
— — vocabulary found by Edkins, ii. 338.
— future of, ii. 366.
— Sanskrit MSS. in, ii. 329, 342, 345, 347, 365, 366, 367.
— — studied in, ii. 341, 342.
— Shinto religion in, ii. 339.
— Sukhavatîvyûhasûtra, the favourite Sûtra in, ii. 363.
Japanese sent to China to study, ii. 341.
Japhetic family of languages, i. 204.
Jatrew, i. 330.
Javai, i. 346.
Iberians, graves among the, ii. 377.
Ice, names for, i. 226.
Iceland, ii. 242.
Içi, Zend, ice, i. 226.
Id, oldest form of ablative, i. 232.
Îd and â in Latin, i 239.
— locative in, i. 246.
Idâ, (Aida, Purûravas son of), i. 408, 447.
Idaeos, i. 419.
Ἰδαῖος, i. 394.
Idas, i. 374.
Idealistic philosophy, i. 578.
-ιδης, derivatives in -ιων and -ιδης, i. 460.
Idolatry and the Brahmos, ii. 79.
Jehovah, ii. 306, 477, 478.
Jeremiah, ii. 409, 431-433.
Jesuit, i. 9.
Jesus and Isis, ii. 472.
Jethro, faith of, ii. 431.
Jewish and Pagan religions, coincidences between, ii. 442.
Jews, number of sacred books of the, ii. 111.
— religion of the, i. 6.

Jews, do not proselytise, ii. 49.
— the most proselytising of people, ii. 95.
Ignis-Agni, fire, ii. 237.
I-hsi period, ii. 327.
Jin, ii. 433.
Ilâvrita, i. 211.
Im, i. 317.
Immortality, ii. 154 et seq., 157 n.
— belief in, among the ancient Hindus (in personal immortality, immortality of the soul), ii. 154, et seq.
— secured by a son, ii. 156.
Impedimenta, impelimenta, i. 498 n.
In villa, i. 234.
Inca, i. 420 n.
Incapsulating languages, i. 50.
In-cre-p-are, i. 195.
India, Animals, names of domestic, the same in England and in, i. 343.
— Buddhists in, ii. 228.
— civilisation, early, of, ii. 270.
— Language of, ii. 120, 130, 423.
— religious census of, ii. 227.
Indian religion, i. 10.
— Government, their readiness to help students, ii. 29.
— languages, classes of, ii. 33.
— MSS. in China, ii. 332.
— Mirror, the, ii. 41.
— Museum in London, ii. 35.
Indians in China, ii. 317 n.
Indians of America, ii. 374, 379, 383.
— love song, ii. 378.
— inscriptions, ii. 376.
— picture writing, ii. 375.
— Red Indians, ii. 373, 375.
— tribes (Schoolcraft on), ii. 380.
— war song, ii. 378.
— sacred writings of the, ii. 372.
Indica of Megasthenes, ii. 222 n.
Individual, ii. 512.
— or statutable religions, i. 586.
Indo-Celtic, i. 204.
Indo-Chinese family, i. 34.
Indo-Classic, i. 204.
Indo-European languages, i. 204.
Indo-Germanic family, i. 204.
Indra, i. 379, 397, 398, 479, 488, 490, 492; ii. 127, 134, 136, 137, 151, 152, 237, 245, 424, 426, 428, 449.
— horses of, i. 443.
— Hymn to, ii. 140 seqq.
— Name of — of Indian growth (Jupiter Pluvius), i. 492.
— *Ribhu* epithet of, i. 435.
— or King, ii. 350.
Indriyas, the five, ii. 355 n.
Indu, i. 492.
Indus, ii. 248, 274.
Induviae, i. 498 n.
In-ed-i-a, i. 61.
Infinitive, the, i. 138.
— as an adverb, i. 140.
— in Greek, i. 145.
— as substantive, i. 146.
— in Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin, i. 157.
— Dative in *e*, i. 161.
— Dative in *ai*, i. 181.
— Dative in *ane*, i. 166.
— Dative in *tave* and *tavai*, i. 167.
— Dative in *âya*, i. 161.
— Dative in *s-e*, i. 162.
— Dative in *âyai*, i. 163.
— Dative in *aye*, i. 163.
— Dative in *taye*, i. 164.
— Dative in *tyai*, i. 164.
— Dative in *ase*, i. 164.
— Dative in *mane*, i. 165.
— Dative in *vane*, i. 166.
— Accusative in *am*, i. 161.
— Genitive in *as*, i. 161.
— Ablative in *as*, i. 161.
— Locative in *i*, i. 161.
— Locative in *sani*, i. 166.
— in English, i. 170.
— in Anglo-Saxon, i. 170.
— in Bengali, i. 172.
— in Dravidian Languages, i. 173.
Infinitives, i. 140.
Infixing or incapsulating languages, i. 50.
Inflection, the results of combination, i. 79.
Inflectional languages, i. 44.
— stage, i. 84.
Ingnas, subordinate demons, ii. 151 n.

Innoca from *innocua*, i. 100.
Innox from *innoca*, i. 100.
Inscriptiones Helveticæ (Mommsen), ii. 132 n.
Inscriptions, Achæmenian, ii. 264.
— Greek, ii. 438.
— Hieroglyphic Mexican, ii. 138, 385.
— Himyaritic, ii. 438.
— Sinaitic, ii. 438.
— Stone of Luceria, i. 246.
Instinct, divine, ii. 434.
— religious, ii. 411.
Instrumentals in tvâ, as infinitive, i. 167.
Insula, i. 350.
Intelligent, inter-ligent, inter-twining, ii. 12.
International Congress of Orientalists, ii. 1.
Joannes Damascenus, i. 532, 546.
Joasaph or Josaphat or Bodhisattva, i. 546.
Job, book of, ii. 220, 422, 423.
Joel, translator of fables from Arabic into Hebrew, i. 522.
Joguth Chundra Gangooly, i. 14 n.
Johannes of Capua, author of Latin translation of fables, i. 522.
Johnson's dictionary, influence on spelling, i. 260.
Johnston, Sir Alexander, ii. 174.
Iokaste, i. 477.
Iole, i. 395.
-ιων, derivations in *-ιων* and *-ιδης*, i. 460.
Jones, Sir William, ii. 164, 167, 210, 448, 451, 452.
— on the gods of Greece, Italy, and India, ii. 447, 449.
— his translations from Sanskrit, ii. 7.
— on the resemblance between Sanskrit, Greek, and Latin, ii. 8.
Jörmunrek, i. 419.
Jornandes, i. 418; ii. 181.
Ἰός, poison, i. 395.
Josaphat, his early life the same as Buddha's, i. 540.
Josephus on the Sabbath, ii. 461 n.
Joshua, strange gods mentioned by, ii. 429.
Irā, Sansk., i. 210.
Iran, i. 214.
Irăvat, i. 210.
Irenfried, i. 418.
Irish (Old), i. 320, 344; ii. 132 n.; (St. Patrick converted the), i. 475.
Iron, i. 348.
Iroquois country, ii. 374.
Isaac, ii. 434.
Isfendiyar, i. 415.
Isis, ii. 472.
Islâm, the, ii. 53.
Isolating languages, i. 44.
— spirit in the science of language, i. 126.
Ist, i. 617.
Ἴστωρ, i. 393 n.
Istud, Latin, i. 152.
Îsvara (Lord) of the Yogins, ii. 216.
It, eight ways of spelling, i. 260 n.
Italian translation of the Stephanites and Ichnelates, i. 520.
Ἴταλος, i. 344.
Itineraries of the fifty-six (Chinese) monks, ii. 259.
I-tsing, ii. 368.
Itsun, ii. 318.
Julien, Stanislas, i. 74 n.; ii. 122, 186, 192 n., 232, 239, 263, 265, 277, 313.
Jupiter (dyu, sky), i. 616; ii. 132, 135, 139, 237, 424, 428, 449.
— Optimus Maximus, ii. 424.
— Pluvius, i. 492.
— sub Jove frigido, i. 378.
— Ζεύς, Dyaus, Zio, and Tyr, i. 185.
Justin Martyr, i. 20.
Juxtaposition produces combination, i. 79.
Juxtapositional stage, i. 84.
Juxtapositional, combinatory, and inflectional strata in the formation of the Aryan language, i. 107.
Ivi, bone, ii. 456, 457.
Ixtlilxochitl, his history, ii. 385.

K, various pronunciations of, i. 295.
— whence derived, ii. 497.

Ka, Sanskrit particle, i. 135.
Kabir, founder of the sect of the Avadhûta, ii. 65.
— commandments of, ii. 65.
— his reforms, ii. 65.
— poetry of, ii. 103.
Kabul, ii. 271, 317 n.
Kabulistan, ii. 269. 275.
Kadamba tree, i. 431.
Kad-vân, i. 153.
Kafir or Bâ-ntu family, i. 34.
K'ai-yuen-lu period, ii. 317, 321, 322, 323, 326.
Kâkapeya, ii. 353 n.
Kakravâka, i. 430.
Kal, i. 47.
Kala or Gala in Tamil, i. 39 n.
Kâla-*kakra*, ii. 330.
Kâlayasas, ii. 346.
Kalantaka, monastery of, ii. 202.
Kalâsha-Mûnder dialects, ii. 34.
Kâlê, ii. 449.
Καλεῖν, not calare, or to call, i. 71.
Kalevara, body, i. 132.
Kali, the goddess, ii. 59.
— goddess of Calcutta, ii. 101.
Kalidâsa, i. 11, 421.
Kalidâsa's play of Sakuntala, ii. 7.
Kalila and Dimnah, Mongolian translation of, i. 511 n.
— when written, i. 514, 557.
— Persian translation of by Nasr Allah, i. 523.
— Spanish translation of, i. 525.
— in Latin verse, i. 525.
Kalilag and Damnag, i. 551.
— Renan on, i. 548, 551.
— finding MS. of, i. 554.
Kaljush (Koljush, Kolosh), of N. America, ii. 398.
Kalpas, ii. 272, 296, 297.
Καλύπτω, i. 386.
Kalyke, i. 384, 386.
Kâma, i. 444 n., 445, 446.
Kamara, Zend, girdle, *καμάρα*, i. 227.
Kameredhe, Zend, skull; cf. *κμέλεθρον*, i. 227.
Kamilarois, religious ideas of the, ii. 27.
Kan, catalogue of the Great, ii. 323.
— northern, dynasty, ii. 329.
Kandâla, ii. 319.
Kandra, ii. 237.
Kandragupta, ii. 123, 211, 212.
Kang, the emperor, ii. 321.
Kang-*Khien*, ii. 317.
— prisoner to the Huns, ii. 317.
Kanjur (Bkah-hgyur, Kah-gyur), ii. 171.
— its seven parts, ii. 172.
Kan-lû period, ii. 323.
Kans, i. 344.
Kanva, ii. 145.
Kanva-medhâtithi or *Kanva*-mesha and Ganymedes, i. 129.
Kâo-khang, ii. 325, 326.
Kao-tsu, ii. 329.
Kapila, ii. 204, 214–220, 253.
— aphorisms of, ii. 216 n., 220.
— sûtras of, ii. 215.
Kapilavastu (substance of Kapila?), ii. 195, 200, 204, 205, 214.
Κάπρος, i. 344.
Kapurdigiri, Edicts of Asoka preserved on the rocks of Dhauli, Girnar, and, ii. 256.
Karanga, ii. 142.
Κᾶρες *βαρβαρόφωνοι*, i. 485.
Kareta, Zend, knife, culter, i. 227.
Karman, ii. 494, 495.
Karta (pit), i. 341 n., ii. 157.
Kârtikêya, god of war, ii. 59, 101.
Kashmir (Buddhism spread to), ii. 257, 274.
— old MSS. in, ii. 335.
Κασσύω, i. 347.
Kâsyapa, ii. 191 n., 284, 336.
— Mâtanga, ii. 319, 320.
— Compiler of the Abhidharma of the Tripiṭaka, ii. 284.
Κατάλογος, i. 196.
κατασύω, i. 347.
Κατηγόρημα or *σύμβαμα*, i. 139.
Kathenotheism, ii. 137.
Kâtyâyana, disciple of Buddha, ii. 123, 202.
Kaunos, i. 373.
Kaurn, i. 346.
Kehrp or *krip*, i. 226.
Kephalos, i. 390, 394, 414.
Kêr, i. 369.
Kerberos (the dark one), i. 493–495.

Kerberos, identification of, with the Sanskrit sarvara, i. 494.
Keresâspa, i. 479.
Kereth, Carthage, i. 341 n.
Kerbura and Sabala, i. 493 n.
Kert, i. 341 n.
Keshub Chunder Sen, ii. 68, 104.
— his Lecture on Christ, ii. 82.
Keturi, i. 354.
Khai Khosru, ii. 142 n.
Khalif Almansûr, i. 514.
— his court, i. 532.
*Kh*ang-an, ii. 324.
Khan-sang-hui, ii. 322.
Khan-sang-kai, ii. 322.
*Kh*ardis, i. 327 n.
Khasgar, ii. 275.
Khasia language and the Munda dialects, ii. 33.
Khayuna dialects, ii. 34.
*Kh*î dynasty, ii. 328.
Khin, ii. 317, 324, 328.
Kh'in-king, ii. 318.
*Kh*ing-yüan tower, ii. 319.
Khi-nie, travels of, ii. 259.
Khor, khvar, i. 479.
Khosru Nushirvan, i. 550.
— his physician, i. 515.
Khoten, ii. 275.
Khrûma, Zend, = Sk. krûra, crudus, i. 226.
Khrûta, Zend, adj. of zim, winter, i. 226.
Khuddaka-nikâya Sûtra, ii. 322.
*Kh*û-Ying, king of, ii. 321.
Kielhorn, Dr., ii. 17, 30.
Ki-fâ-ling, ii. 327.
Ki-*kh*an, or *Ki*-tsin, ii. 322.
Ki-kung-ming, ii. 322.
Ki-kwo, ii. 329.
Ki-mang, ii. 325, 326 n.
King, ii. 160.
— the six Kings of the Confucians, ii. 329.
King-fa-hwa, ii. 323.
King, kingship, i. 340.
Kingdom, i. 39.
Kingsborough, Lord, ii. 381.
Kioto, ii. 369, 370.
Kisagotami, parable of, ii. 309–312.
*Ki*trâs, i. 439.
Klaproth, ii. 265.
Κλάζω = *κράζω* (clu), i. 195.
Κλέος = hruom, i. 195.
Κλέος (sravas, cluo), ii. 262.
Κλητά, i. 408 n.
Klotho, i. 463.
Knighton, History of Ceylon, ii. 254 n.
Knowledge for its own sake, danger of, ii. 4.
Koles, the, ii. 33.
— language of, Dravidian, ii. 33.
Koljush (Kaljush, Kolosh), ii. 398.
Ko-lo-keou-lo (Râhula), ii. 262.
Kolosh (Kaljush, Koljush), ii. 398.
Κώμη, i. 341.
Kophene, ii. 327.
Koran, i. 6, 7; ii. 114, 122, 131, 160, 438.
— spirit of the, ii. 52.
Körös, Csoma de, ii. 171–173.
Kosala, ii. 202.
Kô-sô-gai, ii. 341, 343.
Koti, ii. 350 n.
-κρατης = hard, i. 54.
Kratu, intellectual strength, i. 54.
Kratylos, Plato's, i. 29.
Krauñkâh, ii. 355 n.
Kravya-ad (*κρέας-ἐδω*), i. 346.
Κράζω = κλάζω (clu ?), i. 195.
Κρεωφάγοι, i. 346.
Kriemhilt, i. 415–418.
Κρῖμα = crimen, Graeco-Italic, according to Mommsen, i. 194.
Krishna, ii. 449, 473.
Kronike, dies, ii. 462.
Kronos, i. 311, 375 n.; ii. 240, 462.
Κρόνος, Κρονίων, Κρονίδης, i. 460, 461.
Κρύος, κρυμός, κρύσταλλος, i. 226.
Kshatriya, ii. 195, 262.
— Buddha by birth a, ii. 195.
— expressed in Chinese by Tchali, ii. 262.
Kshâyathîya, i. 340.
Kû, from Tien-*kû*, ii. 320 n.
Kuce, i. 344.
Kudic races, ii. 235 n.
Kû-fâ-hu, ii. 323.
Kû-fa-lan (Chû-falan), ii. 258, 319, 320.

Kû-fa-lan, translation of five Sûtras, ii. 340.
Kû-fo-soh (Ta-fo-sa), ii. 322.
Kuhn, i. 408 n., 410 n., 445–450.
Kukai, ii. 342.
Κυμαίους, ὅνος παρά, i. 513 n.
Kumâragîva, ii. 324, 325, 326, 327, 328, 342, 345, 347, 348.
Kûmârâ-ya-te, he behaves like a girl, i. 57.
Κύων, i. 344.
Kuravîka, ii. 355 n.
Κύριος ἀπάντων, ii. 242.
Kûrma (ground), i. 346.
Kû-shi-hsing (Chu-shuh-lan), ii. 323.
Kusinâgara, ii. 200, 203.
Kûlavagga, the, ii. 178.
Kutsa, ii. 142.
Ku-yung, ii. 322.
Kwang-ming, ii. 364 n.
Kwêty-s, i. 346.
Kyrene, myth of, i. 373.

L, whence derived, ii. 497, 498.
Λᾶας, i. 310.
Laban's gods, ii. 430.
Laboulaye, ii. 208.
— on Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 542.
Lacedogna, i. 498 n.
Lachesis, i. 463.
Λάχνος, λάχνη, i. 347.
Lacruma, i. 498 n.
Ladyship, i. 39.
La Fontaine's fables, i. 500.
— published 1668, i. 501.
— 2nd and 3rd editions, 1678, 1694, i. 501.
— fable of Perrette borrowed from the Pañkatantra, i. 504.
— and David Sahid of Ispahan's translation of Pilpay's fables, i. 524.
Lagu, law, i. 193.
Laïos, i. 476, 477.
Lakonic forms, i. 438.
Lalita-Vistara (Life of Buddha), i. 537; ii. 186, 191, 195, 200, 201, 258 n., 321, 323, 360 n.
Lama of Tibet, ii. 168.
Lana, i. 347.
Lan tower, ii. 319.
Landresse, M., ii. 260.
Landsmann, i. 212.
Language, former divisions of, ii. 130.
— a barrier, i. 255.
— families of, ii. 130.
— German, i. 367.
— great European languages, i. 256.
— monosyllabic, ii. 131.
— literary, i. 257, 258.
— science of, i. 12, 14.
— historical character of, destroyed by phonetic spelling, i. 274, 275.
— good ear for, i. 291.
— phonetics the foundation of the science of, i. 292.
— stratification of, i. 27.
— origin of, i. 31.
— universal, i. 31.
— English, 100,000 words in, i. 32.
— classification of, i. 34.
— made by convention, i. 38.
— three conditions of, i. 42.
— RR for 1st stage, i. 44.
— R + *ρ* for 2nd stage, i. 44.
— *rρ* for 3rd stage, i. 44.
— not highly developed, rich in words, poor in general expressions; *i.* 90.
— Science of, is it a natural or historical science, i. 199.
— human beings without, ii. 26.
— Veddahs said to have none, ii. 28.
— of the Koles and Gonds, ii. 33.
Languages, families of, i. 34.
— isolating, combinatory, and inflectional, i. 44.
— suffixing, prefixing, affixing, and infixing, i. 50.
Laniger, i. 485, 490.
Lankâvatâra, translated by Burnouf, ii. 284 n.
Λαός, i. 310, 477 n., 498.
Laotse, i. 7, 19; ii. 165, 257, 267.
— doctrines of, ii. 257 476.
— works of, ii. 267.
Λάφνη, i. 477 n.
Lapp legend of Day and Night, i. 612.

Laps, ii. 236 n.
La Rivey, his translations of fables, i. 523 n.
Las Casas, ii. 382.
Lassen, ii. 263.
Latin alphabet, i. 259.
— ablative in d, i. 230.
— locative in i, i. 230.
— Corssen's studies in, i. 125.
— text of the Milkmaid, i. 529 n.
— Church, feast-day of SS. Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 543.
— a language made up of Italic, Greek, and Pelasgic, i. 181.
— derived from Greek, i. 181.
— most closely united with Greek (Mommsen, Curtius), i. 191.
Latmian, i. 384, 386, 389.
Latmos, i. 386.
Latona, i. 386.
Laud, Archbishop, his support of Arabic, i. 119.
— his collection of Arabic MSS., i. 119.
Lautia, i. 498 n.
Lautverschiebung, i. 67 n., 68.
Law, repetition of, ii. 359, 360.
— no settled word for, in the Aryan languages, i. 196.
Laws of Manu, ii. 8, 126.
Le, words ending in, i. 279.
Leccardo, a gourmand, i. 56.
Lecomte, i. 9.
Lecture on Christ by Keshub Chunder Sen, ii. 82.
Lectureships for Hebrew, Arabic, and Chaldaic proposed in 1311, i. 118.
Legends and theories of the Buddhists (Sp. Hardy), ii. 175 n.
Leibniz, his views on language, i. 30.
— shows that Greek and Latin are not derived from Hebrew, i. 182.
Leiche, body, i. 131.
Leik, body, i. 131.
Leitner's, Dr., his labours in Dardistan, ii. 34.
Λελοιπ-έναι, i. 143.
Lengthening of the vowel in the subjunctive, i. 82.
Leo Allatius and the story of Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 521, 544.
Leo the Isaurian, i. 533.
Leontophontes, i. 498.
Leophontes (Λεωφόντης), i. 477 n., 498, 499.
Lepsius, i. 109.
Leto, i. 386.
Λητοῖ, vocative, i. 223.
Leukippides, i. 398.
Leumund, i. 195.
Levir, i. 330, 498 n.
Lex and law, i. 196.
Lhassa, ii. 264.
Lian-tsung, ii. 364 n.
Liang dynasty, ii 328, 329.
Liang, the northern, ii. 326.
Liberty, ii. 484.
— J. S. Mill on, ii. 482, 483, 529.
Libya, Kyrene in, i. 373.
Lich, lichgate, i. 131.
Lichadian islands, Lichas, i. 395.
Liebhart, mignon, i. 55 n.
Liebrecht, Dr. Felix, i. 530 n.
— on Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 542.
Life in Ancient India, Mrs. Spier, ii. 257.
Ligare, to bind, i. 196.
Lih, i. 497 n.
Ling, emperor, ii. 322.
Linguardo, a talker, i. 56.
Linguistic survey of India, ii. 32.
Lion's skin, the, Plato's Kratylos, i. 512 n.
Lip, to anoint, i. 497 n.
Λιπαρός, i. 218.
Λίσκος, i. 477 n., 498 n.
Litæ, i. 375.
Literary survey of India, the, ii. 30.
Lithuanian, i. 317, 344, 354.
Livre des Lumières, by David Sahid of Ispahan, i. 524.
— des Sauvages, ii. 372, 373, 374, 380.
Lo, the city of, ii. 319, 321, 323.
Local adverbs, as terminations of cases, i. 62.
Locative in i, as infinitive, i. 161.
— in sani, as infinitive, i. 166.
Locatives in ê, i. 232.

Locatives in t, i. 232.
— disappearance of, i. 233.
— old, i. 183.
Logos, i. 21.
Λόγος, i. 375.
— not lex, i. 196.
Loky-s, i. 343.
Loman, lomasya, i. 485.
Longobardi, Jesuit, i. 9.
Lord of the azure surface, ii. 393.
— of the green planisphere, ii. 393.
Lotus de la bonne Loi (Burnouf), ii. 222, 281, 362 n.
Lotus school, ii. 364.
Lourdement, heavily, i. 80.
Lu in Telugu, i. 48.
Lucar, i. 247.
Lucarium, i. 247.
Luceria, stone of, i. 246.
Lucina, Luna, i. 380; ii. 424.
Lucru, lucrum, i. 368.
Λυκηγενής, i. 378.
Λύκος, i. 344.
Lunar race, i. 384.
Lung-an period, ii. 327.
Luo, i. 498 n.
Lupus, i. 343.
Λῦσαι, infinitive, i. 163, 170.
Lyall, Mr., on Hindu Religion, ii. 88 et seq.
Lycia, Apollo falsely called son of (Λυκηγενής), i. 378.
Lymphis, i. 498 n.

MA, to fashion, i. 321.
Ma, tva, ta, i. 81.
MacLennan, J. F. (On Primitive Marriage), ii. 112 n.
Mad and tvad as bases Sanskrit, i. 248.
Madh, Zend, to cure, mederi, i. 227.
Madhu, i. 484.
Madhyamâgama-sûtras, ii. 327.
Mag, i. 368.
Magadha, ii. 179, 200, 202, 212.
Magath-s and Magvi, girl, i. 386.
Mag*ghi*ma Nikâya, ii. 327.
Magian, i. 22; (sacred books of the), ii. 132.
Magism, ii. 128.
Magus (son), i. 368.
Mahâbhârata, ii. 284.
Mahâbhâshya, new edition of, ii. 20.
— photo-lithograph of, ii. 30.
Mahânâma, compiler of the Mahâvansa, ii. 174, 182.
Mahâsanghika school, ii. 325.
Mâhasena, ii. 175 n., 182.
Mahâvansa, ii. 174, 255.
— history of Ceylon, ii. 174, 182.
Mahâyâna school, ii. 183, 358 n.
— in China, ii. 326, 328.
— in Japan, ii. 341.
— sûtra, ii. 362 n.
Mahî, i. 377.
Mahinda, son of Asoka, ii. 179, 180.
Mahommed, see Mohammed.
Mahrattas, the, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Μαι, for mama, i. 94.
Maid, i. 368.
Maigrot, i. 9.
Maitrî, love, all virtues spring from, ii. 209.
Makhshi, i. 344.
Μακρός, i. 371.
Makshikâ, i. 344.
Malabar, ii. 274.
Malay islands, language of the, ii. 131.
Malayo-Polynesian family, i. 34.
Malika (King), ii. 425.
Μάλλος, i. 490.
Maluna-s, i. 346.
Man, a suffix, i. 142.
Man, Zend, manere, i. 227.
Man, pursued by a unicorn, parable of, i. 536.
Manah, ii. 438.
Mandshu, ii. 175.
Mane, Sanskrit termination, i. 142.
Manes, i. 598.
Manetho, ii. 385.
Man-hâd, i. 54.
Mani, ii. 210.
Manichæans, ii. 210, 210 n.
Mankind, a new idea, i. 303.
Manners, i. 212.
Μάντις, i. 394.
Mantra (hymn), ii. 118.
Manu, i. 406 n.; ii. 126, 413.
— Satyavrata, ii. 449, 450.

Manu, laws of, ii. 8, 126.
— hymns of, ii. 137.
Manuel, Don Juan, his Conde Lucanor, i. 530.
Manum injectio, i. 246.
Manuscrit Pictographique Américain (by Abbé Domenech), ii. 372, 373.
Mar, mard, mardh, marg, mark, marp, smar, i. 91.
Mâra, ii. 194, 301.
— his interview with Buddha, ii. 77.
March, Dr., on Infinitive, i. 170.
Mardin, library of, i. 553.
Mare, i. 350.
Marei, i. 350.
Marnas (our Lord), ii. 425.
Marpessa, i. 374.
Marriage, ii. 112 n.
Mars (Marut), ii. 135, 139.
Martyrologium Romanum, the, i. 524 n.
Maru (desert), i. 351.
Maruts (storms), ii. 136, 143–145. 420, 421.
Masi, from ma-tvi, i. 94.
Massachusetts language, translation of the Bible in the, ii. 379.
Mâtâ, mâtâram, i. 222.
Mâtanga, ii. 257, 319.
Mâtar, mater, mathair, mati, i. 320–322.
Mâtarisvan, ii. 138, 240.
Match, i. 368.
Maudgalyâyana, disciple of Buddha, ii. 202.
Maurice's Lectures on the Religion of the World, ii. 129.
Mâyâ, ii. 459.
Mâyâ, Mâyâdêvî, Mâyavatî, ii. 195, 204.
Mayah, delight, i. 167.
Me, te, se, i. 249.
Meco, i. 86.
Med, ted, sed, i. 248.
Mederi, Zend, madh, i. 227.
Media, i. 480.
Median, i. 479, 480.
— dynasty, i. 480.
— king, i. 479.
Medicæ (Melicæ), i. 498 n.
Meditation, four stages of, ii. 252.
Mediterranean languages, i. 203.
Meditor, i. 498 n.
Megasthenes, Indica of, ii. 222 n.
Mel, mellis, i. 484.
Μέλαθρον, i. 227.
Μέλδετε = mrilata, i. 224.
Meleager, i. 414, 481.
Μελετάω, i. 477 n., 498 n.
Melin, i. 346.
Memnon, i. 390.
Μέμονα and μέμαμεν, i. 149.
Μεναι, infinitive, i. 141.
Mene (the moon), i. 378.
Menelaos, i. 308.
Menœtios, i. 495.
Merchant of Venice, story of the caskets, i. 536 n.
Mercury, ii. 210.
Mere, i. 351.
Meritod, i. 237.
Metals known to the ancient Aryans, i. 348.
Metaphysics, ii. 284.
— of Aristotle, i. 382 n.
— Abhidharma, Buddhist system (or Basket) of, ii. 284.
Metempsychosis, ii. 154, 187.
— not in the Veda, ii. 154.
Μήτηρ, i. 320, 380.
Metrodorus, i. 580.
Mexican, ii. 381.
— hieroglyphics, published by Lord Kingsborough, ii. 381.
— nature of the ancient — writing, ii. 385.
Mexico, i. 7; ii. 372, 380, 381, 384, 385, 387, 398.
Mi, si, ti, i. 81.
Micco, i. 344.
Might and main, i. 368.
Migration of Fables, i. 500.
Miklosich, his Slavonic studies, i. 125.
Milcom, ii. 406, 425.
Mile, family of, ii. 276.
Miletos, i. 374.
Milinda, Dialogue between — and Nâgasena, ii. 289.
Milkmaid, the fable of the, first appearance in English, i. 527.

Milkmaid, instead of the Brahman, i. 529.
Mill, John Stuart, ii. 2.
— on Liberty, ii. 479, 480, 482, 490.
— Dr., ii. 21–45.
Mill, mill-stone, i. 346.
Mille, i. 354.
Milman, Dean, ii. 286.
Minerva, ii. 139.
Mingti, Emperor, ii. 257, 258, 315, 316, 319.
— his dream, ii. 318.
Minnesänger, ii. 125.
Minute differences, many words for, in languages not highly developed, i. 90.
Minyans, the, i. 373.
Missionaries, Buddhist, ii. 175.
— Wesleyan, in Ceylon, ii. 175, 208.
Missionary and Non-missionary religions, ii. 48.
Missionary religions, ii. 48, 94.
— religion, what constitutes a, ii. 97.
— societies, claim on, for Oriental studies, ii. 23.
Missions, lecture on, ii. 46.
— should be more helped by the universities, ii. 23.
Μισθός, Goth. mizdô, i. 227.
Mitra, i. 371, 407; ii. 130–138, 153.
Mixed Sûtras, ii. 330.
— Vinaya, ii. 330.
Mizdha, Zend, *μισθός*, i. 227.
Mlekkha, ii. 95.
Mlyn, i. 346.
Mnaseas, i. 375 n.
Mnemosyne, i. 413.
Moallaka of Zoheyr, ii. 439.
Μόχθηρε, vocative, i. 222.
Modus infinitus, i. 140.
Mohammed, i. 6; ii. 163, 165, 433, 439.
— the Expected, ii. 205.
— successors of, ii. 163.
Mohammedan conquest of India, ii. 260.
— Paradise, ii. 291, 306.
Mohammedanism, countries professing, ii. 60.
Mo-ho-sang-*ki*-lin, the, ii. 325.
Moksha, deliverance of the soul from all pain and illusion, ii. 283, 303.
Mola, i. 346.
Mollis, i. 484.
Moloch, ii. 406, 425, 426.
Mommsen, ii. 132 n.
Momos, i. 369.
Monachism, Spence Hardy on Eastern, ii. 175.
Money, Babylonian division of, ii. 498.
Mongol words from Chinese, i. 73.
Mongolia, ii. 169, 234.
— Buddhist literature of, ii. 185.
— View of Nirvâna in, ii. 291.
Mongolian, ii. 173 (language, version of the Buddhist canon), ii. 175, 187, 264.
— and Chinese, i. 73.
— conquerors carry Buddhist fables to Russia, i. 511.
— translation of Kalila and Dimnah, i. 511 n.
Monosyllabic (Chinese) language, ii. 131, 261.
— form of roots, i. 90.
Monotheism, ii. 137, 439.
— Semitic, ii. 433.
Monotheistic stage, ii. 436.
Monstra, i. 37.
Monstrosities in language, i. 238.
Monstrum villosum, i. 491.
Moon, mythes and names of the, i. 378, 389; ii. 237.
— worshippers of the, ii. 406.
— Hottentot legend of, i. 610, 611.
More, i. 351.
Morgenstunde hat Gold im Munde, i. 509.
Moros, i. 369.
Morris, Dr., on Infinitive, i. 170.
Moses, i. 6, 19; ii. 400, 421, 432, 472.
— belief in immortality, ii. 455.
— God of, ii. 433.
Moslim, ii. 53.
Mother, i. 320, 340.
Mother-in-law, i. 330.
Mouse (mûsh, *μῦς*, mus, mûs, mysz), i. 344.

Movers, i. 6.
Mri, to die, i. 351.
Mridu, i. 484.
Mucha, i. 344.
Muir, Dr. J., Original Sanskrit Texts, published by, ii. 128 n., 150 n., 157 n.
Muir, i. 351.
Mukta (unconditioned), ii. 217.
Muli, i. 346.
Müller, Max, Essay on Comparative Mythology, ii. 242 n.
— Survey of Languages, ii. 236 n.
— Todtenbestattung bei den Brahmanen, i. 337 n.; ii. 141 n.
Müller, Otfried, on the Eumenides, i. 375 n.
— and Comparative Philology, i. 184.
Munda dialects and the Khasian language, ii. 33.
— and the Talaing of Pegu, ii. 33.
Mundas or Koles, dialects of, ii. 33.
Mung-sun, ii. 326.
Mus, mûs, i. 344.
Musca, i. 344.
Mûsh, mûshikâ (mus), i. 344.
Musur-dabaghan mountains, ii. 269.
Μυῖα, i. 344.
Μύλη, i. 346.
Mûs, i. 344.
Mysore, Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
Mysticism, Christian, of Eckhardt and Tauler, ii. 281.
Mystics, ii. 216, 217.
Myth, see Apollo, Daphne, Endymion, Herkules, Kephalos, Selene, etc.
Mythological (Mythopœic), i. 308.
Mythology, i. 185.
— of Central America, ii. 374.
— Aryan, i. 389.
— Comparative, i. 373; ii. 448, 455–467.
— Finnish, ii. 234 n.
— German (Teutonic), i. 373.
— Hindu, i. 381.
— Philosophy of (Schelling), i. 454, 579.
— of the Purânas, i. 381.
— of the Veda, i. 381.
Mythology exists now, i. 590.
— inevitable, i. 590.
— interest of, i. 578.
— not religion, i. 586.
— Greek, i. 586.
— is history turned into fable, i. 589.
— meaning of, i. 591.
— primitive, not necessarily religious, i. 596.
Mythopœic (or Mythological) Age, i. 308, 320.
Μῦθος, i. 375.

NABH, i. 347.
Nâbha, nâbhi, i. 347.
Naca, nacho, i. 351.
Nacheinander, i. 142.
Nachor, gods of, ii. 429.
Naçu, Zend, corpse, νέκυς i. 227.
Nadh, i. 347.
Nadî (river), ii. 136.
Nævius, language of, i. 239.
Nagarât, Sk., i. 231.
Nagare, Sk., i. 231.
Nâgas, ii. 296.
Nâgasena, Dialogue between Milinda and, ii. 289.
Nah (nabh, nadh), ii. 347.
Nâhan, i. 347.
Nahuas, migrations of the, ii. 391.
Nahuatl, ancient written language of Mexico, ii. 386.
Nak, night, i. 57.
Names, real cognomina, i. 565.
Nâmî, ii. 142.
Namuki, i. 499; ii. 142.
Nânak, founder of the Sikh religion, ii. 65.
— wisdom of, ii. 103.
— reforms of, ii. 65.
Nânandar, i. 330.
Nandas, Dynasty of the, ii. 123.
Nanking, ii. 327.
Nanyo, mountain in China, ii. 371.
Napât, i. 331.
— apâm nâpat = the sun, i. 385.
Naples, inflectional, i. 47.
Naples, Neapolis, i. 85.
Napo, Zend, A. S. nefa, i. 227.
Naptî, i. 331.

Nas (nos), i. 247.
Nas-a-ti, he perishes, i. 57.
Nâsa-ya-ti, he sends to destruction, i. 57.
Nas-i-da, i. 85.
Nasr Allah, his Persian translation of Kalila and Dimnah, i. 523.
Nâstika (Nihilist), ii. 285.
Nas-yá-te, he is destroyed, i. 57.
Nás-ya-ti, he perishes, i. 57.
National or traditional religions, i. 586.
— Period of Language, i. 311.
Nature, i. 457; ii. 218 (worship of).
Natus, i. 328.
Naus, nâvas, navis, i. 351.
Nava, i. 354.
Nâvan, i. 347.
Navarette, i. 9.
Nayuta, niyuta, ii. 350 n.
Neander, History of the Christian Church, ii. 280–282.
Neapolis, i. 47.
Néa-pólis, New Town, Neápolis, i. 85.
Nebo, ii. 406.
Nêcare, i. 57.
Necto, i. 347.
Nefa, A. S. nephew, i. 227.
Nefo, i. 331.
Νέκ-υς, νεκ-πός, i. 57.
Νέκυς, Goth. naus, i. 227.
Nemæan lion, i. 496.
Nemesis, i. 197, 369.
Neo, Νέω, i. 347.
Nepal, Buddhists of, ii. 170. 281.
— Buddhist priests sent to, ii. 51.
— Buddhist writings of, ii. 170, 287.
— Canonical books of, ii. 252 n.
— School of the Svâbhâvikas in, ii. 282.
— old MSS. of, ii. 338.
Nepalese alphabet, ii. 338, 339.
— MSS., ii. 345, 347.
Nepos, neptis, i. 331.
Nergal, ii. 406.
Neshâni, to lead, i. 143.
Νήθω, i. 347.
Neumann, C. F. (Catechism of the Shamans), ii. 285.
New Holland, ii. 151 n.
New Spain, native historians of, ii. 382.
Newton, combinatory, i. 47.
New-town, combinatory, i. 47.
Nibban, Nirvâna, ii. 458 n.
Nibelung, Nibelunge, i. 415, 418.
— written down at the end of the 12th century, i. 417.
Nibhaz, ii. 406.
Niebuhr, his views of the German professor's life, i. 179.
— on truthfulness, i. 202.
Niepan (Nirvâna), ii. 262.
Niflung, *see* Nibelung.
Nift, i. 331.
Nigban (Nirvâna), ii. 221.
Night, i. 375 n, 389, 445, 462.
— symbolic emblem of, ii. 377.
Nigidius Figulus, i. 221.
Nihilism, ii. 221, 245 (Buddhism not free from the charge of), ii. 285, 292, 295, 301, 306.
Nihilist, ii. 288.
Nihilistic philosophers, ii. 290.
Nihsreyas (summum bonum), ii. 283.
Nikâyas, the, ii. 177, 178.
Nineveh (monuments of), i. 6; ii. 113, 270.
Niobe, i. 602, 603.
Νίφ-α, acc., i. 227.
Nirvâna (dying), ii. 78, 203, 220, 222, 248–53, 263, 302, 364, 458 n.
— blowing out, extinction of light, ii. 283.
— the meaning of, ii. 280–291, 302, 303–305.
— four stages of meditation before, ii. 252.
— Sûtra, ii. 322, 323, 325, 326.
Nirvâta (calm, without wind), ii. 282 n.
Nirvritti (cessation, passiveness), ii. 282, 283, 303.
Nisroch (image of), i. 6; ii. 406.
Niun, i. 354.
Nix, Goth. snaiv-s, i. 227.
— nivis, i. 902.
Noah, ii. 450.
— and Saturn identical, ii. 442, 449.
Noblesse oblige, ii. 489.
Nomen, ii. 8. 420.

Nominalism, ii. 517.
Nominalists, ii. 516.
Νόμος from νέμειν, i. 197.
Non-missionary religions, ii. 48.
Nornes, the three, i. 462.
North Turanian Class, i. 72, 203.
Northern Buddhists, ii. 222.
Not and Nothing, ii. 307.
Nothing, ii. 221, 285, 306.
Nouns (ὀνόματα), i. 138.
Nous, i. 580.
Novem, i. 354.
Nox, from nak, i. 57.
Nṛikakshâs, i. 444.
Νύκτα (νύξ), i. 443.
Numa, i. 197.
Numen, ii. 420.
Numerals, i. 354.
Νυός, i. 330.
Nuti, author of Del governo de regni, i. 521.
Νύξ = nox, i. 57.
Nyx, i. 369, 371, 382.

O, different ways of representing the sound, i. 265.
Obligatio, binding, i. 196.
Octo, i. 354.
Oc-ulus, i. 134.
Oculus, i. 136.
Ôd and ô in Latin, i. 239.
— ablative in, i. 246.
Odin, ii. 165, 210, 242, 466, 467.
— Sigurd, descendant of, i. 415.
Odoacer, i. 418.
Odor, i. 498 n.
Ὀδυσσεύς, i. 477 n., 498 n.
Œdipus, i. 470, 476-78.
Ογδοος and ὀκτώ, i. 219.
Oi, i. 344.
— of locative becoming e, ei, i, i. 233.
Οἶδα, i. 367.
— and ἴσμεν, i. 149.
Oïgour Tatars, ii. 268.
Οἶκος, i. 339.
Οἴνη, i. 354.
Οἷος, one, i. 227.
Οἷς, i. 344.
Oizys, i. 369.
Okeanos, i. 369.
Okini, Kingdom of, ii. 270.
Ὀκτώ, i. 354.
Old ablatives, termination of, i. 154.
Old Testament stories and Brahminical legends, ii. 444.
— and New, borrowed from the Brahmans and Buddhists, ii. 445.
Oldfield, Mr., ii. 152 n.
Olfacit, i. 498 n.
Olympian gods, i. 371; ii. 135, 241.
— mythology, i. 310.
Ὀλυσσεύς, i. 477 n., 497 n.
Om, ii. 192.
Ὄμμα, i. 133.
Oneiroi, i. 369, 371.
Ono Imoko, ii. 370.
Ὄνομα and nomen, in Persian nâm, ii. 8.
Onondaga (Oswego River), ii. 374.
Ὄνος, i. 344.
Ὀφθαλμός, i. 134.
Ὄπ-ωπ-α, i. 134.
Oppert, Jul., theory of the invention of the cuneiform letters, ii. 270.
Oppidum, i. 345.
Optimus, optumus, optomos, i. 293.
— Maximus (Jupiter), ii. 424-426.
Oradlo, oralo, i. 345.
Orati, i. 345.
Orcus, i. 357.
Oreithyia, i. 299.
Orient und Occident, Benfey's, ii. 132 n.
Oriental chairs in English Universities, ii. 22.
— studies, their claims on support, ii. 22 seq.
Origin of language, i. 31.
— of Chinese, Chalmers', i. 72.
Origine des Romans, Traité de l', Huet, i. 513.
Ormazd, Ormuzd, ii. 133, 134.
Orotal, Orotulat, ii. 438.
Orpheus, i. 406, 435, 436, 470.
Orphic hymns, i. 375 n.
— line, i. 314.
Ὄρθος, i. 496.

Ὄρθριος, i. 496.
Ὀρθροβόας, cock, i. 496.
Ὀρθρογόη (swallow), i. 496.
Ὀρθροφῶν, ὀρθροφόντης, i. 497.
Orthros (ὄρθρος), i. 495, 497.
Ὡς, ωτος, derivative suffix, i. 440.
Oscan grammar, ii. 26.
Osilu, i. 344.
Ὄσσε, i. 136.
— for ὄκιε, i. 134.
Oswego River (Onondaga), ii. 374.
Οὐρανίη, ii. 438.
Οὐρανίων, i. 385.
Οὐρανός, Ouranos, i. 370, 371; ii. 237.
Ovis, ovjza, i. 344.
Ox, i. 344.
Oxford chair of Greek, i. 119.
— Hebrew, i. 119.
— Arabic, i. 119.
— Anglo-Saxon, i. 120.
— Sanskrit, i. 120.
— Latin, i. 120.
— Comparative Philology, i. 120.
— what it might do for Missions, ii. 23.
Ozi-s, i. 344.

P, in psalm, i. 279.
Pâ (to protect), root from which is derived father, i. 322.
Pachacamac, ii. 242.
Pada, i. 345.
Pada-cases, i. 102.
Padan Aram, ii. 430.
Padma, lotus, ii. 320.
Pâgas, i. 488.
Παγγενέτωρ, i. 394.
Pagodas built for Sanskrit MSS., ii. 337.
Pairidaêza in Zend, i. 130.
Paithya, Zend, sua-pte, i. 227.
Pâla, i. 322.
Pâ-laka, i. 322.
Pâli, ii. 174–180, 186, 254 n., 264.
— Buddhist canon in, size of, ii. 179 n.
— works of Ceylon, ii. 289.
— MSS. in China, ii. 332.
— precious things in, ii. 352 n.
— sacred language of Ceylon, ii. 174.
Pâli stories, i. 556.
Palm-leaves, Sanskrit MSS. on, ii. 336, 337.
— MSS. on, in the Temple of Hôri-uji, ii. 368–370.
Paltr, i. 328 n.
Pamir (plateau of), ii. 275.
Pan, i. 468, 469.
Pandit, the, ii. 20.
Pangenetor, i. 419.
Pânini, i. 128.
Paṅka, i. 354.
Paṅkatantra, the, or Pentateuch, or Pentamerone, i. 502, 503, 558.
— Perrette borrowed from, i. 504.
— southern text of, i. 503.
Panna, parna, ii. 336.
Pantha, i. 350.
Pantschatantra, the, i. 549.
Pao-khang, ii. 328.
Paotr (boy), paotrez (girl), i. 328 n.
Paper, papier, i. 320.
Papua, i. 23.
Par (root), i. 322.
Parable of the man pursued by the unicorn, i. 536.
Para-Brahma, the, ii. 64.
Paradise and Sanskrit paradesa, i. 129, 563.
Παρακολουθήματα, i. 139.
Pâramitâ, ii. 193.
Paraschematic growth of early themes, i. 98.
Parasu, i. 348.
Parcæ, the German (the three Nornes), i. 366, 462.
— Teutonic, i. 366.
Pardès in Hebrew, i. 130.
Παρέμφασις, i. 139.
Parens, i. 322.
Parental and controversial work of missionaries, ii. 61.
Paribhvê from paribhûs, i. 223.
Paris, Bibliothèque Nationale, MSS. in, ii. 344, 346.
— of Troy, i. 476, 478.
— University of, i. 118.
Parker, Abp., his collection of Anglo-Saxon MSS., i. 120.
Parler aux yeux, ii. 375.
Parlerai, je, i. 39.

Parnaya, ii. 142.
Parshâni, infinitive, to cross, i. 143.
Parsis do not proselytise, ii. 50.
— in Bombay, ii. 96.
— their wish to increase their sect, ii. 96.
Parsza-s, i. 344.
Past (Vurdh, *τὰ γεγονότα*), i. 366, 462.
Pasu, i. 344.
Pâtali-putra, visited by Ki-mang, ii. 325.
— council of, i. 222; ii 51.
Patar, pater, *πατήρ*, i. 320, 322, 380.
Πατήρ and *μήτηρ* in Persian, ii. 8.
Πατήρ, πατέρα = pitâ, pitáram, i. 222.
Paternal missionary, the, ii. 108.
Path, pathi, pâthas, i. 342, 350.
Pati (husband), patnî, i. 338, 339.
Πάτος, i. 342.
Pâtram, from pâ, i. 217.
Patta, pattra, ii. 336.
Patteson, Bishop, ii. 62.
— on missions, ii. 71.
— as an Oxford man, ii. 23.
Pattin, i. 339.
Paurusheyatva, human element in revelation, ii. 127.
Pausanias, i. 622 n.
Pavana (wind), i. 468.
Pâ-yu, i. 322.
Pecu, pecus, pecku, i. 325, 344.
Pecudium, peculiar, peculium, pecunia, i. 325.
Πέδον (pedum), i. 345.
Pegasos, i. 488.
Pehlevi or Huzvaresh, translation of fables, i. 515, 555, 556.
Peindre la parole, ii. 378.
Peiren, i. 482.
Πείθω, foedus, i. 148.
Peleiades of Dodona, ii. 424.
Πηλεῦ, vocative, i. 223.
Penki, i. 354.
Πέντε, i. 354.
Peretu, Zend, bridge, *portus*, i. 227.
Perfidus, faithless, i. 148.
Period, dialectical, i. 308–311.
— mythological (mythopœic), i. 308.
— national, i. 311.
Period, Rhematic, i. 307.
— of Adverbs, in the Aryan language, i. 104.
— of the formation of cases, in the Aryan language, i. 104.
Περκνός, i. 393 n.
Perkunas, ii. 132.
Per-nic-i-es, i. 61.
Perrette and the Pot au Lait, i. 500.
— story of, in Italian by Giulio Nuti, i. 567.
— in Latin, by Petrus Possinus, from Greek, i. 568.
— in Latin, by Johannes of Capua, from Hebrew, i. 569.
— in German, in Buch der alten Weisheit, translated from the Directorium, i. 570.
— in Spanish from Arabic (1289), i. 571.
— in Latin verse by Balbo from Arabic, i. 572.
— in Latin verse by Regnerius, i. 573.
— in Latin sermons, i. 574.
— in Spanish, El Conde Lucanor, i. 575.
— in French, by Bonaventure des Periers, i. 575.
Persephone, i. 375 n.
Perseus, i. 470, 476–478.
Persian and Arab stories brought back by the Crusaders, i. 511.
— form of the Kalilag and Dimnag, i. 559.
Peru (religion of), i. 7; ii. 240, 241, 381.
Perum, i. 345.
Peshawer (Pou-lou-cha-pou-lo), Purushapura, ii. 271, 274.
Pessum dare, i. 101.
Petora, i. 354.
Petzholdt, T. (das Buch der Wilden), ii. 372 n., 373.
Phaedros of Plato, i. 299, 300.
Phaedrus' fables, i. 501.
Φαεννά, i. 408 n.
Phainis, epigram on, i. 309.
Φαρέτρα, a quiver, i. 98.
Pharsalia of Lucan, ii. 132 n.

Φαῦλος, not faul, i. 71.
Φέρετρον, a bier, i. 98.
Φιάλη = πιϝάλη, i. 217.
Φιαρός = pîvara, i. 218.
— adjective of cream, i. 218.
Philological study of phonetics, i. 289, 294.
Philology, comparative, i. 458, 464.
— — and classical, i. 229, 250; ii. 130, 455, 467.
— the true Humanitas, ii. 293.
Philosophy, i. 578, 579.
— in Greece, i. 587.
— included in ancient religions, i. 588.
— a battle against mythology, i. 591.
Philotes, i. 369.
Φόβος, i. 447 n.
Phœbus, i. 378, 479, 606; Phoibos Apollon, i. 389.
Phôn, phontês (killer), i. 483.
Phonetic print, reading soon learnt, i. 273.
— helps reading from ordinary print, i. 273.
— spelling, i. 252, 257, 259, 283; destroys the historical character of a language, i. 274, 278, 281.
Phonetics, philological study of, i. 289, 294.
— dialectical study of, i. 290, 294.
— the foundation of the science of language, i. 292.
Phorkys, i. 375 n.
Φορός, tribute, i. 98.
Photolithograph of the Mahâbhâshya, ii. 30.
Φρατήρ, i. 320; φρατρία, i. 341.
Phrygians, Greek words formed from the, i. 31.
Φθονερός, φθόνος, i. 490 n.
Φύλακος and φύλαξ, i. 98.
Φύω, i. 366.
Pichardo's collection of American MSS., ii. 384.
Pictet, i. 351 n.
Pig, i. 344.
Pilpay, the Indian sage, i. 501, 524.
Pindar, i. 313; ii. 111, 242.
Πίσυρες, i. 354.
Pitâ, pitáram, i. 222.
Piṭakas, ii. 336.
— separate works in the, ii. 177.
Pitakattaya, ii. 180 n.
Pitár, pitri, i. 320, 321.
Pitman's alphabet, i. 267, 268, 295.
— system, ease of, i. 269–271.
Pitys (pine-tree), i. 468, 469.
Pîvaras, fat, i. 217.
Pîvarî, young girl, i. 218.
Piyadasi, ii. 256.
Πλακοῦ, vocative, i. 223.
Planets, worshippers of the, ii. 406.
— names of, in India, ii. 465.
Plato, i. 22, 300, 303, 313, 314, 449, 463, 582, 587; ii. 516, 518, 531.
— his view of Homer, i. 583.
— his views on language, i. 29.
— his Kratylos, i. 29.
Platonic ideas, i. 382 n.
Plautus, study of, i. 229.
— language of, i. 239.
— text of, i. 244.
Πλεῖστος, i. 227.
Plural in Bengali, i. 38.
— of the pronoun I, i. 94.
Pococke, Professor of Arabic, i. 120.
Pod, pons, pont, ponte, puente, i. 319.
Poena, punishment, i. 193.
Poetry, dramatic, elegiac, ii. 125.
— rhymed in England, ii. 125.
Ποι-μήν, i. 141.
Ποιμὴν λαῶν, i. 326.
Ποινή, poena, Graeco-Italic, according to Mommsen, i. 192.
Pole, i. 345.
Πόλις, i. 342.
Pol-lingo, i. 498 n.
Polo-naï (Benares), ii. 262.
Πῶλος, i. 344.
Πολυδευκής, i. 407.
Πολύς, πολλοί, i. 483.
Polynesia, Polynesian, i. 7, 25.
Polyonomy, i. 376.
Polysynthetic dialects of America, i. 34, 50.
Polytheism, i. 11 n.; ii. 137.
Pomtis, i. 354.
Πόνηρε, vocative, i. 222.

Pons (*see* pod), i. 319, 342, 350.
Ponti, i. 350.
Pontifex, i. 103.
Pontus, i. 350.
Popul Vuh (book of the people), ii. 372, 387, 389, 390.
Porc, πόρκος, porcus, i. 344.
Portus = Zend peretu, i. 227.
Poseidon, Ποσειδῶν, i. 461.
Πόσειδον, vocative, i. 222.
Πόσις, potens, potis (πότις), πότνια, i. 338.
Positive philosophy, i. 579.
Possinus, author of Latin translation of Stephanites and Ichnelates, i. 521.
Potthaka, pustaka, ii. 337.
Pott's article on Max Müller, i. 45 n.
Pou-lou-cha-pou-lo (Purushapura, Peshawer), ii. 271.
Power of combination, i. 85.
Praesidium, praesilium, praesul, i. 498 n.
Pragñâ-hridaya-sûtra, ii. 367.
Pragñâ-pâramitâ (perfect wisdom), ii. 284, 287, 288, 323.
Pragnâvarman, ii. 346.
Prâkrit, i. 428.
— influence on Sanskrit MSS., ii. 361 n.
Prasênagit, king of Kosala, ii. 202, 248.
Pratîyata, pratîyatha, ii. 360 n.
Pratyeka Buddha, ii. 192, 289.
Pravritti, ii. 382.
Prayers, Litæ, called daughters of Zeus, i. 376.
Predicative roots, i. 90.
Prefixing languages, i. 50.
Preller (Greek Mythology), i. 454.
Prémare, i. 9.
Present, aorist, and reduplicated perfect, as forming a skeleton conjugation, i. 97.
— (Verdhandi, τὰ ὄντα), i. 366, 462.
Priests, ii. 117.
— four classes of P. in India, ii. 117.
Primary verbal period of the Aryan language, i. 93.
Primeval revelation, ii. 238, 445.
Princes, disciples of Buddha, ii. 76.
Principles of Comparative Philology, Sayce's, i. 90.
Printing, its influence on spelling, i. 259, 260.
Prish, prishat, prishita, i. 392, 392 n., 393.
Prisni, i. 392 n.
Prithivî (prithvî), the Earth, broad, i. 337; ii. 136, 237.
Privatus, i. 357.
Prize fellowships, i. 115.
Προκάς, i. 392 n.
Prokris, i. 391, 394.
Prometheus, i. 492; ii. 243.
Pronoun I, plural of, i. 94.
Pronunciation changes, i. 260, 261.
— varies in different people, i. 284–286.
— varies at different times in the same person, i. 286.
— various P. of the same word, i. 296, 297.
Proselyte, meaning of, ii. 94.
Proselytes among the Jews, ii. 49.
Proselytising, etymological sense of, ii. 97.
Prosie, i. 344.
Protogeneia, i. 386, 387, 390.
Proverbs, translation of, ii. 379.
Πρόξ, πρώξ, i. 392, 393 n.
Prush, prushva, prushvâ (drop), i. 392, 392 n., 393.
Psalms and Vedic hymns contrasted, ii. 37.
Ψυχή, i. 594.
Psyche, i. 597.
Pû, i. 469.
Public opinion, ii. 490, 491.
Pullus, i. 344.
Pulu, i. 483.
Pupil, symbolic emblem of, i. 319.
Purâna, Mythology of the, i. 381.
Purebhattam, ii. 354 n.
Purgare, for purigare, i. 193.
Puri, i. 341.
Puru, i. 483.
Purûravas, i. 384, 405, 407–412, 421–428, 433, 435.
Pûrus and pûtus, i. 193.
Purusha, ii 288.

Purushapura (Pou-lou-cha-pou-lo), Peshawer ii. 271.
Purushottama, i. 424.
Pûrva, i. 483.
Putra, i. 328 n.
Pyrrha, πυῤῥά, i. 310, 374.
Pythagoras, i. 583, 588; ii. 210.
Pythis, i. 375.

QANHAR, i. 320.
Quatuor, i, 354.
Que, Latin, i. 135.
Queen, quinô, i. 340.
Quiché, ii. 372 n., 387, 388-392, 397, 399-401.
— account of creation, ii. 393-395, 396, 397.
Quinque, i. 354.
Quintilian on final d in Latin, i. 238.
Quirn, qvairnus, i. 346.

Rρ, or *ρr* or *ρrρ*, third stage of language, i. 44.
ρ+R, second stage of language, i. 44.
ρ+R+ρ, second stage of language, i. 44.
R+ρ, second stage of language, i. 44.
R. R, first stage of language, i. 44.
Rabelais, his Gargantua. i. 526.
Rabenschlacht, i. 418.
Races, without any religious ideas, ii. 26.
Râçta, Zend, rectus, i. 228.
Râg, i. 340.
Râgagriha, ii. 200, 201, 202, 342, 343, 346.
Râgaratnâkarî, ii. 174.
Ragata, i. 348.
Ragatam, i. 226.
Râgâvali, ii. 174.
Râga-ya-te, he behaves like a king, i. 57.
Rahat, ii. 286, 289.
Râhula (Ko-lo-keou-lo), son of Buddha, ii. 262.
Raimond de Beziers, his transl. of Kalila and Dimnah into Latin verse, i. 525.
Râjanîkânta's Life of Jajadeva, ii. 202.
Rajendralal Mittra, Babu, editor of the Lalita-Vistara, ii. 19, 30, 186, 191, 192.
Rajmahal Koles, ii. 33.
Rajnarain Bose on the Brahma-Samâj, ii. 78.
Rak, i. 347.
Ram (exalted), ii. 425.
Ram Dass Sen, ii. 20.
Ram Mohun Roy and the Brahma-Samâj, ii. 42, 66, 103.
— unable to read his own sacred books, ii. 43.
Râmânanda, 14th century, the reformer, ii. 65.
— sect of, ii. 103.
Râmânuga, 12th century, the reformer, ii. 64.
— sect of, ii. 103.
Ranchi, Missionaries at, ii. 33.
Rangpur Dialect, ii. 99 n.
Rap, i. 408 n.
— Zend, =repere, i. 228.
Ῥάπτω, i. 147.
Rastell's translation of the Dialogus creaturarum, i. 527.
Rat, Quiché, tale of the, ii. 396.
Ratha, i. 345.
Rathakaras, the, ii. 99.
Rational knowledge of Grammar, i. 138.
Raumer, studies of, i. 70.
Rava (ru), i. 407.
Râvana, i. 416.
Ravenna, battle of, i. 418.
Ravi, i. 408.
Raw, =hrâo, i. 226.
Rawlinson, Sir H., i. 109.
Rawlinson, founder of the Oxford Chair of Anglo-Saxon, i. 120.
Reading and writing, time taken in learning, i. 263.
Realism, ii. 517.
Realists, ii. 516.
Records of Buddhist students, ii. 330.
Rectus, Zend, râçta, i. 228.
Red (Sk. harit, fulvus), i. 66, 408.
Red Indians, Red Skins, of North America, ii. 373-375, 381, 386.

Red Riding Hood, i. 564.
Redivia, reduo, reluvium, i. 498 n.
Rēgī-fugium, not regis-fugium, i. 102.
Regin, cunning, i. 54.
Regin-hart, fox, i. 54.
Reich, reiks, i. 340.
Reinaert, fox. Low German, i. 55.
Reinaud, ii. 260.
Reindeer Clan, ii. 376.
Religion, Aryan, i. 7, 586.
— coincidences between Jewish and Pagan, ii. 442.
— Christian, i. 587.
— Greek, i. 587.
— All important — sprung up in the East, ii. 164, 292.
— classification of, ii. 131, 132.
— of Mexico, Peru, i. 7.
— Science of, i. 5, 12, 14 : ii. 439.
Religions, national or traditional, i. 586.
— individual or statutable, i. 586.
— historical, Semitic, and Aryan, ii. 47.
— as shown in their Scriptures, ii. 90.
— Missionary, ii. 94.
— inferences as to, drawn from their Scriptures qualified by actual observation, ii. 90.
— all Oriental, ii. 13.
Religious dogmas, ii. 508-510.
— ideas, races without, ii. 26.
Remus, i. 478.
Remusat, Abel, ii. 260, 265, 315, 477, (first Chinese scholar of his time).
Renan, Ernest, ii. 337-341. 402-411, 421, 431, 432,
— on Kalilag and Damnag, i. 548.
Repere, = Zend rap, i. 228.
Reports sent to the Colonial Office on native races, ii. 25.
Resemblance between Sanskrit, Greek and Latin, Sir W. Jones on the, ii. 8.
Resurrection, belief in. ii. 155.
Revelation, idea of, ii. 126, 217, 434, 435.
— primeval, ii. 445.
Rex, i 340.
Rhea, i. 461.
Rhematic Period, i. 307.
Rhyme, ii. 125.
Ri, i. 340.
Ribhu, i. 435, 436, 492.
Ribhus, the Vedic gods, ii. 99.
Rich, Rig, ii. 118.
Richard, i. 55.
Ridu-pâ, i. 484.
Right, Goth. raiht, i. 228.
Rigisvan, ii. 142.
Rig-veda, i. 1, 3, 390; ii. 109, 110, 113, 115, 117, 122, 157.
— quoted in support of widow burning, i. 334-6.
— only real Veda. ii. 117.
— Veda of (119, 1028) hymns, praise, ii. 119, 439.
— contains 10,402 to 10.622 verses, 153,826 words, 432,000 syllables, ii. 119.
— age of the, ii. 120-122.
— Sun in the, i. 438-441.
— the Commentary of Sâyanâkârya, ii. 36.
Rik-ard, a rich fellow, i. 55.
Riksha, i. 343.
Rimmon, ii. 406, 425.
Riogh, i. 340.
Rishi, ii. 126, 144 n., 157.
Ritschl, works on Latin, i. 230, 244, 248.
River myths, i. 374.
Road, names for, i. 342.
Robinson, Sir Hercules, ii. 28.
Rohita, i. 441, 442.
Rojas, Don Juan de, ii. 389.
Româd, Româ, i. 233.
Romai, Romæ, i. 233.
— Româ, Romæ, i. 223.
Roman religion in the second Century, Gibbon on the, ii. 102.
Romance dialects, i. 316-320.
— nations, ii. 428.
Romasa, i. 405.
Romulus, i. 476, 478.
Root Period, of the undivided Aryan language, i. 87.
Root *vis*, to settle down, i. 80.
Roots, i. 602.
— *Ak*, i. 134.

Roots, Ûh, i. 135.
— predicative and demonstrative, i. 90.
— as postulates, or as actual words, i. 88.
— not mere abstractions, i. 88.
— monosyllabic forms of, i. 90.
Rosen, Dr. Friedrich, ii. 21, 43, 114.
Rota, i. 345, 601.
Roth, Prof., i. 392 n.
Rothkäppchen and Ushas, i. 564.
Ru, ruber, rudhira, rufus, rôt, i. 408.
Ru, to cry, i. 407.
Rudra, Rudras, i. 11, 378; ii. 143, 145, (hymn to the Maruts).
Rûpa (form), Rupee, rûpya (silver), i. 487.
Rure, for rurid and ruri, i. 231.
Rusat, i. 488.
Russia, Buddhism in, ii. 233.
Rustem, i. 415.

S, as original termination of feminine bases in â, i. 155.
S, final in Latin, i. 234.
S in island, i. 277.
*S*abala, i. 494.
*S*abara, i. 499 n.
Sabbath, sabbata, ii. 461.
— Josephus on the, ii. 461 n.
Sacred Anthology, Conway's, ii. 14.
— Books of Mankind, translation of, ii. 6.
— cord of the Brahmans, ii. 69.
— poetry of ancient religions, ii. 37.
Saddharma-pu*n*darîka, ii. 323, 324, 326, 342.
Sâgal, city of, ii. 289.
Sahâmpati, ii. 350.
Sahasra (haza*n*ra), sahasram, i. 354.
σαι, termination of infinitive, i. 162.
— termination of 2nd pers. sing. imper. 1 aor. middle, i. 162.
Sai from tva tvi, i. 94.
Saihs, i. 354.
Σακέσ-παλος, i. 102.
*S*âkhâ, different texts, ii. 124.
*S*akra, ii. 350.
*S*akuntala, Kâlidâsa's play of, ii. 7.
Sâkya, ii. 165, 214.
Sâkya clan, family of the, ii. 195, 202, 203.
— Muni (Buddha), ii. 204, 361.
Sal, salila, i. 350.
Salâm, peace, ii. 53 n.
Salamanca, University of, i. 118.
Samâdhi, ii. 193.
*S*ama*n*a, i. 17.
Samarkand, ii. 271.
Samatitthika, ii. 353 n.
Sâma-veda (to be sung), ii. 116.
Sâma-veda-sanhitâ, ii. 117, 124.
*S*ambara, i. 499 n.
Sampradâna, dative, i. 159.
— its meaning, i. 159.
— its use, i. 159.
Sanchi, sculptures at, ii. 32.
Sang, Buddhist monks in China, ii. 322.
Sanghadeva, ii. 327.
Sanghika, ii. 325.
Sanhitâ, collection of hymns, ii. 118, 124.
Sani, sanáye, sanim, i. 164.
Sânkhya philosophy, i. 8; ii. 204, 214, 218, 245, 253, 283, 288.
— sûtras, ii. 214.
Sanna, or Çhandaka, Buddha's driver, i. 541.
Sanskrit Mythology, i. 449.
— MSS. in China, ii. 314, 315, 333, 337, 338.
— MSS. always modern, ii. 334.
— MSS., old, in China, ii. 331.
— MSS. oldest in existence, ii. 371.
— MSS. written on perishable materials, ii. 334–336.
— Numerals, i. 354.
— Chinese translations of Sk. texts, ii. 314, 330.
— chair of, i. 120.
— studied by Sassetti, i. 122.
— studied by Cœurdoux, le Père, i. 122.
— studied by Frederic Schlegel, i. 123.
— studied in Japan, ii. 340 342.
— texts in Japan, ii. 342, 347, 367.
— only sound foundation of Comparative Philology, i. 127.

Sanskrit, Gerundive participle in, i. 60.
— the augment in, i. 82.
— fables in, i. 501, 555.
— and Zend, close union of, i. 188, 190.
— most closely united with Zend (Burnouf), i. 191.
— Dictionary by Târânâtha, ii. 20.
— scholars, old school of, ii. 20.
— discovery of, i. 121.
Santa Cruz del Quiché, ii. 387, 401.
Santo-Tomas Chichicastenango, ii. 387.
San Vicente de Chiapas y Guatemala, ii. 387.
Sapta, i. 354.
Sara, i. 350.
Saramâ, Sârameya, i. 347 n., 494, 496, 567.
Saranyû, the dawn, i. 461, 492, 622.
Sarbara, i. 499 n.
Sârdha, ii. 348.
Sarff, i. 343.
Sâriputra, ii. 202, 346, 351.
Sarkara, i. 563.
Sarpa, i. 343; ii. 296.
Sarvara, sarvarî (night), sarvarika, i. 493, 494.
Sarvâstivâda-vinaya, ii. 327.
Sarve, i. 483.
Sassetti, Filippo, i. 122.
Sâstras, ii. 330.
Satam, i. 354.
Sathoual, ii. 375.
Satnâmis, sect of the, ii. 106.
Saturday, ii. 463.
Saturn and Noah identical, ii. 442.
Saturnus, ii. 449.
Satyasiddha-vyâkarana sâstra, ii. 325, 326.
Saunaka, ii. 123.
Sâvara (savara), i. 494.
Savitar (Savitri), i. 445, 446; ii. 237.
Saw, Sage, and Säge, i. 196.
Saxon, (Old), i. 345.
Sâyana-Âkârya, ii. 14, 15.
Sâyana's Commentary, ii. 36.
Sayce, Principles of Comparative Philology, i. 90.
Scandinavian Edda, i. 415.
Schelling, i. 454.
Scherer's History of the German Language, i. 68 n.
Scherzer, Dr., his copies of Ximenes' works, ii. 388.
Schism in the Brahma-Samâj, ii. 67, 78.
Schlegel, his knowledge of Sanskrit, i. 123.
Schleicher, his Slavonic studies, i. 125.
Schlüter, Dr. C. B., ii. 15 n.
Schmidt, J. J., ii. 173.
Schoolcraft, ii. 380.
Schuld, schuldig, i. 366, 367.
Science of Language, a natural or historical science, i. 199.
— Benfey's history of the, ii. 9.
— of Man, ii. 6.
— of Religion, i. 5, 12, 14, 19.
Scipionic inscriptions, i. 245.
Scythian names, Aryan character in, i. 215.
Sea, i. 350, 351.
Second period of Aryan language, derivative roots, i. 92.
Secretary of State for India in Council, ii. 36.
Sedere, i. 498 n.
Selene (mythe of, and Endymion), i. 378, 384-387, 467, 468; ii. 424, 606.
Seleucus Nicator, ii. 123, 211.
Self-government, ii. 489.
Self, subjective, absolute, ii. 244, 245.
Selva, i. 330.
Semitic character, ii. 404.
— family, i. 34, 203; ii. 405, 406.
— languages, ii. 131, 402, 417, 418, 427, 435, 441.
— monotheism, ii. 407, 410, 412, 426, 432, 433.
— names, ii. 426.
— religions, true historical, ii. 47.
Senatus consultum de Bacchanalibus, i. 240.
Sendebar, or Bidpay, i. 522.

Sensualistic philosophy, i. 578.
Septem, i. 354.
Septuagint (chronology of the), ii. 120, 180 n., 181.
Septyni, i. 354.
Sergius, a Christian, at Khalif Almansur's court, i. 532.
Serosh, i. 443 n.
Serpens, serpent, i. 343 ; ii. 396.
Serpent, i. 566.
Sestra, i. 320.
Seven Wise Masters, i. 531.
— stages of the undivided Aryan language, i. 86.
Seventh period of the Aryan language, i. 104.
Sew, to, i. 347.
Sex, i. 354.
Shades of the departed, i. 598.
Shahar (dawn), ii. 423.
Shall, should, skal, skald, skuld, skulda, soll, i. 366, 367.
Shamans, i. 17 ; ii. 111, 236 n., 247, 285 n., 319, 321, 322, 323, 324, 325, 327.
Shamefast, shamefaced, i. 55.
Shankur Pandurang Pandit, ii. 20.
Shash, i. 154.
Sheep, i. 344.
Shem, ii. 407, 424.
Shemite, ii. 427.
Shet, ii. 425.
Shih, from Shih-kya, *Śâkya*, ii. 320 n.
Shih-*ku* Sûtra, ii. 320, 321.
Shih-leh, the rebel, ii. 324.
Shinâ dialects, ii. 34.
Shindo, Kando, Tindo, ii. 317 n.
Shingon, sect in Japan, ii. 342.
Shinnyo, visits India, ii. 342.
Shin-shin, sect of Buddhists, ii. 339.
Shinto religion in Japan, ii. 339.
Ship, in ladyship, i. 39.
Shishac, same as *Śâkya*, ii. 165, 210.
Shi-ti-king-lun, ii. 328.
Shito, i. 346.
Shradh, ancestral sacrifices, ii. 80.
Shû, ii. 324.
Siam, ii. 131, 176, 236.
— translation of the Tripiṭaka in, ii. 179 n.
Sibac, ii. 395.
Sibun, i. 354.
Siddha, ii. 205.
Siddhârtha, name of Buddha in his childhood, ii. 195, 204.
Siegbert, i. 418.
Sîfrit, i. 414, 415, 418.
Sigurd, i. 414, 416-418, 479; ii. 242.
Sikh religion, ii. 65.
Simple roots, first period of Aryan language, i. 92.
Sin, consciousness, forgiveness of, ii. 150.
Sinaïtic inscriptions, ii. 438.
Singhalese, ii. 174, 186, 289.
— corruption of Sanskrit, ii. 28.
— translation of the Mahâvansa, ii. 175 n.
Singular and plural, words with different meanings in, ii. 238.
Sister, svasar, *qanhar*, soror, svistar, sestra, siur, Weird-sisters, i. 320, 462.
Sister-in-law, i. 330.
Sîtâ, i. 416.
Σῖτος, i. 346.
Siuja, i. 347.
Siur, i. 320.
Siu-to-lo (*Śûdra*), ii. 262.
Siv, siuv-u, siwu, i. 347.
Śiva (Rudra), i. 11, 312, 381.
— worship of, ii. 101.
Sixth period of the Aryan language, i. 104.
Si-yu-ki, ii. 274.
Skotos, the Erinyes daughters of, i. 375 n., 463.
Skuld (Future), i. 366, 462.
Slavonic, studied by Miklosich and Schleicher, i. 125.
— is most closely united with German (Grimm, Schleicher), i. 191.
Smriti, tradition, ii. 126.
Snocha, i. 330.
Snu, i. 602.
Snûr, snushâ, i. 330.
Sobaka, i. 344.
Socer, socrus, i. 330.
Société de Linguistique, i. 31.

Society, influence of, ii. 483, 484, 491, 492.
Socin, Dr. Albert, i. 552.
Sokrates, i. 21, 580; ii. 531.
— and Aesop's fables, i. 500.
Sôl, i. 385, 603.
Solar (race), (heroes), (deity), (myth), i. 384, 400, 403, 414.
Solium, i. 498 n.
Soma (Homa), (prayer to), ii. 137, 156, 237, 441, 488, 490.
Son, i. 329; ii. 496.
Son-in-law, i. 330.
Sono (I am), sum (sunt), sunt, soy, son, suis (I am), sum, i. 316, 317.
Soror, i. 320.
Σώτερ, vocative, i. 222.
Sounds, difficulty of exactly representing in spelling, i. 287.
South-Turanian class, i. 72.
Southern division of the Aryans, i. 188.
Sow, sû, ὗς, sus, sû, svinia, suig, i. 344.
Spa, σπάκα, i. 344.
Spanish translation of Calila and Dimnah, i. 525, 556, 559.
Species and genus, ii. 512–516.
Speir, Mrs., ii. 257.
Spelling in English, i. 252, 253, 259, 260.
— freedom in, i. 259.
— corrupt and effete, i. 261.
— reform of old, i. 254, 258.
— slow changes in, i. 238.
— influenced by printing, i. 259.
— a national misfortune, i. 262.
— failures in, i. 264.
— actual mischief of present, i. 264.
— Jones' system of, i. 270.
— committee in Germany, i. 270.
— historical, often misleading, i. 277.
— altered to make a word etymological, i. 277, 278.
— historical and etymological, i. 279, 280, 281.
Spencer's First Principles, ii. 26.
Spencerian Savages, ii. 26.
Spider (ûrṇanâbha, ἀράχνη, aranea), i. 347.
Spiegel, ii. 142 n.
Spiritus lenis, i. 393 n.
Spiro, i. 594.
Spuo, i. 594.
Śraddhâ, ii. 151.
Śrâmaṇa, ii. 194, 236 n., 262 (Chamen).
Śrâvaka, ii. 192.
Śravas (κλέος, cluo), ii. 262.
Śrâvastî, ii. 193, 202, 262 (capital of Kośala), ii. 346, 348.
Śrâv-ayâ-mas, we make hear, i. 195.
Śrî, ii. 449.
Śromata, from root śru, i. 195.
Śrotriya (*Śrauti*), *Śri*, ii. 449.
Śruti, Revelation, ii. 126.
Sts. Barlaam and Josaphat, i. 543, 544 n.
— their feast-days in the Eastern and Latin Churches, i. 543.
St. Augustine, i. 4, 22.
— Cyprian, i. 22.
— Hilaire, Barthélemy (Le Bouddha et sa Religion), ii. 162, 166, 167, 186, 187, 189–191, 194, 203, 213, 221, 252.
— Martin, M. L. Vivien de, ii. 200 n., 274.
— John of Damascus, i. 532.
— Josaphat is Buddha, i. 545.
— Thomas, Christians of, i. 551.
— Varlaam, i. 544 n.
Stahl, i. 594 n.
Stairo, stairî, στεῖρα (sterilis), i. 344.
Stan-gyour, ii. 236 n.
Stare, i. 366.
Steer, sthûra, staora, ταῦρος, taurus, stiur, taura-s, tour, tor, i. 344.
Stephanites and Ichnelates, i. 520, 556.
— Italian translation of, i. 521.
— Latin translation of, i. 521.
Stevenson, ii. 21.
Sthâ, to reveal by gestures, i. 159.
Stokes, Whitley, ii. 30.
Στόμα = Zend çtaman, i. 228.
Storm gods, invocations of the, ii. 38.
Storms (Maruts), ii. 136, 143.
Strangford, Lord, i. 109.
Strassburg, Lecture at, i. 176.

Stratification of Language, i. 27.
Stromata of Clemens, i. 21 n.; ii. 222 n., 428 n.
Stud-i-um, i. 61.
Stushé and stushe, i. 162, 170.
Styx, i. 375 n.
Su, to beget, root of sûnu, sunus, sutâ, i. 328 n.
Suapte, i. 227.
Subjunctive, lengthening of vowel in, i. 82.
Succoth-benoth, ii. 406.
*Ś*uddhodana, ii. 203 n., 235, 288.
*Ś*ûdra (Siu-to-lo), i. 489; ii. 255, 262.
— opposed to Arya, i. 209.
Suffixes, Aryan, i. 142.
Suffixing languages, i. 50.
Sufi, Sufiism, ii. 163.
Sugar, i. 563, 564.
Sui chronicles, ii. 316, 317, 320.
— dynasty, ii. 316, 329, 370.
Suiko, the Empress, ii. 370.
Sukhavatî, the happy country, ii. 351, 358, 362 n., 367.
Sukhavatîvyûha, ii. 322, 341, 342, 363 n.
— Chinese translations of, ii. 343.
— existing MSS. of, ii. 343, 344, 346.
— English translation, ii. 348–362.
Suki, i. 488.
Sum (I am), asmi, esmi, ahmi, ἐμμί, yesmĕ, im, em; *see* sono (I am), i. 316, 317.
Σύμβαμα and κατηγόρημα, i. 139.
Sun, names of the, Sûrya, Savitri, Vishnu, Mitra, Eros, Urvasî, Arvat, i. 390, 391, 441; ii. 237.
— Esquimaux legend of, i. 609, 610.
— religion of the, ii. 239.
— worshippers of the, ii. 406.
— feelings awakened by the, i. 599.
Sunaḥsepa, story of, ii. 474.
Sunday, ii. 463.
Sung dynasty, ii. 343.
Sung-yun, travels of, ii. 259, 328.
Sun-*kh*üan, king of Wû, ii. 322.
Sûnu, sunus, i. 328 n.; ii. 496.
*Ś*ûnyatâ, annihilation, ii. 282.
*Ś*ûnyavadin, ii. 285.
Śuprabuddha, ii. 195.
Surendra, ii. 346.
Śûrya (sun), i. 378, 604; ii. 136, 237.
Susravas, ii. 142.
Sutâ, i. 324.
Sûtra (Aphorism), ii. 118, 121, 123, 125, 160, 319, 319 n., 320, 321, 322, 323, 325, 329, 342, 363.
— of the 42 sections, ii. 319, 320.
— Shih-*k*u, ii. 320.
— three divisions of in China, ii. 330.
— period, ii. 123, 211.
— of Kapila, ii. 215.
— discourses of Buddha, ii. 177, 284, 288, 302, 330.
— mixed, ii. 330.
— compiled by Ânanda, ii. 284.
— of the Jains, ii. 160.
Sutta pitaka, ii. 177.
Suttee (widow burning), i. 334, 338 n.
Suvaṇṇapaṭṭa, ii. 336.
Suvarṇa-prabhâsa Sûtra, ii. 323, 326.
Svabhâvât, by itself, ii. 282.
Svâbhâvika, ii. 282.
Svaihra, svaihrô, i. 330.
Svaṅka, i. 439.
Svar, or sval, i. 603.
Svârâ (Hêrâ), i. 489.
Svasar, i. 320, 324.
Svasṛi, sister, i. 78 n.
Svasru, svasura, i. 320.
Svasti, joy, happiness, i. 324.
Svayambhu, self-existing, ii. 413.
Svekr, svekrvj, i. 330.
Sveta, i. 346, 406 n.
Swabian dynasty, ii. 125.
Swanhild, i. 419.
Sweden (Buddhism in), ii. 233.
Sweetard, i. 55 n.
Sweet-ard, sweet-heart, i. 55.
Sweet-heart, from Sweet-ard, i. 55.
Sweeting, i. 55 n.
Swift, i. 398.
Syâla, i. 330, 332.
*Sy*âma, i. 493 n.
*Sy*âva, i. 442.
Symeon, son of Seth, his Greek translation of fables, i. 520.
Syncretistic period in Comparative Philology, i. 124.

Synonymes, synonomy, i. 376, 377.
Syriac translation of the fables, discovered by Benfey, i. 518 n., 548, 555.
— text, and German translation by Bickell, i. 555, 556.
Syrinx, i. 468.
Szeszi, i. 354.
Szimtas, i. 354.
Szu, i. 344.

T, final in il aime-t, i. 236.
T, changed into Latin *d*, i. 153.
Taaroa, chief deity of Tahiti, ii. 455. 456.
Tacitus, ii. 18.
Tad, tod, atid, imperatives in, i. 246.
Tad, final dental of, i. 152.
Tad-îya, i. 153.
Tad-vân, i. 153.
Tagore, Debendranâth, ii. 67, 104.
Tagr, i. 498 n.
Tahitian tradition of creation, ii. 455.
Taihun, taihun taihund, i. 354.
Tak, i. 322.
Takht-i-bahai hills, the, ii. 34.
Takshan, i. 341.
Taḷa or Daḷa, a host, i. 39 n.
Talaing of Pegu, and the Munda dialects, ii. 33.
Ταλάω, τλῆναι = talio, Græco-Italic, according to Mommsen, i. 192.
Talio, Græco-Italic, i. 192.
Tamil (conquerors of Ceylon), ii. 176; Tamulian people, i. 484.
— translation of the Pañtatantra, i. 503.
Tan from *tans* (Sk.), i. 237.
Tanjur (Bstan-hgyur, Tan-gyur), ii. 171.
— its divisions, ii. 172.
Tantra, ii. 236 n.
Tâo-an, ii. 324.
Taoist, ii. 160.
Tao-te-King, ii. 160, 476, 477.
Tar, tra, tram, tras, trak, trap, i. 91.
— derivative suffix, i. 322.
Tara and τερο, i. 189.
Târânâthâ's Sanskrit Dictionary, ii. 20.
Τάρασσα, ταράσσειν, i. 350.
Tartak, ii. 406.
Tasmania, Aborigines of, i. 601.
Tat, Sanskrit, i. 152.
Tatar-Khan, ii. 269.
Tathâgata, ii. 78.
Tathâgatas, ii. 357–361.
— of the ten quarters, ii. 360 n.
Tauler, ii. 281, 306.
Taurus, ταῦρος, i. 344, *see* steer.
Tâ-yeh period, ii. 329.
Tcha-li (Kshattriya), ii. 262.
Tecum, ii. 389.
Telugu translation of the Pañtantra, i. 503.
Tenere, auxiliary verb in Spanish, i. 366.
Τενῶ, τενεσίω, i. 60 n.
Teo Amoxtli, sacred book of the Toltecs, ii. 390.
Tepepul, ii. 389.
Terah, descendants of, ii. 406, 430.
Teraphim, ii. 430.
Terminations of the future, i. 60.
— of cases, were local adverbs, i. 62.
— of the medium, i. 95.
Tesoro de las Lenguas Quiché, Cakchiquel y Tzutohil, ii. 387.
Testéra, ii. 380.
Τέτληκα and τέτλαμεν, i. 148.
Τέτταρες, i. 354.
Tetzcuco, royal family of, ii. 385.
Teutonic languages, Jacob Grimm's study of, i. 125.
— gods, ii. 131.
— mythology, i. 5; ii. 242.
Thai-khang period, ii. 323.
Thai-shi period, ii. 323.
Thai-wu, ii. 327.
Θάλασσα, i. 350.
Thales, i. 588.
Thanatos, i. 369.
Thang, dynasty of, ii. 323, 343.
Θάρασσα, i. 350.
Thas, from tva-tvi, i. 94.
Thata, Gothic, i. 152.
Thebes, Tales of T. and Argos, i. 465.
Θέειν, i. 459.
Theism, Henotheism, ii. 412.
Themanites, ii. 438.

Θέμις, law, i. 227.
Theodoric the Great, i. 418, 419.
Theodorus, ii. 437.
Theodotus, ii. 437.
Theogony, i. 371, 381, 388, 496.
— of Hesiod, i. 371.
— the Veda is the T. of the Aryan races, i. 381.
Theology, comparative, first attempt at, i. 535.
Θεός (θεοί), etymology of, i. 459; ii. 246, 431.
— same as Deus, i. 185, 215.
— from θέω (Plato and Schleicher), i. 218.
— from dhavâ (Hoffmann), i. 218.
— from dhi (Bühler), i. 218.
— from θες (Herodotus and Goebel), i. 218.
— from divya (Ascoli), i. 218.
— from θες (Curtius), i. 219.
Thessaly, genitives in dialect of, i. 235.
Θεστος, i. e. πολύθεστος, i. 219.
Thetis, i. 385.
Theudas and Devadatta, i. 542
Theuth, i. 375.
Thibaut, Dr., ii. 15.
Third period of the Aryan language, i. 92.
Thlinkithians, ii. 398, 399.
Thoth, ii. 210.
Thought and language inseparable, i. 591, 592.
— not the same thing, i. 593.
Thrâfanh, i. 227.
Three Baskets, the, i. 5, 7; ii. 133, 160, 176, 284, 300.
Three kingdoms, time of the, ii. 322.
Threis, i. 354.
Θυγάτηρ, i. 320, 380.
— in Persian dockter, ii. 8.
— θυγατέρα = duhitâ, duhitáram, i. 222.
— = duhitâ, ĭ. 217.
Thugs, ii. 277.
Θύρα, i. 341.
— = dvâr, i. 217.
Thuringia, i. 418.
Thursday, ii. 466.
Thusundi, i. 354.
Tibet, Buddhism in, ii. 257.
— Lama of, ii. 168.
— languages of, ii. 131.
— Buddhist literature of, ii. 170.
Tibetan translation of the Buddhist Canon, ii. 171, 191, 258.
— translation of the Sukhavatîvyûha, ii. 346.
— and Chinese, i. 72.
— tones in, i. 73.
Tien-ḱu, India, ii. 319, 320.
Timrjan, i. 341.
Tîrthaka, ii. 284 n.
Tîrtha, tîrthakâka, ii. 353 n.
Τιθέναι, i. 143, 459.
Tithonos (the setting sun), i. 389, 390, 412, 468; ii. 306, 423.
Tiu, i. 616
To-come, Low German adjective, i. 146.
Tokum Jahr, de, a to-come year, i. 146.
Toltec, Teo-Amoxtli, sacred book of the, ii. 390.
Tones in Tibetan, i. 73.
Tongue, various ways of spelling, i 260 n.
— various positions of the, i. 294, 295.
Totem, crest of an Indian warrior, ii. 376.
Trahere (traire), i. 324.
Traité de l'Origine des Romans, Huet, i. 513.
Traivarnika, i. 489.
Transmigration and metempsychosis, ii. 154, 187.
Trayas, i. 354.
Trench, Archbishop, on phonetic writing, i. 283, 285, 287, 296.
-τρέφες = thrâfanh, i. 227.
Tres, τρεῖς, i. 354.
Tri, tru, trup, trib, i. 91.
Τρικέφαλος, i. 497.
Trinity, the, ii. 477.
Tripiṭaka (the Three Baskets), i. 5, 7; ii. 133, 160, 176, 284, 300.
Τρισώματος, i. 497.
Trojan horse, the story of, i. 512.
— war, i. 390.

Troy, i. 476.
Truhana, Dona, in the Conde Lucanor, i. 530.
Truthfulness, Niebuhr on, i. 202.
Trys, i. 354.
Tsaï-in, ii. 257, 319.
Tsi (Bohemian), for daughter, i. 77.
Tsin dynasty, ii. 323, 324, 325, 326 n., 327, 364 n.
Tsing-tu, Pure Land, ii. 364 n.
Tsü-*khü* family, ii. 326.
Tu, tave, tavai, to*h*, tum, i. 166.
Tüisasta, i. 354.
Tukstantis, i. 354.
Tum, infinitive, its meaning, i. 158.
Tûn (town), zaun, i. 327.
Turanian languages, i. 307; ii. 131.
— combinatory, i. 44.
— religion, ii. 131.
Turkic, Turkish, ii. 131.
Turkistan, ii. 275.
Turnour, ii. 173–175, 182.
Tûrvayâ*na*, ii. 242.
Tûsimtons, i. 354.
Tvai, tvaitigjus, tva-lif, i. 354.
Twins, 720, of the Veda, i. 474 n.
Tylor, theology of the Indians of Nicaragua, i. 595.
Typhaon, i. 495, 496.
Typhon, i. 300.
Tyr, Dyaus, Ζεύς, Jupiter, Zio, i. 185.
Tzité tree, ii. 395.
Tzutohil language, ii. 387.

U and o mixed, i. 246.
Udasvit-vân, i. 153.
Uh, i. 135.
Ûh, Sanskrit root, i. 136.
Ukhshan, ukshan, i. 344.
Ulphilas, ii. 130.
— and Athanasius, ii 69.
Ulysses, Ulyxes, i. 475, 498 n.
Umbrian Grammar, ii. 26.
Unc, O. H. G., i. 343.
Uniformity, ii 490, 491, 519, 530.
Unity of God, ii. 404, 432.
Universal language, i. 31.
Universe, emanation from Brahman, ii. 218.
Universities, English, ii. 485–488, 520, 526, 531.
— oriental chairs in, ii. 22.
— German, ii. 486–488, 519, 521, 528.
— their intention, ii. 519, 530, 531.
Unknown God in Greece, ii. 242.
Unus, undecim, i 354.
Upâli, compiler of the Vinaya of the Tripi*t*aka, ii. 284.
Upanayana, spiritual apprenticing, ii. 80.
Upanishad, ii. 245.
Upanishads, the, ii. 106.
Upham, Ed., ii. 174.
Ura, ura-bhra (laniger), urâmathi (wolf) ura*n*a (ram), ura*n*i (sheep), urâna (protector); *see* ûr*n*a, i. 485–487, 491.
Ural-Altaic family, i. 34.
Uranos (Varu*n*a), i. 311, 321, 370, 371; ii. 421, 426.
Uraon Koles, ii. 33.
Ûrnâ (wool), ûr*n*anâbha, ûr*n*a-nâbhi, ûr*n*a-vâbhi (spider), ûr*n*âyu (goat, spider), i. 347, 485–487.
Uro, i. 347 n.
Ursus, i. 343.
Uru (εὐρύ), urûki, i. 405.
Uruvilva, ii. 200.
Urva, urvî, urviyâ, i. 377, 405.
Urvasî, i. 405–412, 421–429, 433–435; ii. 237.
Ush, ush*n*a, usra, i. 447 n.
Ushâ, i. 446.
Ushâpati, i. 446.
Ushas (dawn), ii. 136, 145, 237; Ushāsā (Aurora), i. 406, 407, 438, 447 n., 492; ii. 421.
Uta (hell), ii. 152 n.

VAÊTI, Zend, willow, i. 228.
Va*g*ra-sûtra, ii. 367.
Vaipulya Sûtras, ii. 362 n.
Vaisâlî, ii. 200, 203.
Vaisya (householder), caste of the, i. 339.
— same as arya, i. 210.
Vaivasvata, ii. 156.
Vaksh, ii. 496.

Vala for *vana*, i. 39 n.
Válá, Hindustani, i. 56.
Van, a suffix, i. 142.
Vana or *vala*, i. 39 n.
Vaṅgri*da*, ii. 142.
Vap, ve, wab (to weave), i. 347.
Var, v*ri* (root), i. 371, 437, 485, 486.
Varez, Zend, *ῥέζω*, i. 228.
Varga, i. 38 n.
Vâri, i. 350.
Variyasî, i. 406.
Varṇa (colour, caste), i. 487, 488.
Varṇi, gold, i. 487.
Vârtikâ, i. 565.
Varuṇa (Uranos), i. 371, 407, 492; ii. 36, 37, 148, 154, 157, 237, 421, 424, 428.
Varvara, i. 485, 489.
Vas (vasis), vasum, i. 443.
— vas (vân, ushi, vat), i. 440.
— (root), i. 393 n., 447 n.
— (vos), i. 249.
Vasarî or vasavyâ, i. 224.
Vasish*tha*, i. 406, 408; ii. 146, 149 (superlative of vasu).
Vasrâ, i. 489.
Vasti, vastra, vestis, *ἑσθής*, fassradh, gwisk, i. 347.
Vâstu (*ἄστυ*), i. 341.
Vasu, bright, Superlative Vasish*tha*, i. 406.
— general name of the bright gods, i. 224.
Vasubandhu, ii. 341.
Vasupati, i. 416.
— vat (vân, vatî, vat), i. 440.
Vasus, i. 441.
Vatsa, i. 344.
Vaurkjan, Gothic, to work, i. 228.
Vaya*h*, life, vigour, i. 168.
Vayodhai, infinitive, i. 168.
Véda, i. 149.
Veda, oldest book of the Aryans, ii. 113, 114, 133, 160.
— great age of the, i. 208; ii. 454.
— Arya, a proper name in the, i. 208.
— revealed by Brahman, therefore called *Śruti* (revelation), ii. 126.
— four Vedas, ii. 16.
Veda, hymns and songs of the, ii. 113, 135.
— Language of the, i. 318, 320.
— on Marriage, *see* Marriage.
— mythology of the, i. 381.
— no metempsychosis in the, ii. 154.
— on Widow-burning, *see* Suttee, Widow.
— The Theogony of the Aryan races, i. 381.
Vedânta, i. 8; ii. 218, 280.
Vedântin, ii. 218.
Vedas, the, copied in 1845 for Debendra Nâth Tagore, ii. 44.
— Divine origin claimed for, ii. 67.
Veddah language, like Singhalese, mere corruption of Sanskrit, ii. 28.
Veddahs, have no language, ii. 28.
Veddhâ, vyâdha, hunter, ii. 28.
Vedic hymns and Psalms contrasted, ii. 37.
— Theogony and Cosmogony (by Muir), ii. 150 n.
Veihs, i. 339.
Velle = velse, i. 162.
Vellere, i. 486.
Vellus, villus, volna, vulla, i. 486.
Venum ire, i. 101.
Verbs (*ῥήματα*), i. 139.
Verdhandi (Present), i. 366. 462.
Verleumdung, calumny, i. 195.
Verona or Bern, i. 418.
Verto, i. 366.
Vertumnus, i. 565.
Vesa (house), i. 339.
Vesta, i. 447 n.
Vestigia nulla retrorsum, i. 509.
Veytia, collection of American MSS., ii. 384.
Vibhv-áne, in order to conquer, i. 143.
Vicinus, from vicus, i. 212.
Vicus, i. 339.
Vid, i. 393 n.; ii. 496.
Vi-dhavâ, husbandless, i. 333, 333 n., 357.
Vidmás, i. 149.
Vidua, viduare, viduus, viduvo, vdova, widow, i. 333, 357.

Vidvân, vidushî, i. 443.
Vidyut-vân, i. 153.
Vieh, i. 325.
Vienne, Council of, 1311, i. 118.
Vieo, i. 347.
Viginti, i. 354.
Vigñâna-Bhikshu, ii. 215 n.
Villosus, villus, i. 486, 489.
Vimala-kîrtti, ii. 323, 324. 326.
Vinaya (first basket of the Tripiṭaka), compiled by Upâli, ii. 177, 284, 302, 325, 327, 330.
Vindh, i. 333 n.
Vinsati, i. 354.
Vîrgîli, Váleri, i. 221.
Vis, vaisya, i. 339.
— root, to settle down, i. 80.
Visa-s, οἶκο-ς, vicu-s, i. 80.
Vishnu, i. 11, 424; ii. 237.
— worship of, ii. 101.
Vispaiti, vispati, vispatnî, i. 339.
Visuddhimagga, ii. 180 n.
Visvâmitra, ii. 94.
Vitality of Brahmanism, ii. 87.
Vîtaprishtha, i. 439.
Vîtis, = Zend vaêti, i. 228.
Vitulus, i. 344.
Vocabulary, Chinese, Sanskrit, Japanese, ii. 367.
Vocative of Ζεύς has the circumflex, i. 186.
— of Dyaús and Ζεύς, i. 220.
Vossius, De Origine et Progressu Idolatriæ, ii. 443.
Vowels in English, i. 288.
— philological conception of, i. 292.
— disappearing, i. 293.
— written alike, but historically distinct, i. 293.
— why long or short, i. 148.
Voysey, Rev. C., ii. 95.
Vṛika, i. 343.
Vṛikta, i. 250.
Vṛish, i. 393.
Vṛishan, i. 406 n.
Vṛit, i. 366.
Vṛitra, i. 400, 491, 492, 495, 496, 499; ii. 140 n.
Vudanandi, ii. 328.
Vulcanus, ii. 420.
Vulf, i. 343.
Vulla, i. 486.
Vurdh, i. 366, 462.

WABOJEEG, Adjetatig of, war-chief, ii. 376,
Wales, Nihilism in, ii. 306.
Wallis, Professor of Arabic, i. 120.
War-ru-gu-ra (evil spirit), ii. 151 n.
Wât, A. S., ii. 116 n.
Water, eight good qualities of, ii. 353.
Wax, ii. 496.
Weave, to, i. 347.
Wednesday, ii. 463.
Weeks and week-days, system of, ii. 461, 463, 465.
Wei, kingdom of, ii. 322.
Wei-ma, ii. 323.
Wei-Northern dynasty, ii. 327, 343.
Weird sisters, i. 462.
Wei-shang, ii. 328.
Weiss, ich, I know, i. 149.
Wei-tao-an, ii. 324.
Wei-yüan, ii. 324.
Welcker, i. 455-459.
Werden, i. 366.
Wesleyan missionary, ii. 175, 208.
Westminster Lecture, ii. 46.
Wheat. i. 346.
Whence and where cases, i. 234.
White horse monastery in China, ii. 319.
White Yagur Veda, ii. 20.
Wich, i. 339.
Widow burning, on, (Wilson, Grimm, Roth, Bushby), i. 332-337; ii. 94.
— the Rig-Veda does not enforce the burning of, i. 335.
Wienas, wieno-lika, i. 354.
Wîêsz-patis (lord), wîêsz-patene (lady), i. 339.
Wilford's researches in Sanskrit, ii. 450, 451, 453.
— deceived by the Pandits, ii. 453.
Wilhelm, De infinitivo, i. 171.
Wilka-s, i. 343.
Wilkins, Bishop, his philosophical language, i. 30.
Wilson, H. H., i. 421 n.; ii. 21, 116, 140 n., 143 n., 204, 214.

Wind, Pan, pavana, i. 468.
Wir wissen, we know, i. 149.
Wit, to, ii. 496.
Wiz, i. 346.
Wodan, ii. 132, 165, 210.
— not Buddha, i. 563.
— day of, ii 465.
Wodenism and Buddhism, ii. 459.
Wolf, i. 343 (the destroying); ii. 157.
Wordsworth, i. 361, 412.
Worlds of Buddha, ii. 296.
Writing, merely accidental, i. 36.
Wu, city of, ii. 322.
Wû, emperor, ii. 328, 329.
— dynasty, ii. 343.
Wuotan, i. 391; ii. 466, 467.
Wutsung's persecution of Buddhism, ii. 337.
Wylie, books brought from Japan, ii. 367, 368.

XBALANQUÉ, ii. 396.
Xenophanes, i. 582, 585, 588; ii. 428.
Xenophon, i. 131.
Xerxes, religion of, ii. 57.
Xibalba, ii. 396.
Ximenes, Father Francisco, ii. 387, 388, 396 (Tesoro de las Lenguas Quiché, Cakchiquel y Tzutohil), ii. 387.

YAGUR-VEDA, ii. 116, 117; (to be muttered), i. 408.
Yagurveda-sanhitâ, ii. 116, 124.
Yama (Yima), i. 404, 494; ii. 147, 240, 428.
Yang-*k*âu, ii. 324.
Yâo-hsing, ii. 324, 325.
Yâo-*kh*ang, ii. 324, 326 n.
Yâonh, Zend, girdle, i. 228.
Yâos, the, ii. 324 n.
Yâre, Zend, Goth. jer, i. 227.
Yarkand, ii. 275.
Yasa, son of Sujatá, ii. 76.
Yashaita, ii. 328.
Yâtaras, i. 330.
Yava, i. 346.
Yaxartes, ii. 269.
Year, Zend, yâre, i. 227.
Yeh, i. 344.
Yéh, city of, ii. 323.
Yellow (gilvus, flavus), i. 66.
Yemen, ii. 406.
Yen-tisong, ii. 234 n.
Ying, patron of Buddhism, ii. 321.
Yogin, ii. 162, 216.
Yoni, i. 336 n., 337.
Youdasf, Youasaf, and Bodhisattva, i. 542.
Yu, yudh, yug, yaut. i. 91.
Yüan-hsi period, ii. 325.
Yudh, to fight, i. 89.
Yueh-*ki*, ii. 318.
Yüen-*kh*ang, ii. 323.
Yung-ping period, ii. 328.
Yupanqui, i. 420 n.

ZABD (present), ii. 418.
Zabd-allah, ii. 419.
Zardan, friend of Barlaam, i. 541.
Zasi-s, i. 344.
Zaun (tûn, town), i. 327.
Ζέα, i. 346.
Zeitwort, i. 139.
Ζήν, to live, i. 460.
Ζήν (Zên), Ζής, (*see* Ζεύς), i. 459.
Zena, i. 340.
Zend, i. 317, 318, 320, 344, 354, 479.
— and Sanskrit, close union of, i. 188.
— Aryan words in, not in Sanskrit, i. 225.
— Pairidnêza, i. 130.
Zend-Avesta, i. 5, 7, 339, 499 n.; ii. 133, 134, 160, 165, 440.
Zenodotus, ii. 437.
Zerno, zernov, i. 346.
Zero (zephiro), ii. 289.
Zeus (Ζεύς), i. 310, 313, 314, 376, 378, 386, 394, 406 n, 419, 447 n., 456-461, 492, 580, 616; ii. 132, 134, 240, 242, 243, 418-421, 424, 428, 431, 472.
Zeus Kronion, i. 605.
Ζεύς = Dyaus, i. 215.
Ζεύς, Jupiter, Dyaus, Zio, Tyr, i. 185.

Ζεύς, vocative of, has the circumflex, i. 186.
Zeuss, his Grammatica Celtica, i. 125.
Zikaku, Japanese priest, ii. 368.
Zingu, Empress of Japan, ii. 340.
Zio, Dyaus, Ζεύς, Jupiter, Tyr, i. 185.
Ziônicô, ii. 347.
Zlato, zoloto, i. 348.
Zohâk, i. 479.
Zoheyr, Moallaka of, ii. 439.
Ζώννυμι, Zend, yâonh, i. 228.
Zoroaster (*see* Zarathustra and Zerdusht, Zurthosht), ii. 133, 134, 210, 440, 472.
— religion of, ii. 57.
Zoroastrians, ancestors of the, i. 354.
— their sacred writings, i. 25; ii. 165.
— their wish to augment their sect, ii. 96.
Zukunft, the future, i. 146.
Zulu, i. 14.
— language, 20,000 words in, i. 91 n.; ii. 29.
Zyâo, Zend, frost, i. 227.

LONDON : PRINTED BY
SPOTTISWOODE AND CO., NEW-STREET SQUARE
AND PARLIAMENT STREET

SACRED BOOKS OF THE EAST

TRANSLATED BY VARIOUS ORIENTAL SCHOLARS

AND EDITED BY

F. MAX MÜLLER

The collection is intended at first to consist of twenty-four volumes, each volume of about 400 pages, and it is hoped to publish three volumes in every year.

The Works which have been selected for translation are—

I. ANCIENT VEDIC RELIGION.—Hymns of the *Rig*-veda. The *Satapatha*-brâhma*na*. The Upanishads. The *Grihya*-sûtras of Hira*n*yake*s*in and others.

II. LAW-BOOKS IN PROSE.—The Sûtras of Âpastamba, Gautama, Baudhâyana, Vâsish*tha*, Vish*n*u, &c.

III. LAW-BOOKS IN VERSE.—The Laws of Manu, Yâ*gñ*avalkya, &c.

IV. LATER BRAHMANISM.—The Bhagavadgîtâ. The Vâyu-purâ*na*.

V. BUDDHISM.—1. Pali Documents. The Mahâparinibbâna Sutta, the Tevi*gga* Sutta, the Mahâsudassana Sutta, the Dhamma*k*akkappavattana Sutta; the Dhammapada; the Suttanipâta; the Mahâvagga, the *K*ullavagga, and the Pâtimokkha.

2. Sanskrit Documents.—The Divyâvadâna and Saddharmapu*nd*arîka.

3. Chinese Documents.—The Phû-yâo King, or life of Buddha.

VI. *G*AINISM.—The *Â*ârâ*ñ*ga Sûtra, Da*s*avaikâlika Sûtra, Sûtrak*ri*tâ*ñ*ga Sûtra, and Uttarâdhyayana Sûtra.

VII. PARSI RELIGION. 1. Zend Documents.—The Vendîdâd, Yasna, and Vispared; the Ya*s*ts and the Khordah Avesta.

2. Pahlavi and Parsi Documents.—The Bundahi*s*, Bahman Ya*s*t, Shâyast-lâ-shâyast, Dâ*d*istâni Dînî, Mainyôi Khard, *S*ikand-gumani.

VIII. MOHAMMEDANISM.—The Qur'ân.

IX. CHINESE RELIGION. 1. Confucianism.—The Shû King, Shih King, Hsiâo King, Yî King, Lî *K*î, Lun Yü, and Mâng-*ts*ze.

2. Tâoism.—The Tâo-teh King, *K*wang-*ts*ze, and Kan Ying Phien.

The following are the names of the scholars who have promised to supply translations:—

BEAL, S.	EGGELING, J.	MAX MÜLLER, F.
BHANDARKAR, R. G.	FAUSBÖLL, V.	OLDENBERG, H.
BÜHLER, G.	JACOBI, H.	PALMER, E. H.
BURNELL, A.	JOLLY, J.	PISCHEL, R.
COWELL, E. B.	KERN, H.	TELANG, K. T.
DARMESTETER, J.	KIELHORN, F.	WEST, E. W.
RHYS DAVIDS, T. W.	LEGGE, J.	

[Turn over.

The Volumes already published contain—

VOL. I. THE UPANISHADS. Translated by F. MAX MÜLLER. Part I. The *Kh*ândogya-upanishad, The Talavakâra-upanishad, The Aitareya-âra*n*yaka, The Kaushîtaki-brâhma*n*a-upanishad, and The Vâgasaneyi-sa*m*hitâ-upanishad. 8vo. cloth, price 10*s*. 6*d*.

VOL. II. THE SACRED LAWS OF THE ÂRYAS, as taught in the Schools of Âpastamba, Gautama, Vâsish*th*a, and Baudhâyana. Translated by GEORG BÜHLER. Part I. Âpastamba and Gautama. 8vo. cloth, price 10*s*. 6*d*.

VOL. III. THE SACRED BOOKS OF CHINA. The Texts of Confucianism. Translated by JAMES LEGGE. Part I. The Shû King, The Religious Portions of the Shih King, and The Hsiâo King. 8vo. cloth, price 12*s*. 6*d*.

VOL. IV. THE VENDÎDÂD. Translated by JAMES DARMESTETER. 8vo. cloth, price 10*s*. 6*d*.

VOL. V. THE BUNDAHIŠ, BAHMAN YAŠT and SHÂYAST-LÂ-SHÂYAST. Translated by E. W. WEST. 8vo. cloth, price 12*s*. 6*d*.

VOL. VI and IX. THE QUR'ÂN. Parts I and II. Translated by Professor E. H. PALMER. 8vo. cloth, price 10*s*. 6*d*. each.

VOL. VII. THE INSTITUTES OF VISH*N*U. Translated by Professor J. JOLLY. 8vo. cloth, price 10*s*. 6*d*.

The following Volumes are nearly ready, viz.:—

VOL. VIII. THE BHAGAVADGÎTÂ, SANATSU*G*ÂTÎYA, and ANUGÎTÂ. Translated by KASHINATH TRIMBAK TELANG.

VOL. X. THE DHAMMAPADA, translated by Professor F. MAX MÜLLER; and the SUTTANIPÂTA, translated by Professor FAUSBÖLL.

VOL. XI. THE MAHÂPARINIBBÂNA SUTTA, THE TE-VI*GG*A SUTTA, THE MAHÂSUDASSANA SUTTA, THE DHAMMA*K*AKKAPPAVATTANA SUTTA. Translated by T. W. RHYS DAVIDS.

The following Volumes are also in the Press, viz.:—

VOL. XII. THE *S*ATAPATHA-BRÂHMA*N*A, by Professor EGGELING.

VOL. XIII. THE PÂTIMOKKHA, by T. W. RHYS DAVIDS. The MAHÂVAGGA, by Dr. H. OLDENBERG.

VOL. XIV. THE SACRED LAWS OF THE ÂRYAS, as taught in the Schools of Vâsish*th*a and Baudhâyana, by Professor GEORG BÜHLER.

OXFORD: PRINTED AT THE CLARENDON PRESS

London: Published by Henry Frowde, Oxford University Press Warehouse, 7 Paternoster Row,

ALSO MAY BE HAD AT

The Clarendon Press Depository, 116 High Street, Oxford.

00042502

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 05 October, 2018